

Pure Love x Insult Complex

by thirty silver and (Judah)

[Novel Updates](#)

Translator: [Machine Sliced Bread](#)

Epub: [Trollo WN/LN EPUB](#)

Fierce Battle Arc／Battle Preparation

Chapter 297. In the elevator

"I went to Kyoto University you see..."

Jii-chan said.

Oh...so he went to a university in Kyoto.

"It's been 60 years ago. Kyoto at that time, it's quite a self-sustained university...since the war hasn't passed much yet, the senior students are domineering every time in campus..."

Jii-chan speaks of an old tale looking nostalgic.

"That's the only place where Kouzuki's name doesn't matter. I've been raised with the tradition of the house all the time so I was amused by that..."

It's a university life where the academic year is the only hierarchical relationship, regardless of the influence of the house...it seemed to be exciting for Jii-chan.

"It was during my first year...the first year students were instructed by the seniors to do assembly work on the auditorium. Everyone was treated as slaves of the senior student, being told[Do this][Bring that] Then, one of the senior ordered me. [I left something in the dormitory, get it for me] I ran to the back door of the auditorium. Then..."

Jii-chan laughs.

"One of the first year student is skipping work at the back of the auditorium. He's smoking cigarette...when the other year ordered him to work, he ran away. Thus, he thought of hiding until the work time ends He's quite good at it"

Haa...there's those kind of people even 60 years ago.

"Some of the first years were aware that he's skipping. After the day's work, another first year said. [Those guys who don't follow the group action won't be successful in life], [He doesn't know that building good relationship with the

seniors right now has a big meaning after graduation]..."

...Un

Relationships coming from universities will continue for a lifetime.

"However...decades after graduating from the university, the man who ran out from the orders of the seniors became a president of a big company afterwards. In contrary, those who were following the senior's instructions all ended on being executives. Do you know why?"

"...No. Why?"

I said.

"People who become the head of an organization don't easily follow the orders of others. A person who always say yes to whatever their superior commands them, always worried about the superior's eyes can never be on top "

...Is that how it is?

"Personality makes habit...habit dictates life decisions. At age 18, a man who can make clear decision like[Men who are just few years older instructing you to do everything are just stupid]are men who can make self-judgement. However, it is a necessary way of thinking to be on top...it'll be difficult to have human relationships but it will be all experience. On the other hand, those who don't think of themselves and just become limbs of their seniors...only following the orders of the company, boss, or even society...they can't get away from being someone's underling for their life. They arrive to peaceful human relationships"

Jii-chan smiles.

"This is an example. Of course, there are also those who don't cooperate so much that they got expelled from the organization, starting their own business but fail as a result. However, everyone who is at the top of an organization has a degree of arrogance. They can crush down people without worry, they'll never be subordinate to someone. There's always a strong side of such self-consciousness..."

...I see.

"Now then, with this case...what kind of person do you think is this person who betrayed me, tried to stand up on the ground and attract the enemy by himself?"

"Well...someone who's strong willed and yet doesn't have someone they can trust?"

I answered.

If they have a subordinate they can trust then they won't stand on danger on their own.

Because they want to see it with their own eyes, they purposely come to this hotel with the other executives.

"Which do you think it is, the[Top type]or the[Subordinate type]?"

"Well...of course it's the[top type]"

...In short.

The typical subordinate type...Kouzuki Satoshi, Tsunoda, and Natsuki won't do this.

Therefore, we can exclude their father's.

Well, even among the top types...people who want to become the kind of the hill and let their subordinate do everything like Kouzuki Soujki...his father should be excluded too.

"Then the prince faction has no traitor?"

"...There's that thought. The way of thinking of the top-type that has an independent mind...is that; if they don't have a protégé to send on a dangerous mission..."

Then the traitor is among the[rising faction]?

"Of course...this is just an assumption of mine. In reality, I don't know"

Jii-chan smiles

"But, that's very helpful...thanks, Jii-chan"

I thanked Jii-chan...

"Katsuko and I will be monitoring the situation inside the hotel from the monitor room, and report to you all"

Minaho-neesan tells me.
That's helpful but...
Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee are in the monitor room...
I think that Jii-chan hasn't given up going upstairs alone however

"Ruriko...Misuzu...take care of Jii-chan. Please"
"Yes, Onii-sama"
"Certainly...Danna-sama"

I think that Jii-chan is weak for his two granddaughters...
"I'll take care of the other girls so be at ease"

Nagisa said.
"Margo-san, Nei-san, Seki-san, Michi, Reika...are you ready?"

Margo-san and Seki-san have their hands fit in a thin leather gloves.
Michi's checking the weapon under her uniform's skirt.
Reika holds her cane of death.
Nei-san, she's smiling.
Yes...we're ready

"Yukino...you too"
"Shut up...I'm going okay!"

Yukino in her sailor uniform goes aloof.
Well...this is the usual
I look at the women of the staying group.
Nagisa, Megu, Mana...

"Then, we're going"
"Take care...dear"
"Yoshi-kun...good luck"
"Onii-chan...I'll wait here"

Yeah...I've got to survive, absolutely
I can't die leaving these girls.
"Yoshiko-san...you just have to hold until morning"
"...Yes"

Yoshiko-san trembles, not even talking...
This is a normal girl's reaction.
Then, I pat the head of the sleeping Mao-chan

"...I'm going, Mao-chan"

I have to protect everyone

"You're making a good face"

Jii-chan smiles at me.

"Seki-san, Fujimiya-kun...as the head of Kouzuki house, I order you. Don't let him die...it's troublesome if he does"

Jii-chan orders the top elite guards.

"...Certainly"

"...By your will"

Though she's wearing jersey...Reika's heart is still a warrior.

"Take care...dear"

Lastly...Katsuko-nee said.



The elevator has a limit on number going up so...
We have to split into two groups and ride in again.

"The first team will be, me, Seki-san and Michi-chan"

Margo-san said

"...Minaho, there's no enemies near the elevator room above?"

She immediately uses the communication device.

[...It's fine. Nobody's up on that floor yet]

I can hear Minaho-neesan's voice over the earphone.

"Still, we should be wary. Therefore, the three of us will go first"

Yeah...Margo-san and Seki-san are professionals...
If something happens, Michi's mystic art would be useful

"...Later"

The first group rides the elevator.

What's left is Yukino, Nei-san, Reika, and me.

"Reika...you see"

"Yes...what is it, Lord?"

Reika seems to be a bit tense.

"That jersey suits you"

"I don't like it that much For me, the suit tight on my body is better for me"

"Hmm, Reika-oneesan wants to be hugged then!"

Nei-san said...

"What do you mean by that?"

"People who had less physical contact in their childhood likes to wear clothes that tighten their bodies"

Nei-san replies laughing.

"Even humans are animals so it's also important to touch skins." Therefore, Yo-chan, give Reika-oneesan a tight hug!"

"It's not that I..."

Reika's confused.

"Well then, let's try it right away! I'll embrace her from the back...Yo-chan attack her on front!"

Nei-san embraces Reika from behind...

"Please...wait a moment..."

"Nope, go, Yo-chan, hurry...!"

...Yeah

I embrace Reika from the front.

"...Ah!"

Reika's strength is easy to take off...

Reika accepts mine and Nei-san's embrace.

"Nothing's scary...no need to be afraid. Here, take a deep breath...Yo-chan

and I are just hugging you. We won't do anything bad...!"

Nei-san whispers in Reika's ears.

"What do you think? It's warm...not bad isn't it? It's better than tightening your body with clothes..."

...Reika

"Y-You're right"

Reika's body tension is melting away.

The gloomy face disappears.

"Reika...you look beautiful without your makeup. I guess you're originally well ordered"

I look up at the tall Reika's face, and express my impressions.

"That's right, Reika-oneesan's got a pretty boy face"

...Pretty boy face?

"Your eyes look refreshing, your nose is tall...you look cool. I like that!"

"I also like you Reika"

"Ah...thank you very much"

Reika's embarrassed.

"Besides...your skin is fair and beautiful. Your face looks dignified when you were wearing a make up but...this no makeup face is also fine!"

Nei-san praises Reika.

"Is...that so?"

"Yes. I think so too. Your British gentleman dress looks good but...I think that this Reika is good as it is"

"Y-Yes..."

Reika's cheeks dye red.

"Yes, yes...you're going to fool another girl like that right?!"

Yukino speaks sarcastically to me.

"He's taking responsibility for the rest of his life so it's fine..."

Nei-san said.



Before long...the elevator came back.

We get inside and the elevator goes up.

It's not just moving up and down vertically...it also draws complex orbits sideways multiple times...

The secret elevator rises.

Even inside the elevator...Nei-san and I are sticking to Reika.

"Ah, Reika-oneesan...your ass is tight"

Nei-san says while stroking Reika's ass.

"Uhm...please don't touch that place...!"

"Yo-chan, try touching it too...it's small and elastic, it feels so good"

I also accepted the offer and touched Reika's ass.

Wow, though she's trained...the elasticity isn't half-bad.

"Reika-oneesan actually has a sexy body"

"Me...Sexy?"

Reika's surprised from what Nei-san said...

"I'm not sexy...isn't your body the sexy one here?"

Reika says self-mockingly

"I just have a lot of meat and jelly stuff. Reika-oneesan's tight and tempered body is sexier. Don't you think so Yo-chan?"

...I

"I like Nei-san's glamorous body but, I also like Reika's tight body"

"...Lord?!"

"Yeah...it's filled and feels comfortable to embrace"

I bury my face in Reika's chest.

It's a small breast but...the elasticity is different because of the pectoral muscle.

"Do you like me?"

Reika asked, looking down on me.

"Isn't that obvious that I do?...If not, then I won't be hugging you"

"Then...w-what part of me do you like?"

"...I like Reika as she is"

"...What?"

Ah, she didn't understand what it meant?

"I'm often told the same but...Reika's so easy to understand. A beautiful face and trained body...and it's synchronized with the heart. Very frank...you have a personality that doesn't lie"

"If it's lies... I do it too"

"Even if you lie, it's found out right away...so it's fine, Reika..."

In that respect, she closely resembles me.

"Easy to understand, easy to talk to, easy to get along with...I think you can be the Oneesan that's loved by everyone in the[family]"

"...Though they're having problems with me showing off because I'm too obsessed with aesthetics!"

Nei-san supplements from what I said.

"Un. I think that it's Reika-oneesan's fault on showing off strangely!"

"...It's my first time being told like that"

Reika mutters.

"Well of course...you won't be advised like this by people that aren't your[family]"

Nei-san smiles

"The people in this world are harsh on a complete stranger. Especially for those who are over 20 years old...as long as there's no problem in their family or a boss that does a direct advantage or disadvantage, they will never pay attention to someone else's social life. That's how it is"

...That might be

"Especially...Reika-oneesan has a job taking advantage of special skills..."

Kouzuki Security Service's elite

"Look, famous novelists, or filmmakers...have strange fashion sense or even if they have a problem with their speech or behavior, they leave them alone, right? Reika-oneesan is left alone with the same reason as them"

Thus...the beat to death swordswoman with a British Gentleman hobby was born.

The person herself is such a beautiful lady and yet.

"Well, the British gentleman hobby is a hobby...try to become a normal beautiful looking Oneesan from now on!"

"...Uhm"

"Yo-chan and I...no, Mii-chan, Megu-chan, Mana-chan, Ruri-chan, and Mao-chan...thinks of wanting to walk around the city with a beautiful elder sister"

"Ah, of course...it's okay to continue using a British suit. But, I'm just saying that I would also like to see Reika wearing a beautiful dress..."

Nei-san and I attack Reika

"...I-I'll think about it"

Reika said embarrassed.

Before long...the elevator stops.

The door opens...Margo-san and others were waiting.

Doesn't seem that there's a problem.

"Let's return this elevator back to the basement"

I pressed the descend button and got outside before the door closes.

With this, the elevator goes back to the basement.

The door closed completely...and we made sure the elevator has gone down.

I then told Reika.

"...Break it, Reika"

"What?"

"Destroy the circuit so the elevator can't be called on this floor again..."

"Then...we can't return to the[emergency evacuation room]..."

I laughed.

"That's fine. The priority right now is to make the enemy unable to get down

to the basement"

Jii-chan can sneak off Misuzu and other's eyes, and go up to the upper floor.

"As Jii-chan said earlier...if we can hold them until morning, we win. The five of us doesn't have to do back down"

We're going to continue to fight for our lives in this hotel until morning...!

Chapter 298. Fun promise

"Right...it's better if we prepare for the worst"

Seki-san smiles

"Wait...calm down you all. Are you really sure with that?"

Yukino's afraid.

Well, we would be putting ourselves in a dangerous situation until morning... without any escape route.

"Reika-oneesan, do it!"

Nei-san's laughing

"Well...that would be the best solution"

Margo-san said.

Michi nods silently

"...It's an order. Do it, Reika"

Reika...

"...If it's an order"

She holds up her cane made of special alloy

"Haaaaaaaaa!!!"

...Baaaakiii!!!

The tip of the metal rod crushes the electronic circuit of the elevator.

"Okay, let's put back the wall hiding the elevator for the time being..."

Margo-san covers the operation unit using, the front of the elevator with a wall.

"Okay, Reika-oneesan...break this unit as well"

"...Roger, Haaaa!!"

...Gwasha!!!

With this, there's no way to open the hidden elevator.
The route from the upper part of the hotel to the[emergency evacuation room]is completely closed
Yukino's face is gloomy

"Well then...let's go!"

Nei-san looks indifferent, then laughed.



"We were talking earlier until you came...did you know, Seki-san has a cruiser!"

Margo-san says while confirming the route from here to the route where the executives are using tablet brought from the basement.

"Yes...it's my hobby to go out to the sea by cruiser"

Seki-san smiles.

"Oh. That's nice. Let's ride it next time!"

Nei-san rubs against Seki-san.

"Sure. We'll give you a ride to Hawaii"

"...Hawaii?"

Hawaii...that Hawaii?

"Mooring in Japan would take extraordinary money...even if you ask a contractor for maintenance, it'll take many times over there. Therefore, the ship's in Hawaii. If it's over there, you can ride it all year round"

Haa...as expected of an elite of Kouzuki security service, Jii-chan's full time guard.

Her scale is on a different level.

"Let's go! Let's go to Hawaii! Yo-chan, Mii-chan and Maru-chan too!"

Nei-san said happily.

"Right, I always went there alone...but it seems fun to go to the ocean with everyone"

Seki-san says, then goes to Reika.

Reika's gloomy.

"...Fujimiya Reika, are you okay like this?"

Seki-san says looking down on Reika.

"...Seki-san?"

"If this continues...the sporty, outdoor, and active Oneesan of these girls will become me, are you okay with that?"

"Seki-san...do you have the resolve to enter the[family]?"

"...That's not the problem"

Seki-san looks at me.

"Didn't he say it a while ago? It's wrong to attempt a strange decision and forcibly shape it. Isn't it okay for you to start as the family's friend's elder sister, don't you?"

Seki-san seems to have broken though various things.

"There are a lot of things I want to show these children a lot to teach. I think that there's fun in running cars or motorcycles...I also want to show the sunset sea in Hawaii from the ship. Fishing with everyone sounds fun. Even if it's on sea or lake...!"

Seki-san talks with fascinated eyes.

"If it's older or the same age, I don't think it'll go well because I'm too conscious but if the other party is younger, I feel like I can do it properly. Or rather, even I feel like I can be an[Oneesan]of these children...!"

"...I"

Reika looks at the ground, gloomy.

"I am a woman who lived by the sword so I have nothing to teach the younger people like Seki-san"

"...That's just lies"

Seki-san smiles

"Didn't you tell Mao-chan about Sherlock Holmes or Mother Goose...?"

"...That is"

"Teach this guy about your British Hobby...this guy would listen to your story seriously even for hours"

Seki-san said then looked at me.

"I-I'll listen too, Reika-oneesan!"

Nei-san smiles at Reika.

She looks up startled.

"Anyway...when we're going to take a ride in my cruiser in Hawaii, Fujimiya-san will be coming too"

"...Seki-san?"

"You're also younger than me...!"

Reika's expressed her participation in the[family]before her mind has settled down...

Seki-san spent time with us deepening our relationship before deciding to go with us.

But still, Seki-san who's always isolated is pleased that we accepted her.

"But, you have to wear swimsuit...I won't let you in my cruiser if you're going with your usual suit!"

"Seki-san, in the first place, it's impossible to wear a suit under the scorching sun of Hawaii! It's too hot!"

"Well, that's true!"

Nei-san and Seki-san laughs.

"Reika-oneesan...you shouldn't think[What can I do?]too much"

Margo-san says

"Instead...Think of[what everyone wants to do]"

"What everyone wants to do?"

"It's fun that way...right?!"

Margo-san smiles refreshingly

"Are you people idiots...we're in this kind of situation you know"

7Yukino said as if throwing up.

"It's because we're in this situation we are thinking of a fun future. Making various promises. It is to be sure that everyone's safe, living"

Margo-san answers Yukino.

"Huh? By the way...Did anyone make a promise with Yukino-san?! What about Yo-chan...?"

"...Nothing at all"

"In short...nobody guarantees Yukino-san's future right?"

Yukino trembles in fear.

"Well...it's been said multiple times, Yukino-san is someone who doesn't know her own standing so it can't be helped!"

"...Now ten, the route's been decided. Also, it seems the enemy hasn't come up to the vicinity of this floor yet. Maybe..."

"...Maybe?"

I reacted to what Margo-san said.

"The guys who attacked the hotel's lobby with tear gas...there's about 4 people that disappeared"

Right...there's that.

"Where are those four right now? That's what I'm most worried about"

...Yeah

Afterwards, the enemy came in with three large busses, split into team, invaded the upper floor, their movements are completely monitored but...

The four people who disappeared...have their locations unknown

"I know the first three but I can't discover the identity of the last one"

...You know?

"They're Miss Cordelia, and the white female Viola and Rosalind, right?"

Nei-san said.

Miss Cordelia and the other Viola couple that appeared in the theater.

"Before Viola's men invaded with brute force...they snuck into the hotel earlier"

I see...after the scene where the male Viola's group break into the scene, it'll become a mess and hard to infiltrate.

"As Imagined...Miss Cordelia don't have the same goal as the male Viola. There's no doubt that they're under the same organization as Viola but..."

"...Somehow, I bet that there's a secret we don't know about yet!"

"Yeah. There are multiple criminals claiming to be Cesario Viola and I think that there's no doubt that there's someone else instructing each Viola. And Miss Cordelia is also a foreman. But, at what role they have been ordered to for them to come to Japan this time?...I don't know about that"

"Besides...there's still the fourth intruder"

"...Yeah"

Margo-san and Nei-san are thinking deeper and deeper...
The two of them are smart and they're used to this situation.

"Seki-san, is there no investigation folder on Cesario Viola on Kouzuki security service?"

"It may be on the research department but neither Fujimiya-san nor I are on that field so we can only disclose information related to the guards in charge. Kouzuki security service's main task is security in Japan...and this case of a criminal organization coming from the foreign country is a unique one"

Seki-san answers.

"I think Chief Yazawa knows it but...we only have a general knowledge which extends to; that there's a group of criminal named Cesario Viola in Los Angeles"
"But, didn't you know that Cesario Viola would be coming in this case, right?"

Nei-san argues.

Right...director Yamaoka, of the security department should've been working on it for several days.

"...Unfortunately, I'm a member of the full time guards of[Kakka]...so I haven't been following orders with exception of[Kakka]"

"Me too...I've only been ordered to guard Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama"

Reika answers.

I see.

The two of them are the elite so they're out from the usual Kouzuki security service line.

They're not subordinates of Director Yamaoka...they're not selected as interceptors of Viola.

Therefore...they don't know any detailed information about Viola.

...Wait

Jii-chan had us make contact with these two...

Is because they don't have any detailed information?

Perhaps, Jii-chan's full time guards...Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san have been given detailed information?

Therefore...the two men didn't make any contact with us...

For Jii-chan...it's a dangerous thing to leave his full time guards' side.

No...wrong.

Jii-chan won't do such careless things...

Even Ootoku-san and the other can't give up guarding Jii-chan.

...Perhaps, Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san are still protecting Jii-chan on places we can't see.

Therefore...Jii-chan said that it's okay even if there's no guard left in the[emergency evacuation room]

Because he know that he's protected by his strongest men...

"The information you know about Cesario Viola is what Miss Cordelia said? And, could you tell us about the white Viola people"

Seki-san tells Margo-san

"Then,, let's talk while we head to the room where the executives are. Reika-oneesan, listen as well"

"...Understood"

"Nei...here"

Margo-san hands the tablet to Nei-san

"I'll be talking to these ladies so Nei will be navigating"

In the current hotel...the fire doors and shutters are lowered and all the routes to be passed are determined.

"The red line is the route to go"

Perhaps, this information is sent from the underground monitor room.

"Michi will be the vanguard...if there's anything strange then stop everyone"
"...Roger"

"Nei would be in the middle...we'll be guarding from behind"

Though there's four infiltrators missing...there's no large[enemy]on the floor.
Therefore, Margo-san has judged to form a complete defense formation.
Michi as the vanguard...walking the corridor.
Behind her are Nei-san and me.
...Wait

"Hey, Yukino...you're clinging too much"

Yukino's completely sticking on my back

"W-Who cares...I'm scared..."

Yuknio's cowering...

Well fine.

Behind us...Margo-san and the two ladies continue their talk.

"Ah, Mi-chan." Go right on that corner...the stairs on the left is blocked"
"...Roger"

We go on following Nei-san's navigation.
When we arrived at the level above the stairs...we have to use another staircase to go further upstairs.
From stairs to stairs, we are taking huge detours instead of taking the shortest distance.,

"This is a mini dungeon"

Nei-san smiles.

No matter when, Nei-san always shows a happy face.
Of course...it's a smile that makes us not worry about her but...
This beauty's smile really heal one's heart.
I feel like Nei-san's consideration always helps me out

"What's wrong...Yo-chan, staring at my face.../"
"Hm...Nei-san, I love you"

"Ehehe...I love you too Yo-chan"

I walk together with Nei-san.

I...

I want to walk with this person for longer.

"...Father?!"

Just around the corner...Kudou-papa is on the other side of the corridor.
Kudou-papa is carrying some free guards.

That person, if I recall...

That's[Takeshi Hunter]was it?

"Oh, Michi-kun...you look fine!"

Kudou-papa smiles at his daughter.

"Father...why are you in here?"

Yeah...the[Enemy]is still on the lower side of the hotel
The enemy and Kudou-papa's subordinates should be divided and fighting.

"It's prep for the next thing. Those guys will be coming up here sooner or later"

Kudou-papa assumes that the[enemy]would rise up to the 20th floor area?

"Currently, 40% of the enemy group were taken down. However, they're only amateur thugs brought by the enemy from Russia. The unit brought by Cesario Viola from the US are still alive"

Kudou-papa speaks in loud voice...Margo-san and the two elites can hear it as well.

"We're not letting our free guards die here. Shaving off the enemy number, they are instructed to withdraw in places they won't get hurt. Bit by bit, we lure them to the upper floor..."

...I see

"In the first place, we have enough combat members to take turns and rest... we're now pulling a defensive line on the 12th floor but I think that it'll be broken soon"

The war of attrition will continue...?

"Hm...What's wrong Michi-kun?"

Kudou-papa notices something unusual with his daughter.

"It looks like you're covering something around your waist, are you injured?"

...Err

...Well

"Father...I've lost my virginity earlier"

Michi says dignified.

"So, there's a discomfort in my lower abdomen but...there will be no problems in combat!"

Kudou-papa's frozen.

"Uhm...M-Michi-kun...!"

"Since it's a dangerous day today, I think that I'm definitely fertilized!"

F-Fertilized

Why do you have to say it that way, Michi

"Therefore, father...please think of the name of my child!"

Kudou-papa glares at me.

...Eeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeh?

"I'll give birth to a girl so please think of a girl's name!"

Chapter 299. Father, Mother

"You bastard!...what did you do to my Michi-kun!!!!!!!"

Kudou-papa tries to attack me violently but...

Michi moved in front of me smoothly then parried all of Kudou-papa's attacks!

"...Michi-kun?!"

"I am not father's!"

Michi says blushing.

"My mind and body are already Master's...!"

"What!!!!!!!"

...Shushushubabababa!!

Kudou-papa tries to approach me from multiple angles but...

Michi also stops that.

...To top it off.

"...Father!"

"W-What?!"

At the moment their eyes match...Michi's hand scratches the air like a beckoning cat!

"...Woah?!"

Kudou-papa's strongly pulled and his posture got broken...!

At that moment, Michi swept Kudou-papa's feet.

Kudou-papa falls down on the floor...

"Michi-kun...T-That's technique?!"

"Kudou style ancient martial arts mystic art...[Shingetsu] Father...!"

Kudou-papa rubs his hurt butt while looking up at his daughter in surprise...

"You said...Kudou style ancient martial arts mystic art...[Shingetsu]?!"

He glares at his daughter.

Tension runs on the place.

"The hell's that? I didn't know about that technique?"

I made a fool of myself.

"Yes. Grandfather said that he didn't teach father about this"

"Dammit! That fucking bastard...he didn't teach me that?!"

Kudou-papa stands up shouting.

"Well...isn't it because father has abandoned training halfway and left the house...?!"

...What?

"Well you see...Etsuko was bearing Shinichi, and I was in a situation where I have to stop to earn money...Michi-kun"

Kudou-papa has been married young...

He ran out of the house and started underground business with his Kudou style.

"Wait...could it be that there are more techniques I don't know of?"

"Perhaps...if you don't know about [Shingetsu], then could it be that you also don't know about[Uroyakinuma],[Engetsu Daikaiten], [Denkou Raimei Kuzushi], or[Inazuma Juuryoku Otoshi]?"

"Seriously?...I don't know those at all, yes"

Kudou-papa's crestfallen.

"Father...I think of labeling it as[Kudou style ancient martial arts — Kuromori Faction]"

"...Michi-kun?"

"Father have told me to[make my own Kudou style]...as of now, I belong to Kuromori family's house"

"...Not Kouzuki house?"

"Misuzu-sama has already entered the Kuromori house. I also have become Kuromori house's[woman]"

"...W-What?"

Michi bows to her father.

"Father, I'm very sorry"

"...About what?"

"I can't show myself wearing a bridal dress to father"

"W-Why...Is it because of him...?!"

Kudou-papa looks at me and Michi

"I can't tell the details for now. I will not formally marry him. However...I have dedicated my life to him already"

...Michi

Michi is being considerate of my other[women]...

She doesn't wish for an official marriage with me...

And...she's worried that she can't show her greatest appearance to her father.

"You just keep making me surprised"

Kudou-papa said

"I don't know what's what but...I've seen your resolve"

"...Father"

"You've already drifted far away from my reach"

"...I'm sorry"

...I

"I'll take care of her! I'll cherish her..."

The words[please give me your daughter]comes to my throat, but...
I think that it's inappropriate

Michi has already become my[woman]by her will.

It's too late to ask for her father's permission...it'll only defile Michi's resolve.

"I won't let her cry. Never"

Those are the only words that come out of my mouth

"...I wont cry"

Michi looks at me.

"I will not cry so Master, use me as you wish"

...Michi

"I will be by Master's side for his own convenience. I'll never part whatever happens so please do not worry about me, and please go on your own way,

Master"

Michi said...Kudou-papa

"I see...for you he's already a lifetime companion"

"Yes. He is my...lord. A man to serve with my whole life"

"I can understand what's on Michi's mind...you can't marry your lord after all"

...Does this mean?

"Master will cherish me. That alone is enough for me"

Michi's way of thinking...is a warrior's.

She can never have an equal relationship with the lord she serves.

Therefore...even if she's my[woman]she can't be my[wife]

"Take care of her...if you do something irresponsible, I'll kill you"

Kudou-papa tells me.

"Before that...I'll beat down father"

Michi said nonchalantly

"I see...you're already a person from different house"

"Yes...even if you're my father, I will not forgive those who stand in the way of our[family]"

"...Michi-kun"

"It's farewell...father"

Michi parts with her father.

In order to continue to advance the road as Kuromori's[family]

"Kudou-san...give Michi a one last hug"

I...

"...What...hey?"

"Michi...give your father a hug too"

I look at Michi...

"Yes...Master"

Michi stands before Kudou-papa

"...Father"

"...Michi-kun"

Kudou-papa huge Michi tightly

"...You've grown, Michi"

"I'm still a child"

"Even though you were so small when you were a baby"

"I'd be troubled if you compared me to back then"

"I'm happy that you were born...Michi"

"...Father"

Michi and Kudou-papa...takes off the mask of their hearts.

"Sorry...I"

"I should be the one sorry...I've left you to my father and didn't play with you that much"

"I feel closer with my father through Kudou martial arts"

...I see

Michi on her childhood has her family poor...so she was kept in her grandfather's house.

She desperately learned Kudou style under her grandfather...

She believed that it would become a bond with her father...

"Dammit...you're now better in Kudou style than me"

"Father also received grandfather's guidance..."

"I wonder if I can still bow my head to father this late...Nah, I'm fine with evil Kudou style. It's okay that you inherit the legitimate martial art"

"...Father"

"It's fine...be happy, Michi"

"I already am...I'm at the happiest point in my life right now. I'm in love. I'm being loved. I have a[lord][family][allies]to protect"

"I see...yeah"

Kudou-papa lets go of Michi.

"My youngest daughter is the first to be independent...you're still 15. But, it can't be helped. It's not the age that decides your life...I was the same"

Then, he looked at Margo-san and me

"Take care of my daughter"

He bows his head deeply...

"...Yes"

I bow my head.

I didn't say anything further than that.

"...Bye then. Take care. This hotel is a battlefield"

"Father as well...take care"

The father daughter puts on their warrior mask again...

"Oh right...Etsuko's in this hotel too"

Michi's mother?

Did she move from the security of the theater to the security of hotel?

Then that means she's under director Yamaoka.

"She's dull-witted unlike me."

Yeah...her mother won't accept Michi's independence.

"Yes. I think that mother will never understand"

Michi said

"Mother is a salary woman, not a warrior"

She assesses her own mother

"Anyway...watch out for her"

"Yes, thank you very much...fortunes of war for father as well"

"Yeah...thanks"

"Yes...excuse us"

Then, the father daughter parts.

The father went downstairs to repel the invading forces.

The daughter goes upstairs to identify the traitor and take them down.

"...Michi"

"What is it, Master?"

"Want to walk holding hands?"

I suggested.

"Sorry...if one of my hand is held, my response against an enemy assault would be delayed"

Michi answers as the vanguard of our group

"I see...that's true"

"Therefore...the hem of my uniform"

...Michi?

"Please hold into the hem"

Michi said with her cheeks blushing.

If I just hold into the hem of her clothes lightly, she can shake me off to respond when something happens.

"Sure..."

I grab the back side of Michi's uniform

"Ufufufu"

Michi laughed.

"What's up?"

"...I'm just happy. Just a while ago, I was making contact with Master but I...!"

This small warrior girl...just how cute can she get?

"Hey hey, let's go with the tension in mind!"

Nei-san tells us from behind.

We then got out of the corridor and climbed up the stairs.



After a while...we have arrived to the floor where the directors of Kouzuki group and the[private students]are evacuated without any troubles.

"Err...they should be in this room"

Nei-san checks the tablet...

"Let's change the formation I'll be the vanguard"

Seki-san said.

In order to face the people of Kouzui group...it's better for Seki-san who's known to be Jii-chan's full time guard to be in the front of the group

"...Then please"

Formation change.

The front is Seki-san. Next is Reika...it's like a two-top formation

Next, Michi and me.

Behind, Nei-san and Yukino.

Margo-san is the rear guard.

...Knock knock

Seki-san knocks the door.

The door opens.

It seems that Seki-san's face is confirmed from the peephole.

"Is there a problem...Seki-san?"

Showing up is Michi's mother...Kudou Etsuko

She's in charge of the security of this room?

"I've come under the orders of[Kakka]"

Seki-san answered with only that.

"Are the executives in this room?"

"...Yes, that's right...oh, Michi? What's the matter with you?"

Kudou Etsuko is surprised to see that her daughter is among the members following behind Seki-san

"Anyway, could we enter the room?"

Seki-san said, Kudou-mama...

"Ah, sorry...please come in"

Kudou-mama is far older than Seki-san...her duty in Kouzuki security service is longer than Seki-san and Reika.

And yet...she's speaking to Seki-san formally means...

The position of Jii-chan's full time guard and the top elite is a special thing.

"This way"

This room is the same room as where I've met Jii-chan.

A two space conference room.

The room at the back is supposed to be a large room where around 30 people can hold a meeting.

The people evacuated should be gathered there.

"...What's the matter? Who came?"

That voice is...

Kouzuki security service, security department...director Yamaoka?

"it's me, director Yamaoka"

Seki-san tells director Yamaoka

"It seems they came from[Kakka's]order"

Kudou-mama reports to her boss.

"An order?...What is it?"

Director Yamaoka stares at us.

Apart from Reika and Seki-san...

The other faces are just too abnormal

Nei-san, Yukino and I are high school students...Michi's a middle school girl.

Furthermore, director Yamaoka knows that we're from[Kuromori]

"I have no duty to explain to you...let us through the back room"

Seki-san speaks to director Yamaoka with the rude-polite tone like the first time they met.

I see, in order for the young women be able to argue with the elders of the organization...they need an arrogant attitude like this.

"I'm the director of the security department you know...!"

Director Yamaoka refuses but...

"Yes...why is a security director coming to this place? Shouldn't you be in a position where you command the field?"

Seki-san laughs at director Yamaoka

"T-That is..."

"Oh...Kudou-san's guard department is in charge with the battle with the enemy who attacked so director Yamaoka is free?"

Director Yamaoka endures Seki-san's insulting words.

"Isn't that great? The guards of security department are usually gorgeous, but they evacuate when it comes to a real emergency. I feel sorry for the guard department who always wipes your sorry asses...!"

"E-Even we are doing our best!"

"Doing your best...this?"

Seki-san corners director Yamaoka.

"The[enemy]came in with three large busses. Isn't the checkpoint at the entrance of the hotel the work of security department?"

"...T-That is"

"What happened to the uniformed security guards at checkpoints? Have they all died from enemy shootout? I just think that it's impossible to allow an invasion of the enemy without any resistance, what do you say?"

Seki-san asks...director Yamaoka

"...Missing"

"Missing?"

"The security guards who were patrolling at the perimeter of the hotel were out of contact. They're all missing"

What's with that?

"When Fujimiya-san and I were on the way of transferring Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama from the theater to this hotel...there were Kouzuki security service uniformed guards that attacked us"

"I received that report"

Director Yamaoka feels sorry.

"After the enemy attack...all of the security in their uniform were made to withdraw from the hotel"

"Yes...Chief Yazawa evacuated to outside instead of the underground parking lot, as ordered by[Kakka] "

"It's unknown how many of the enemies are mixed with the uniformed people... what about the security department in this hotel right now...?"

"There's only a few people left in the management including the two of us."

Director Yamaoka said mortified.

If he doesn't have a subordinate then his job as a security officer disappears. Director Yamaoka who's the head of the uniformed security guards admits.

"I should be submitting a resignation letter to[Kakka]shouldn't I...?"

"Please think about that after repelling all the[enemies]...!"

Seki-san said in a harsh tone.

"Right now, Kudou-san's subordinates are fighting...!"

"I'm sorry"

"We came here under[Kakka's]orders...the enemy isn't allowed to go up further"

Seki-san said clearly

Chapter 300. With Adults

"Now then...I would like to see the executives..."

Seki-san hurries director Yamaoka

"Uhm...is he with you?"

Director Yamaoka looks at us

"...Of course"

"However..."

"It's an[imperial order]Yamaoka-san. If you're a manager in Kouzuki security service then I think you know what that means..."

Seki-san looks at director Yamaoka with eyes of mockery.

"...Understood. Hey, let these people in"

Director Yamaoka orders the two giants in navy blue suit protecting the door of the inner room.

"Uhm...so, where is[Kakka]right now"

Feeling sorry, director Yamaoka asks Seki-san.

"...I can't tell you"

"I'm the director of the security department. For me to not know the current location of[Kakka]which is our most important security target..."

I see, that's why...

Since he doesn't know where Jii-chan is...director Yamaoka is guarding the executives are less important than Jii-chan

...Voluntarily.

Kudou-papa's the one fighting the raiders...

In the first place...with the number of guards under director Yamaoka left the hotel, it's impossible to engage the enemies with guns.

In that case, director Yamaoka can only strengthen the vicinity of Jii-chan.

Or rather...in this situation, if they can't protect Jii-chan then they can't stand with the honor of a security guard.

Yet...director Yamaoka isn't informed the location of Jii-chan.

Unable to do anything...director Yamaoka voluntarily guarded the executives of Kouzuki group as the second best solution

"I can't tell you"

Seki-san said clearly

"You can't tell me?"

Director Yamaoka said slightly agitated.

"It's not just you, be at ease. Kudou-san doesn't know either. I think chief Yazawa knows. [Kakka]has been evacuated to a safe place with Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san as guards...!"

Seki-san lies.

The two men who are Jii-chan's full time guards aren't in the[emergency evacuation room]

However, if he knows that Jii-chan is protected by the two of them, he can be rest assured for the time being.

If he's a normal human...

"Are the full time guards trying to monopolize protecting[Kakka]?"

Director Yamaoka said...Seki-san.

Snorted.

"You can't be trusted because you think like that...!"

"...I-I"

"It's all[Kakka's]idea. Us full time guards are always acting according to[Kakka's]will. You seem to really don't understand anything...!"

Seki-san glares at director Yamaoka.

"Yamaoka-san...you're a very shallow man and likes to talk useless things. Besides...you also seem to be lacking the eyes to discern people's true nature. That is why you can only be given a light position as a security manager...!"

Director Yamaoka's expression turned stiff.

"Are you making fool of security department?...!"

"You jest...you're the only one I'm making fool of"

"...You bitch!"

The angry director Yamaoka tries to grab Seki-san but...
At that moment, Seki-san moves at high speed...!

"...Fua!"

Director Yamaoka's body turned in the air...
Then...*thud*!
He was thrown down the floor strongly...

"...B-Bastard!"

Before director Yamaoka's eyes who's trying to get up...is Reika sticking her
can to him.
The hard tip of the special metal breaks the carpet and pierces the metal floor.
Margo-san and Nei-san...
Michi's protecting me.
Yukino...she's left alone.

"...You just saw it now didn't you?"

Seki-san asks Kudou-mama

"You there as well..."

The two giants guarding the inner door is asked by Seki-san.

"Y-Yes"

"I-I have seen it"

Kudou-mama's taken aback, she can't answer...
The two of director Yamaoka's subordinates answered Seki-san.

"Director Yamaoka is the one who made a move first...it's a legitimate self
defense just now"

"Y-Yes..."

"I-I think so too"

The guants responds while worrying about director Yamaoka's eyes.

"I think I'm in trouble. You'll have to sign the report later"

Seki-san said coolly.

"Y-Yes"

Director Yamaoka looks up at Seki-san.

"A report...!"

"Though I'm someone from Kouzuki security service, I'm a full time guard...I'm out of the internal command system. I am supposed to prioritize[Kakka's]imperial order than chief Yazawa's order which is my direct supervisor, in fact, I'm direct subordinate of[Kakka] Therefore...it's an obligation of a management employee of Kouzuki security service like you to produce a report"

"Are you threatening me?"

Seki-san looks at Kudou-mama.

"Could anyone else teach this dull thinking person? I don't want to deal with him anymore"

Kudou-mama looks at director Yamaoka who's having a miserable face...

"...Seki-san has no reason nor merit to threaten director Yamaoka"

"But...this little girl just told me to report this incident to[Kakka]just now. I'm sure that she intends to make Kakka look at me badly!"

"...Wrong"

Kudou-mama said.

"What Seki-san wants to be reported is the trouble with Director Yamaoka seen by me and those in this room. Instead of witnesses, you have to look for[Kakka's]decision instead"

"...But!"

"Doing it this way, you won't make any ill feelings between the security department and the full time guards! You don't get it?!!!"

Kudou-mama made director Yamaoka fall silent.

"Sorry...he's not like this usually. Because of his continued failure since the theater...losing[Kakka's]trust...he felt that he has to do something, so he's a bit distracted and irritated. I'm sorry. We're really sorry"

Kudou-mama bows her head for Director Yamaoka.

"Director Yamaoka's been misunderstanding from the beginning..."

Seki-san said.

"In the first place...[Kakka]doesn't have any expectations from director Yamaoka from the beginning"

Hearing that...director Yamaoka suffers a deep shock.

"If Director Yamaoka has the ability to be trusted by[Kakka]...then he should've been elected to be a top elite long time ago. Top elites are the people who perform the real job of Kouzuki security service"

Seki-san said calmly

"It's not only excellent combat skills, professional knowledge, and quick judgement you need...you can't be a top elite unless you're trusted by[Kakka] Chief Yazawa recommends and[Kakka]examines them himself...if you're dignity as a human isn't recognized..."

Dignity as a human?

"We're humans so we want money, we have greed. But, we don't betray our lord because of that. If I ever thought about turning against[Kakka]...I will first report to[Kakka]to gain permission to break our master-servant relationship. Until that process is over...I will never attack[Kakka]and [Kakka]won't dispose of me without saying anything"

Yeah...the trust between master-servant.
That's not kept by money, status, nor honor.
It is because they mutually trust each other...
You may be betrayed by vulgar low lives but...
Because you know that person isn't like that...
That is why you trust. There is a bond.

"[Kakka]hasn't trusted me from the start?"
"Should be. If you were trusted then he would be scolding director Yamaoka about his disappointment for tonight. Did[Kakka]tell you something?"

"None...not only from[Kakka]but chief Yazawa too"

"Probably...it might be a difficult to take time to scold director Yamaoka. After all...we're in an emergency where we're attacked by the enemy. Everyone's

busy..."

Seki-san laughs sarcastically.

In this emergency...the[security department]is removed from the site means?

"T-Then...just what are we...us security department?! Towards[Kakka]?!"

Director Yamaoka raises a heartbroken cry.

"The security department...is needed only when it's safe. It's all just their existence that signifies that the criminal acts have to be given up as there are strong looking security guards in their uniform lined up. Therefore, if you have a decent fighting ability, anyone who has a good physique can have a uniform. There's a need to understand the instructions of the boss and the nature that won't run towards a crime recklessly but..."

Seki-san explains.

"But...even if there are people who will not give up doing a crime even after looking at the thick wall of security guards...Instead, the top elite will confront those scoundrels who pushes their way through. We fight such scoundrels in every ways...legal or illegal...destroying them. Authorized by[Kakka]to have that much authority emphasizes dignity as the fighting power...!"

Dignity as a person

"Let me tell you at least...Kudou-san is also one of[Kakka's]top elites. Kudou-san himself doesn't admit it because he's enrolled in Kouzuki security service in an incomplete form but...[Kakka]fully trusts Kudou-san"

...Yeah

Kudou-papa's supposed to be the top of guard department, but...

In documents, he's someone from [Kudou detective office]which is another company different from Kouzuki security service and is supposed in business partnership.

He refuses to be a regular employee of Kouzuki security service...

"Now then...is that enough? We're going in"

Director Yamaoka...

"I...just what should I do from now on?"

"That's something I don't know...if you're an adult man then think about it yourself"

"...Director Yamaoka"

Kudou-mama tries to get close to the depressed director.
Even in this situation...Kudou-mama's still caring for Director Yamaoka.

"...Leave me alone for a while"

Director Yamaoka rejects Kudou-mama.

"I don't want you to see my disgraceful appearance more than this..."

...oh

He's quite a selfish man...

This man has made a move on a woman who has a husband and a child.
Then...Kudou-mama has been taken by this unsteady man...

"...Master"

Michi looks at my eyes then whispered

"...I"

...Yeah

It's painful to see her mother's shame.

I also have a memory of it

I...

I touch Michi's small butt.

"Afu...Master?"

"Remember, Michi's all mine"

"Yes...that is right"

The confusion disappears from Michi's eyes.



"W-What...did something happen?!"

As soon as we entered the next room, an old man in a suit speaks to us.
Yeah, this feeling where he threatens everything...
Tsunoda's father.

We enter the room in group.

...It's a bit wider than the meeting room when I first met Jii-chan.

Sculpted bronze statues riding on marble...it's a bit luxurious room.

Several wooden desks are lined up.

Huh...Kudou-mama who's told "Leave me alone" by director Yamaoka comes to the room with us

"...I've come under [Kakka's] imperial order"

Seki-san declares gallantly.

"Is [Kakka] safe?!"

This is...he's with Kouzuki Souji and Subaru so it'll be the brothers' father. In this, he's the closest to Jii-chan when it comes to blood.

"Yes, they are currently evacuated on a separate room...!"

"I would like to see [Kakka] No, even just a call. Anyway...I would like to contact [Kakka]...!"

The one who said that is Natsuki Makoto's father. I see...their relationships, permutations and roles within the group are the same as the children.

"We cannot do that..."

Seki-san said strongly

"...What do you mean?"

Kouzuki Souji's father asks.

"...Kuromori-sama"

Seki-san looks at me.

Are you saying that I'll take it from here?

Well...true

Jii-chan ordered me to do so...

"Uhm, it seems that there is a [traitor] in this group"

I said calmly

"Therefore...we cannot let anyone meet Kouzuki-san unless we take out the

traitor, we can't tell Kouzuki-san's current location as well. There is the possibility of the[traitor]informing the[enemy]after all"

My words turned the room astir.

"Don't be ridiculous!"

"There's no way there's a[traitor]among us!"

"In the first place...who are you?!"

"I don't intend to play with a kid. Hurry and let us contact[Kakka]...!"

The prince faction's fathers make a noise.

The rising faction's father are silent, watching over the situation.

The prince faction's fathers and children begin to make noise...

We can't make any progress with this.

...Now then.,

"Reika...could you break that bronze statue over there?"

I tell Reika.

We have to make a breakthrough and amaze these people...

Those who wear authority have to be overwhelmed by realistic power.

"Master...that's not needed"

Michi comes close to me.

"That statue is a fine art so it shouldn't be destroyed for such purposes."

...Michi?

"Besides, we can give everyone a stronger shock if I do it instead of Reika-oneesama...!"

True...Reika's from Kouzuki security service...

Some of them know the power of her cane

...But

"Please leave this to me"

Michi looks at me with serious eyes.

Is she plotting something?

"Yeah...got it"

I decided to use Michi

"...Go!"

Michi comes forward.

The executives don't even bother with this small adorable and cute girl.

...But

"...Haa!"

Wind blows up in a moment!

Michi pulls out the red whip hidden under her skirt!

...Shubaa!!

...Bishu!!

The desk in front of the executives...is blown apart!

...Shuba!

...Shubabyu!!

The tip of the whip crushes the splinters of the desk floating in the air!

...Zushuba!

...Gua Shuba!

The whip snaps it in to finer pieces!

"...Haiiiiiii!!!!"

Michi's whip destroyed the desk thoroughly...!

The executives and their children...

All of them are stunned by the too much destructive power...

...Shubyun!

Michi stops her whip and then looked up.

The small middle school girl speaks to the stunned men...

"...The most ruthless and brutal woman in Kuromori house...Michi"

Kudou-mama is surprised at the transformation of her daughter.

"...There's not much time. The traitor should come forward. If you don't come after counting ten..."

Michi said...

"We will kill everyone in here..."

Chapter 301. Find the Traitor!

"Hey...wait a moment"

Tsunoda's father said, but...

"Sadly, we don't have much time. If we don't get rid of the traitor as soon as possible, everyone in the hotel would be in danger now...!"

Michi gazes at the executives with sharp eyes.

Seki-san supplements what Michi said in panic.

"The enemy has blended in with the uniformed guards of Kouzuki security service. In addition, the information here is leaked to the[enemy], the checkpoints are cancelled arbitrarily, and they were easily allowed to invade the hotel premise. We can only think that there's a traitor among us executives"

The executives look at each other.

The young men makes noise.

"But...we don't know any illegal or criminal organizations!"

Kouzuki Souji and Subaru's father shouts.

"...Just who the hell are attacking us right now? [Kakka]said that it was Cesario Viola but"

Natsuki's father asks, Seki-san answers.

"The enemy's boss is a criminal organization on American...Cesario Viola. But, most of the enemy forces are thugs coming from the far east region of Russia. It's been identified that they came to Japan through Niigata port"

"The one who has connection with Russia and grounds of Niigata is...Kouzuki Noboru-sama?"

Said by the father of Oohari from the prince faction.

Really...both the parent and child, the prince faction just keep speaking without hesitation.

On the other hand, those who just stay silent and watch over the situation...is a feature of the rising faction it seems.

"Speaking of which...Noboru-sama isn't here?"

Tsunoda's father said.

Though he's in a branch family...Kouzuki Noboru is a member of the rising faction, not the prince faction.

His son, Kouzuki Kenshi has come to this place but...

His father, Noboru ignored Jii-chan's summon without making any contact.

"Then, the traitor is Noboru-kun..."

Kouzuki Souji's father said displeased.

"No, Noboru-sama isn't the only one who ignored the urgent summon of[Kakka]"

Tsunoda said.

"Shiba-san...he's not here as well, is he?"

The most powerful among the rising group...Shiba Okitachi, a capable executive who's considering to be independent from the Kouzuki group, has lost contact after informing that he had left Haneda airport on his way back from China.

"After all, the most suspicious people are the ones aren't here. That's what I think...!"

Tsunoda strongly insists.

I...

"Well...[Kakka]said this"

Saying that it's from[Kakka]...the eyes of the executives concentrate on me.

"Using russians or leaving too much evidence of entering from the Niigata port...is a bit too much. It might be a trap to point at Kouzuki Noboru..."

"...I think so too. Noboru-san isn't someone who would do such a destructive thing"

The one who said that is...

Err, the rising faction...Takagi Fuuta's father?

Takagi Fuuta hasn't talked in the[private school]neither so I don't know the personality nor the position of his father that well.

"Rather...if the traitor is in here, the executives and their children would be in danger, Jii-chan...no,[Kakka]is worried"

"Why is it dangerous?"

Natsuki's father asks me.

The other executives are dumbfounded.

...Oh

These people don't have any imagination.

"As I said...what happens if the traitor invites the enemy into this place and kill the other executives but himself? He can just manage to say that he survived with a few scratches..."

The traitors who survived will automatically manage the operation of Kouzuki group.

"Hmm...it's a very interesting imagination but I don't think that there's a person here that would think that much. We may have different opinions but... we admire[Kakka]and love the Kouzuki group. There's no such fool who would surrender to such desire

Kouzuki Souji's father says so but...

"That's not a fact but your own imagination isn't it?"

I said.

"It's a logical guess. Based on my experience so far...! Isn't it often said long ago that you're innocent until proven guilty...right?"

Kouzuki Souji's father says confidently

Oh, they inherited the conceit and idiocy from their father.

"That's right!"

Tsunoda's father follows, as expected.

...Shubibin!

Michi's whip slaps the floor violently...

"There's no time, Master...when it comes to this, let's just get rid of them quickly?"

...Wait, you, could it be?

"Does everyone know that you will faint in shock if you experience severe pain?"

...Shubarurun!

Michi whips her ring!

"No way, you...with that whip?"

Natsuki's father asks Michi fearfully

"...Yes. With this, everyone will faint in pain. That way, no matter who is the traitor...they won't be bothering to cooperate with the[enemy]in the future...!"

...Shushushubaba!

The red whip slashes the air!

"I'll say it just in case...those who have a weak heart may die of shock. In addition, if it hits hard, it would interfere with the flow of nerves and blood, it may leave some handicap so please understand"

Michi's cold eyes pierces the executives.

"Hey, wait...you"

"Everyone...if you're an executive of Kouzuki group then please prepare yourself...!"

Michi holds her whip...approaching the directors.

"S-Seki-san...stop her"

One of the executives call out to Seki-san.

"That's right, you're from Kouzuki security service aren't you? You have a duty to protect us"

...Seki-san

"...Sorry to disappoint. I am[Kakka's]full-time guard...[Kakka]has left all the dealing with this matter to him...I can't do anything"

That said, they look at me.

"...T-This kid"

"Yes. He is the one who received[Kakka's]imperial order after all...!"

The attention gathered to me.

"Hey, you...stop this girl. To use a whip...!"

"This is unbearable to do such a thing!"

"That's right...!"

The executives all say to me.

"In the first place...who are you? What's your relationship with[Kakka]?"

Kouzuki Souji's father ask...the young one, Tsunoda speaks up.

"Aah, you see, this guy is...Mi"

...Shubababababa!!!

Before he would say [Misuzu], the red whip hits Tsunoda's feet!

"...Ouchhhhhhhh!!!!"

Tsunoda who was beaten by the whip on the tip of his foot...jumps up!
The skin of the solid and heavy leather shoes was torn.

"I've knocked it on a place that's protected on purpose...!"

Michi mutters.

"...B-Bitch!"

"You seem to have a very light mouth...next, I'll tear up your mouth...!"

Michi holds her red whip.

Michi, seriously...?

"Dammit, try it if you can! You bitch!"

The angry Tsunoda tries to rush to Michi...!
Everyone in the room focuses on the two people...At that time!!!

"...Haaaaa!!!"

Suddenly, Michi's whip flies diagonally!
Michi's not looking at the whip.
Though...the tip of the red whip...

Definitely hit Takagi Fuuta's father's arms!!!

...Bishiii!!!

"...Uwaaaaa!!!"

Takagi Fuuta's father puts his hand on the inside pocket of the suit then topple over his back!

"...Don't move!"

At the next moment...Reika jumps in and thrusts the cane to Takagi's father.

"...Take out that thing in your pocket slowly"

Reika gazes harshly...Takagi's father draws out his hand from the pocket. What's held in his hand is...a mobile phone.

"...Hey, isn't he just trying to take out a phone?"

Reika.

"At the moment where the people in the room were paying attention to those children...?!"

Michi speaks up.

"Even though all of the other people's[Qi]were focusing on me and yet... your[Qi]is the only one heading to another thing...!"

Michi's ability to sense human's[Qi]is amazing...
Pretending to confront Tsunoda(Child)...Michi's mind is always been exploring the director's[Qi]

Seki-san takes Takagi's father's phone...

She look at the screen.

"It looks like you were trying to mail without looking at the screen in your pocket. [Emergency State Rescue Please]it's not even converted to Kanji, you were just hitting Hiragana"

"...The recipient?"

Reika asks, Seki-san...

"It only says[Mr.]...we would immediately know if we call it"

No way...is it directly to Cesario Viola?

"Either way...Takagi-san, you're the traitor"

Seki-san said...Takagi's father hangs his head.

"...No way"

"Takagi-san...?!"

"No, but..."

"If the sentence of the mail is true then there's no question"

The executives turned noisy

"...Father"

The son is also shocked dropping his shoulders behind his father.

Speaking of which...

Indeed, Takagi's father belongs into the rising faction but he tries to get involved in a conversation with us...

That's a strange indication.

I see...so it was him?

Jii-chan said that too.

The traitor would be in the rising faction...

"Of course, we won't let you faint...Takagi-san will be interrogated in a separate room"

...Yeah

We have to ask his connection with Viola somehow.

"Anyway, take her away from the other executives...Kudou-san"

Seki-san looks not at Michi but the mother.

"...W-What?"

Kudou-mama's completely shocked.

"I'd like you to contact chief Yazawa and tell him to prepare a room for interrogation. A floor that's not on this room. Also...it's better for the executives to move away from this room." This room's position has already been identified by the enemy"

"Y-Yes"

Kudou-mama hurries to the wall intercom.
Chief Yazawa seems to be in touch with the hotel's business line.
Meanwhile, Reika pulls up Takagi's father.

"If you run then I'll crush your limbs one by one. Okay?"

Pounding the cane of death to the floor...Reika restrains Takagi's father.

"Uhm...can I go with father?"

Takagi Fuuta asks Seki-san

"I can no longer stay with everyone else...!"

If his father is the traitor then he can no longer be with the other students.
He have judged so.

"...Right. You're going to come too"

Seki-san answers.

"Now then...for the time being, our mission in this room is over."

Seki-san smiles at me.

Michi nods...

Reika also smiles at me.

...But

Somehow, I feel it's lacking.

My heart is still restless.

"...What's wrong?"

Feeling worried from my reaction...Seki-san peeks at me.

"No...somehow I feel unpleasant"

Hearing my words...Michi searched the[Qi]inside the room again...
Reika also looks at the director's faces while holding Takagi's father.

"...Something's not refreshing?"

Looking back...Margo-san and Nei-san smile at me.
...Did both of them notice something?

"...I feel like something's lacking"

I answered.

"Hmm...what's lacking?"

"...I don't know"

I answer Margo-san.

"I don't know why but I feel like I haven't solved anything yet. I feel like we're overlooking something big..."

"Well, it seems that your intuition's come to work...Yo-chan's made some progress!"

Nei-san smiles brightly

As expected...there's an oversight.

"What? No way...You can't even notice something so simple?"

Yukino who's at the back laughs at my troubled face.

"Yeah, then tell me"

When I say that...Yukino

"...Since when did you assume that there's only one traitor...?!"

...Ah

...I see

There's still a possibility that there are more traitors.

"It can't be helped. Kouzuki-san deliberately made you believe that"

Margo-san said.

"But...think again carefully. Kouzuki-san made you see a lot of things today..."

...Yeah

Kouzuki house...

The[private school]

The inside of Shirasaka house...

"Using what you've gained from those...think once again"

"What to think?"

Margo-san smiles.

"...The traitor's purpose"

...Purpose?

"What is the ultimate aim of the traitor? Do you think they're trying to kill Kouzuki-san?"

...Well

"I don't. If the traitor is among the executives, then he knows the firmness of chief Yazawa and the full time guards...besides"

"...Besides what?"

Margo-san laughs happily

"If the top dies right now...Kouzuki group's framework would collapse"

Right.

They may aim at Misuzu or Ruriko but...

There's no single attack targeting Jii-chan directly

"Then...what's the traitor's aim?"

...That is

"To kill all of the successors other than himself?"

That idea comes to me.

The executives other than Jii-chan aren't as protected as him.

If I can kill only the executives, then I will kill

Then, if only one survives...

He'll clearly take the top spot of the Kouzuki group from Jii-chan...

Jii-chan is needed to inherit the position.

"In short...the traitor's target is?"

"The executives other than himself...Jii-chan's successors, Ruriko and Misuzu and their parents...and the people with Kouzuki surname in the[private school]"

He should be thinking of cleaning up all of those who can possibly be at the top of Kouzuki group other than himself.

"Now then...Do you think that only Takagi-san would think and act that way by himself?"

Nei-san's word shocked me.
I know the cause of discomfort.
With Takagi Fuuta's father...I can't see that he has a backbone to contact
Cesario Viola to take over the Kouzuki house.
Anyway...he's very like a small guy.
He's not the type that plans and act according to his will...he's the type that
moves by someone's instructions

"You see...I've noticed something, can I say it?"

Yukino said.

"Yeah, say what you want. Everything is welcome"

I said, Yukino...

"You see, I've been watching these people from far away, having a bird's-eye
view. These people aren't the same as the group of their children"

That's right, Yukino...

She's been watching the state of people inside the room from near the door.

"And yet...since earlier, that old man there and that old man over there have
been exchanging eye signals occasionally They're making strange eye contacts.
Even though they're from different groups..."

Yukino points at the two people...

One of them is an already discovered traitor...Takagi's father...one belonging to
the rising faction.

And the other one is...prince faction's Tsunoda's father.

"...Tsunoda, you?!"

"T-This is a misunderstanding...There's no way I would oppose Kouzuki house!
Right?!"

Tsunoda's father desperately tries to dodge the suspicion.

"Tsunoda-san...lend me your phone"

Seki-san said.

"Eh...why?"

"I'll look at the contact history and addresses...I will check if Takagi-san has tried

to send a mail to the same[Mr]as Takagi-san"

"...That is"

Tsunoda's frightened.

...There's one!

The same recipient...

Or rather...he knows the man named[Mr.]

"...Then this means"

The lines connect inside my head.

Tsunoda is someone who's also used by people.

There's no strong intention to become the ruler of all...

The traitor's boss...is another one.

"...I see"

There's a conclusion that comes up inside my head.

"Jii-chan said that didn't he...people who try to stand on top of the organization don't dirty their own hands..."

Seki-san looks at my face then asks.

"...What do you mean?"

"The traitor's boss doesn't need to bother coming here. He'll just let his minions do everything and stay in a safe place"

...Therefore

Leaving this place to Takagi's father and Tsunoda...and he'll be absent himself

"The traitor's boss is...Kouzuki Noboru"

I said.

Chapter 302. Behind the back

"Why do you think that Kouzuki Noboru is the traitor's boss?"

Margo-san asks me.,

"...Well"

I look at the executives.

"As expected...I think that it is impossible unless you're a person with the resolve to take over a famous house with history and tradition like Kouzuki house"

...Yeah

A man who's satisfied being someone's vassal will not take over the lord. Because it would be easier to live as the number two or three who just borrow the power of their lord.

"Therefore...the prince faction don't fundamentally betray their head. They have already acquired the status by receiving the prestige of the Kouzuki family already"

That's right...Prince faction's leader, Kouzuki Souji's father himself is already bossy with just his blood relationship with Jii-chan.

Their glory doesn't exist without Jii-chan.

Therefore...they don't feel like becoming the top at all.

"But...in that case, the other absentee, Shiba Okitachi would be suspicious as well? He also has the strong will to become the top?"

Margo-san says but,

"Well...looking at his son, Shiba Akira, you'd think that it's different"

I answer.

"Shiba Akira-san has the spirit to leave Kouzuki group and become independent anytime. I think this is the influence of his father. In short, his father, Shiba Okitachi don't hold a concern for the Kouzuki group itself...I don't

think he considers becoming the top of group that he would be forcing into criminal acts"

Yeah...if he disagrees with Jii-chan then he can become independent right away.

He's doesn't want to make Kouzuki group his own.

"Because...Kouzuki group is dyed deeply with the various stagnation of Kouzuki house. It's impossible for anyone but Kouzuki family members to take over. Instead of taking a large organization filled with connection ...he tries to make an organization that allows his will to go smoothly even if it's small. Shiba-san should be thinking that way"

...That's right.

Then that means.

"In short...the ones who are aiming to be the top of Kouzuki group has to be from Kouzuki house. Without the Kouzuki name, you won't be able to keep this large organization after all"

I remember Shirasaka Hiromitsu from Osaka earlier.

Mr. Shirasaka Hiromitsu has risen to the representative of Osaka TV and newspaper company of Shirasaka house.

Hiromitsu himself...has lived in Osaka since his father's generation is an affiliate of Shirasaka house.

But still...even if an affiliate...it's no doubt that being a member of Shirasaka house boosted his advancement.

Family name...blood connections as a big meaning after all.

"In the first place...Kouzuki Noboru belonged to the[rising faction]despite being a member of Kouzuki house shows his ambition"

For prince faction...lineage is everything

Therefore...Kouzuki Souji's father who's closely related to Jii-chan's blood is bossy.

Though they have the same surname...Kouzuki Satoshi's father follows Kouzuki Souji.

If he's on this side...Kouzuki Noboru won't crawl his way up.

...No

Once again, I recall the role of Kouzuki Kenshi, Kouzuki Noboru's son in the[private school]...

While he belongs to the rising faction...I think that he speaks like a coordinator of the whole group.

And, he also appeals his presence to the other students and Jii-chan.

"Well...that's how it is"

Margo-san said.

"Thinking logically...Kouzuki Noboru is the center of the traitors. The others has no reason to do such things"

"And...I think that Kouzuki Noboru is trying to make the prince faction and the rising faction his own minions."

Namely...his agent in the rising faction is Takagi Fuuta's father. And on the prince faction, he persuaded Tsunoda's father.

"Tsunoda...why, you...?!"

Kouzuki Souji's father tries to blame Tsunoda's father but...

"Well yeah, that person don't care who's his boss! As long as it's convenient for him!"

Nei-san said.

Kouzuki Souji's father is trying to be a good subordinate of Jii-chan.

That tendency won't change even with Misuzu an Ruriko's generation.

He's satisfied being the number 2, 3 of the entire Kouzuki house.

You'd normally hate to be in that position but...if you're number two or three by name anyway, you won't make any strife in the house.

As long as people like Kouzuki Souji's father sticks below...

Tsunoda's father can only be the aide of the number two(or number three)

But...if Kouzuki Noboru succeeds in the coup...

If you kill the other successor candidates and snatch the position of head from Jii-chan...

Then Tsunoda's father who's a follower can become the number two of the organization at once...

Tsunoda's father lost to that temptation...

"Even if you guess from every possibility...I think that there's no mistake that Kouzuki Noboru is the center of the traitors"

Margo-san declared.

"But[Kakka]... He said that it was too obvious to make a connection of enemies from Russia coming through Niigata to Kouzuki Noboru. For him to purposely making such evidence..."

Reika speaks her doubts.

"Well...I think it's a fake that's just making you think too much about it like this. You'd think that they won't do something so obvious...you'll look away your doubt"

I think.

But, Margo-san...

"Nah...that's just overthinking"

She's laughing with Nei-san

"Kouzuki Noboru is just thinks that this is his only chance and threw all of his chips. Therefore, he's using whatever he can use. Who cares if there's evidence left. Anything will do. The bottom lines is that he just have to kill all the people with power other than himself..."

...I see.

There's not much deep thinking...

He's the type that would just push it by force.

"Remember this...humans think about things by their own standard. Kouzuki-san is very cautious and deliberate, isn't he? Therefore...he thought that the traitor would be acting with such deep thought"

Margo-san explains.

"No...it's wrong. Kouzuki-san intentionally shows us a biased perspective, and see if we will reach the truth or not"

Jii-chan's testing us...

"Either way...the case this time is supposed to be unforeseen even for Kouzuki

Noboru. I don't think that Kouzuki Noboru is connected with Cesario Viola before"

True...Viola's visit to Japan has been decided because Nei-san's file has been leaked out.

And compared to that...Kouzuki Noboru's cooperation is too early.,

"Perhaps...Kouzuki Noboru has been planning a coup for a long time, and may have infiltrated his pieces in Kouzuki security service? That's when he happened to catch information that Cesario Viola would be coming to Japan...then, they ask who could connect them and he decided to act to cooperate together in a hurry?"

Yeah...it's been a long time since the suspicious people have entered the Kouzuki security service guards.

That's Kouzuki Noboru's preparation for a coup before.

Tsunoda's father and Takagi's father have already been persuaded.

Then...Cesario Viola's visit started Kouzuki Noboru's plan.

That's how it happened.

"...Then there's someone who connected Kouzuki Noboru and Cesario Viola?"

Seki-san asks...Nei-san laughs.

"Isn't that obvious...it's Miss Cordelia!"

The mysterious woman who suddenly appeared with the other pair of white Viola...

Perhaps...he's an executive of the upper organization supervising Cesario Viola.

It seems Miss Cordelia has been explained to Seki-san while they were waiting for the elevator to arrive.

She didn't ask any further questions

"...Umu. That's quite a good reasoning"

Looking back...chief Yazawa is in front of the door.

He's applauding us

"It is as[Kakka]said...you people are quite talented"

...Does that mean?

Jii-chan already knows that Kouzuki Noboru is the traitor?

Knowing that...he's testing if we can reach the same reasoning?

"...Enter"

Chief Yazawa calls the top elite guard member in the room.

"We will be taking Tsunoda and Takagi. The other people will be evacuated to another room. My guards would be taking charge, not the security department"

Chief Yazawa tells the executives.

"...Haa? Interrogation? It's already night, you too"

Leaking a sigh, Tsunoda's father cracks a joke

"It's not that much. We're just going to make confirmations. Most of it are already known..."

Chief Yazawa says calmly

"It's about time my men come in contact with Kouzuki Noboru-san who's hiding in his villa in Hakone"

As expected...

Jii-chan knew it all from the start.

"But, to be honest...it's a pity that three traitors have appeared from the board of directors"

Chief Yazawa instructs his subordinates with his eyes

The two guards tries to bring Tsunoda's father and Takagi's father.

"Ah, I'll go too"

The son, Takagi Fuuta tries to stick with his father

"I-I..."

"Tsunoda's stunned by his father's betrayal"

He didn't know about it

"...Tsunoda, you stay here"

Kouzuki Souji says.

"Souji-sama...?"

"[Kakka]said...bonds from childhood are important The father and sons are different people. I have never doubted your loyalty. Stay by our side...Tsunoda"

Prince faction's boss's words, Tsunoda...

"Souji-sama...I, I...!"

Tears fall from his eyes.

Kouzuki Satoshi pats the back of Tsunoda lightly

"Yeah...you are you"

Tsunoda's father turned to Kouzuki Souji...

"Sorry...please take care of my son"

He bows his head.

"That's nothing to worry about Don't mind it"

Kouzuki Souji tells Tsunoda's father...

"Yazawa-kun...just who is this kid? Your subordinate? He's with Seki-san and Fujimiya-san but"

Kouzuki Souji's father looks at us, then asked.

"...No way. I don't hire high school students"

"Then, who are you?"

The eyes of the room gathered at us

"...It's Kuromori!"

Nei-san smiled...then said

"Kuromori...that Kuromori?"

"Eh...Father, you know them?"

Kouzuki Souji asks his father but...

There's no way he would tell about Kuromori's brothel to his son

"No, that's...too early for you!"

"What are you talking about, father?!"

Yeah, it seems that the executives of Kouzuki group are familiar with[Kuromori]

Actually, there's no one from them who has ever bought a prostitute in the mansion but.

"But, why Kuromori house?"

The manager of prostitutes come into this place...Michi rampages, and everyone had a reasoning contest.

Kouzuki Souji's father shows his doubt.

"Well...you can ask[Kakka]for that"

Margo-san pushes the troubles to Jii-chan

"Anyway, evacuate in hurry...we should think that Takagi-san and Tsunoda-san's phone has already sent the specific location of this room to the enemy"

Seki-san hurries the executives.

"Now, everyone in here should start moving according to my instructions, Goto, Kashimada, take care of them"

"...Roger"

Chief Yazawa orders, and the top elite men begin guiding the executives and the young men.

"...As expected, you're Shirasaka Yukino!"

Kouzuki Satoshi brings Tsunoda and comes in front of Yukino

"Now what...?"

Yukino answers annoyed

"Let's date next time. I know some good shops"

Kouzuki Satoshi invites Yukino but...

"No, you're not my type"

Yukino rejects coldly

"I see...by the way, you know it don't you?"

Kouzuki Satoshi looks at me.

"...What?"

"You're definitely going to bring some Otoshimae"

W-What?

"You don't get it? Are you an idiot? You're the lady killer who made these guys' princess fall. He's saying that he won't allow you to not pay Otoshimae...!"

Yukino explained.

"We can just have a party hosted by Yo-chan!"

Nei-san speaks from the side.

"Eat and drink all you can...that's fine isn't it?"

Kouzuki Satoshi shows a grinning face...

"Of course, are you ladies coming too? Dressed as a bunny girl or something...!"

"I won't do that! It's Yo-chan's Otoshimae after all!"

Nei-san laughs.

"Yo-chan...do you want me to wear bunny girl suit?"

"No, don't want"

"We don't want to see that either!"

"Then, let's make it a friendship party between men...!"

A men's only party?

"Well, fine...anyway, you're gonna pay your troubles, okay!"

Saying that, Kouzui Souji takes Tsunoda and head to the evacuation line.

"But...I don't have money to open a party though"

Those guys won't settle unless it's a high class shop.

"Just borrow some money from Katsun or Sensei. It's for Mii-chan after all!"

"...What?"

"If Yo-chan doesn't show that he's generous then Mi-chan would be ashamed"

...I see

If Misuzu aims to be the owner of Kouzuki house...

Then, she has to be with those students even if she doesn't like it.

Rather, they have to become good subordinates.

I can't afford to have her have ill relationship with them because of me.

"Got it. I'll think about it"

"Consult it with Mi-chan and Ruri-cha! Of course, you can consult with us too!"

...Yeah

Misuzu and Ruriko won't know what kind of shops they would give okay to.

No, if I'm not hospitable beyond their imagination...it's not just me but Misuzu would also be made fool of.

Money isn't a problem.

It's something that must be done as a successor of Kouzuki.

When the executives and their children left the room...

Chief Yazawa comes to us.

"I understnad why Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san are nowhere seen"

Seki-san tells the chief

"Oh?...Where do you think the two are?"

"They were guarding Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's parents, right?"

"...That's it"

Chief Yazawa admits.

"The fact that Kouzuki Noboru started a coup...means that at the same time they attack the hotel, Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama's family would be attacked as well."

In order to kill all of the successor candidates, you have to send the assassin's at the same time.

"Ootoku and Choumoto shows as[Kakka's]guards in the theater"...making the enemy careless

From the theater...each of them secretly moved to protect Misuzu and Ruriko's family.

Therefore, we can't see Ootoku-san.

"I thought that it's okay to have you and Fujimiya-kun as[Kakka's]guards..."

Chief Yazawa looks at the two.

"It's[Kakka's]imperial order why we came out"

Reika tells her boss.

"I know. [Kakka]notified me. By the way..."

Chief stares at Reika

"Fujimiya-kun...why are you dressed like that?"

Reika's not on her usual British gentleman look...
She's wearing a yellow jersey on top and bottom
Her face has no make up

"I've thought about various things..."

Reika bows her head to her boss.

"I'm reflecting on myself up until now"

"...Reflecting?"

"Up until now...I have been a woman who's drunk on her own[aesthetics]"

...Reika

"Therefore...I took off my false armor and decided to start over from such a figure...!"

Chapter 303. Tell Cesario Viola.

"Let me ask just in case...you're not going to stop dressing like a man and stick with that jersey from now on?"

Chief Yazawa asks Reika.

"W-Well...there's no other change of clothes. It's not that I'm fixated with jerseys"

"I feel relieved to hear that. Fujimiya-kun's dressed up as a dignified is popular with certain customers and...I can't let you guard VIPs in that look"

As expected...her British gentleman attire limits her customers she could guard.

"Although VIPs can't be guarded unless it's a team...the team can't unite if one looks offbeat. Fujimiya-kun has the ability but...that ability is used to support someone. But, Fujimiya-kun's personality had never been under someone until now"

Chief Yazawa's words turn Reika sorry.

"Hey hey...what really happened? If it was Fujimiya-kun before then he would be one-sidedly retorting saying[Chief, let me tell you]or something"

"...It is as Chief said"

Reika answers with a red face.

"Umu...earlier, isn't Seki-kun and Kudou's daughter teaming up with Fujimiya-kun properly. Usually, you'd be crashing with whatever Seki-kun says...turning it around and making a follow-up"

Yeah...each of them acted knowing what their roles are.

Seki-san took the official response...Michi was the one who took the role to confuse the place to drive out the traitor...

Reika hid herself so she could fight quickly when the moment comes.

They've become a proper team.

"Even though Fujimiya-kun didn't listen to my recommendation and said that

she'd do it alone, not teaming up with anyone. Just what the hell did he do to turn the tides?"

Hearing the word 'team', Reika...

"It's all thanks to Lord."

"...Lord?"

...Bad.

We can't just let him know that Reika and I are in[Kuromori family]

"Fujimiya-san became Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's full time guard."

Just in time, Seki-san made a follow-up.

"[Kakka]...has judged that they should have a full time guard with them"

"...I haven't heard about it however?"

"It was just a while ago...I think that[Kakka]will notify you soon"

Seki-san look up at the surveillance camera of the room.

Either way, Jii-chan and others are watching this at the basement.

If we tell chief Yazawa properly...it'll appeal their eyes.

"I see. Then it means that Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama is now her boss and that changed Fujimiya-kun's sense?"

"...I don't want embarrass my lord"

Reika said embarrassed.

"If your cross dressing hobby is cured, then I want you to work more as a top elite but...It can't be helped if you're Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's full time guard. You can choose from the young guys under me"

"Yes...chief?"

Reika's surprised

"You need subordinates if you're now Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's full time guard. Oh, you can only chose female guards if it's the two of them.

Kudou's little girl...Oh wait, you're on Kuromori house now"

Right.

Michi was a temporary recruited in Kouzuki security service but...chief Yazawa already approved of her participation in[Kuromori]

"But...that's regrettable. With that much skill, you could've aimed for the youngest record of our top elites"

Chief Yazawa said but...

"Chief, you don't hire high school students, didn't you say?"

"Well, that's true...the youngest one ever was Fujimiya-kun. I scouted her when I saw her during her second year high school athletic meet...but still, she officially joined after graduating"

Reika's a good swordswoman as expected.

"Well fine...Margo-oujouchan and Kyouko could train you until you grow up. That girl might change her mind sooner or later anyway Then, I hope you join us"

Kouzuki security service is a normal company so it's impossible to employ a middle school student officially.

Other than entering Kudou-papa's underground force...the[Guard Department]

"But still, that Kyouko, even though she joined in Kuromori house due to[Kakka's]order...she's completely taking root over there..."

Right.

Kyouko-san originally came to[Kuromori]by Jii-chan's orders.

"She's just easy going. We're all just women...in the first place, Kyouko-san is basically free. She had an individual contract with Kouzuki-san but...she never did a job for Kouzuki security service"

Margo-san answers.

"I want her to belong to us though"

Chief Yazawa said

"Kyouko, Margo-oujouchan, and Kudou's daughter...I want all the talented people to stay in our company"

"You mean you want everyone to be under your control?"

"Nah...I'm different from[Kakka] I'm not a perverted old man. There's a possibility that those who aren't in our company becomes hostile. We don't want to fight you"

Chief Yazawa has the resolve as a professional guard.
It's possible that today's ally can become enemy tomorrow.

"Especially a dangerous woman like Kyouko, I'd like to leave her loose as much as possible"

Chief Yazawa smiles wryly.

"I don't think there's a possibility...Misuzu-san has lost all of the possibility of going hostile against Kouzuki-san"

Margo-san answers.

...Yeah.

Right now, we don't have any reason to confront Kouzuki security service.

In the first place, Jii-chan entered our[family]...

Of course, we can't tell chief Yazawa that.

Unless Jii-chan tells chief Yazawa at his own discretion...

We should keep this matter a secret.

"...Well I hope so"

Chief sighs.

This guy's position has a lot of things to worry about.

"I see, that's interesting...does it mean that Kuromori house who's supposed to be a prostitution organization is gradually expanding?"

...What, who?

Turning back...it is.

...Kouzuki Kenshi?

"You...why are you still here?"

Seki-san asks, Kouzuki Kenshi...

"I've got nowhere to go"

He smiled.

"Finding out that my father is a traitor...I can't go to the same room as the others. However, I have not heard anything from my father so even if I'm interrogated, nothing would come out. In the first place, I myself don't think of betraying[Kakka] Look...didn't Souji-san say a while ago? The father and sons

are are different people...I have no responsibility for my father's betrayal...!"

Kouzuki Kenshi says calmly

"Therefore, I thought I'm going to follow everyone here"

Follow us?

"You're joking...our destination is just filled with danger!"

Nei-san says, but...

"It's dangerous wherever you go to the hotel right now, isn't it? In that case, there's a possibility of me being saved if I'm near with you all"

"You may not know it but...the[enemy]is aiming to attack me you know?"

"I'm prepared for it...I have no other way out"

...What?

"In order for me to gain[Kakka's]trust...I have no choice but to put myself in danger. As of now...I have nowhere to put myself into"

"What to do...Yo-chan?"

Nei-san looks at me.

...I

"Follow us if you want...but, we won't be protecting you. If you're fine with that, then..."

If you look it from the third person's eye...it's good to have a sense of tension. Besides...Kouzuki Kenshi isn't an idiot.

I think that we can use Kenshi's eyes to detect danger like Yukino.

"Oh, so you really are the boss of these people"

In exchange...the danger would burden himself...

"Are you really sure? Yo-chan...?!"

"I think that it's better to have a person with a completely different perspective from us"

I said

"Even if we say something...I only feel that we will only see the situation on the same direction"

Margo-san and Nei-san's judgement and insight are reliable but...
It's better to have more offbeat viewpoints.
We don't know what's going to happen from now on.

"Okay, then let's take him with us"

Margo-san acknowledged.

"However, you have to protect yourself...we will never help you"

"...I know"

"Everyone too, don't ever help him out...there's a possibility that you would fall into danger if you try to save him and everyone in the team would be caught in dilemma"

"...Roger"

Michi answers.

"Yes...he's not a member of the team, not even a a person to guard"

Reika makes a clear explanation.

"Sorry but we're going to abandon you when we need to. Is that okay/"

Seki-san said.

"...Guys"

Suddenly...Yukino opens her mouth.

"Just what position do I have in here? Will anyone save me when I'm in danger?"

Seki-san sighs.

"You're a part of the team. We'll save you when needed"

"That's what I think from the start"

Reika answered too

"...That said, don't go to danger on purpose"

Michi stares at Yukino.

"Really...are you sure? Am I really a member of the team?"

Yukino's confused.

"Well...it's decided by Yo-chan so it can't be helped!"

Nei-san said...Yukino looked at me.

"Yo-chan puts people who are really useful in the team."

Yeah...Yukino's eyes are useful

"Therefore...I think that Kouzuki Kenshi-san's eyes would be useful as well"

I answered.



"What do you mean...Seki-kun isn't holding the leadership?"

Chief Yazawa looked at us and asked curiously

"Ah...it's a parliamentary system. Look, we're a joint team with Kuromori house...!"

Seki-san tries to fool him but...

"It only looks to me that he has the one with the huge right to speak though"

Chief Yazawa looks at me.

"Well you see...he's the only boy. We've got to respect his opinion"

Seki-san's answer is incomprehensible.

"I'm a guy too though"

Kouzuki Kenshi tries to retort but...

"You're not a member of the team are you?"

Nei-san immediately rejects.

"Rather than that, Yazawa-san...I'd like to check the current situation"

Margo-san changes topic.

"Oh yeah...then let's take a look"

Chief Yazawa launches the computer in this conference room.

Inserting is personal ID...typing in a password.

"I'll show it in the big monitor over there"

The current situation is displayed to the monitor in the conference room.

"The[enemy]has come up to the 16th floor...but, 60% of the enemy forces have already been defeated. The guys Kudou brought did their best and had no dropouts...but they're quite exhausted

Though they're taking turns...it's a battlefield.
Even the strong free guards are almost reaching the peak of their fatigue.

"It's about the defeated enemies...are they all just Russian thugs?"

Margo-san asks.

"Yeah...as far as we can see, the people we have engaged so far are only Russians."

In short...the main people Cesario Viola had brought from US are still alive and well

"It's bad...we don't know where the core of the[enemy]is"

Seki-san said

"I guess we shake things up a bit"

Margo-san looks at Nei-san

"...Nei"

"Sure. That's what I was thinking too!"

...What?

"Yazawa-san...what floor is the current defense line of this hotel set in?"

Margo-san asks, chief Yazawa...

"Between 22nd and 23rd floor...we don't want to have them pass through further than that"

"Then...should we go on the 21st floor"

"Okay, Maru-chan!"

Margo-san looks at the conference room...

"Of course...there's filming equipment here. Can we broadcast the footage taken from this place?"

"It's possible with my pass, but...?"

We're broadcasting at the whole building?

"Then, should we stimulate Cesario Viola!"

Nei-san smiles



"...Lights, should be like this?"

Though he doesn't know what's going on...Kouzuki Kenshi works happily

Why are you having fun?

He's adjusting the angle of the lighting that was in the storage of the conference room.

"Ah, don't let it light up my chest so much...try to focus on my face"

Nei-san instructs him.

"Yes...like this?"

Yeah...the chest got dark

Nei-san's splendid breasts blends into the darkness.

"Yeah...that's good I guess?"

Margo-san checks

"Okay!"

Nei-san ties up her hair to ponytail

"Nei-san, ponytail suits you"

I said...

"You see...Cesario Viola likes this. He always makes Kei-chan have that hairstyle"

...I see.

Nei-san would be showing as Kei-san in the broadcast...

Trying to provoke Cesario Viola...!

Nei-san's originally wearing black pants and suit today.

The ultimate beauty is going to become a handsome boy...

"Camera's ready"

Seki-san operates the videocam.

Nei-san's face appears in the monitor of the conference room.

"For now, it's only in this room...the access key to the whole hotel broadcast has to be given by chief Yazawa"

"Wait a minute..."

Chief Yazawa operates the terminal and made this access the entire broadcast from this room

"Yo-chan come here...!"

Nei-san calls me.

"Yes, what is it?"

When I came close...Nei-san

"Yo-chan...would you catch a grenade for me?"

...I

"Of course...Nei-san"

I've already made a decision in my heart.

"Thanks...then"

Nei-san holds my hand.

"Yo-chan...come with me"

...Nei-san

Nei-san's hands are cold.

Her face shows her usual smile but...her hand is trembling.

To say that she'll show up before Cesario Viola...

Nei-san's scared inside.

"If it's for Nei-san..."

I...

"I'll do anything...!"



"Ten seconds...8, 7, 6, 5, 4...Cue!"

At the same time Seki-san's voice comes...the red lamp in the camera lights up.

It's streaming...

Video...and audio too...

It's being broadcasted to the speakers and monitors of this hotel...

".....Attention ! ! "

Then...Nei-san speaks in fluent English

It's different from Nei-san's usual voice...a slightly lower tone.

As she hold my hand tightly...

Nei-san acts as Kei-san.

I don't get what she's talking about at all.

But, Nei-san's voice has the sadness plucked from her heart.

Nei-san's English speech lasted for about a minute.

...Then.

Lastly, Nei-san pulls me.

I'm shown in the camera...

Nei-san said something in English, and then...

She kissed me.

Then...she smiled at the camera.

A cruel smile...

"...Cut!"

The red light in the camera disappears.

"Ufufufufu...Yo-chan, Yo-chan, Yo-chaaaaan~!"

Nei-san hugs me.

Her rich breasts is pushed against me.

"I said it! I told Viola!"

Nei-san rubs her cheeks to me.

"W-What did you say?"

Nei-san smiles.

"At first...I pretended to be like Kei-chan, and said[Mr. Viola, why aren't you coming to see me? I'm lonely]"

...Hmhmhm

"Then...[I've been waiting for Mr. Viola to come on the 21st floor. But, I already got tired of waiting]...I said"

I-I see.

"[I hate Mr. Viola now. I found someone I love even more. He's my new boyfriend. I'm madly in love with him. I thought of dedicating my mind and body to him...!]"

...Does that mean?

"[I love him. Love, love, love him so much...goodbye, Mr. Viola. I wish we never see each other again]"

...Oh

"[If you feel frustrated then come up to the 21st floor...either way, you don't have that courage!]"

Nei-san smiles

"Did you seriously say that?"

"I did! Gufufufufu! Take that bastard! Viola you idiot, Bakaa!"

Nei-san laughs out loud while hugging me.
Her laughing body is trembling.

"...Yo-chan, hug me"

Nei-san whispers small in my ears.

"Sure...Nei-san"

"Stronger...hug me tight...!"

"...Nei-san"

Nei-san's desperately fighting right now
With Viola...

I want to support her with all my strength.
This person...

I...love Nei-san.

Chapter 304. Nei and Yasuko

"How's the enemy movement Yazawa-san?"

Margo-san asks Chief Yazawa.

"Umu, there's a change...the group that's been waiting from behind starts climbing up forcefully"

Wow...is that Cesario Viola's main team?

In that case, what an easy to understand guy.

Chief Yazawa puts the surveillance camera video of the hotel to the monitor. There's a group of 30 people walking in the hotel corridor.

"From their appearance, you can't identify them since they all wear black combat clothes just like the other teams..."

Chief Yazawa shows another image of an enemy unit on a different floor to compare.

"But still...this team has a leader. You can tell that this is a unit trained on a regular basis"

True...the other teams aren't assembled well, falling apart, walking poorly. The team that seems to be Cesario Viola's troops are gathered neatly

"That said...they're not people who received proper military training. As expected, it's just the sense of unity from a crime group. There's someone among the leaders with military experience, and he's forming the group based on his knowledge. It's no big deal"

Chief Yazawa judged.

...Hmm

The surveillance camera shows the person who's instructing the subordinates on the rear unit.

That guy has a red armband along with the black combat clothing

"He's the leader of the troop"

"Then, that means that he's Cesario Viola?"

Seki-san and chief Yazawa reviews the screen.

"Nah...that guy's Giuliano"

Nei-san said.

"One of Cesario Viola's staff, Giuliano Jenka?"

Chief Yazawa confirms it with Nei-san.

"Nei's been kidnapped by Cesario Viola when she's a child, so she lived with them for a while"

Margo-san said.

"That's why I can tell...that body shape and way of talking"

Nei-san gazes at the footage of the surveillance camera.

"Ah...that guy has a blue armband right? That's Romeo Motague. Then, there's the guy with the silver armband...that guy's..."

"Cesario Viola?"

Chief Yazawa speaks ahead.

"No...that guy's...!"

Nei-san's surprised.

"Lorenzaccio Bandini!"

Lorenzaccio Bandini?!

"Wait, If I recall that guy's...?!"

He was around the baseball ground trying to snipe us...didn't Kudou-papa and Neko-san capture him?

Furthermore, a bomb was planted in his body...I felt like it has gone serious...

"Oh, if it's Lorenzaccio Bandini, then we're holding him down...though, he's not spitting out any information..."

Chief Yazawa answers.

"I see...it was a fake"

Margo-san said.

"The Bandini that was caught is a fake"

"Why would they do that?"

Seki-san asks.

"Who knows, I don't know what's going on the other side but...maybe they want us to think that Lorenzaccio Bandini isn't important for Cesario Viola?"

Making us think that he's just a small guy that can be disposable as a bomb before the fight?

"But, why is he showing on the screen imposingly right now?"

I wonder.

If we have the fakes captured by us then they should hide it all the time.

"I don't know...do they think that we can't tell through the surveillance cameras alone? Are they not thinking that Nei would be checking this way? No, that's not the case..."

Margo-san is also confused.

We just had Nei-san provoke Cesario Viola via broadcast.

They know that Nei-san, our center should be familiar with the enemy...

"Lorenzaccio Bandini's holding a rifle"

Nei-san said.

Wow, it's true.

Oh right, he was a 6th at Ohio state tournament...

We must pay attention to snipers...

"Anyway, Giuliano Jenka, Romeo Montagu, Lorenzaccio Bandini. So, where's the main, Cesario Viola?"

Chief Yazawa looks at Nei-san.

"...I don't know"

Nei-san desperately looks at the screen but...

"I think that he's one of those black clothes that don't have any armband..."

Cesario Viola's blending with the general combatant?

"Won't you be able to tell if you check the behavior of the executives? Cesario

Viola's going to instruct them sooner or later , right?"

Seki-san says, but...

"No...Giuliano is good at commanding the troop...so Mr. Viola would leave it to Giuliano and never come out"

Nei-san answers.

"Could it be that they're fooling our eyes with this troop and that Cesario Viola is in another unit?"

Kouzuki Kenshi who's been listening all this time has spoken.

"I don't think that's the case...Viola himself isn't a man with high fighting ability. If the leaders are in this unit then Mr. Viola should be here"

Nei-san answers.

"I think so too. Perhaps, this 30 people group is the only people Viola had brought from America. I don't think that Mr. Viola would be blending with the Russian thugs he can't communicate with words alone"

Margo-san judges.

"Nei...Tell chief Yazawa, Seki-san, Reika-oneesan and Michij-chan about Mr. Viola, and his men Giuliano Jenka and others"

Margo-san tells Nei-san

"Maru-chan...but"

"In fact, only Nei has met them...even if it's trivial, it might become a hint... anyway, try to talk it over"

"Yeah, it's precious information. I would like to ask but...it doesn't matter if it is already covered by the file our information department has compiled. Tell us what you know"

Chief Yazawa urges Nei-san.

"Y-Yeah. You see..."

Nei-san begins to talk

"...Come here"

Margo-san calls me taking that as a chance.

"...What is it?"

Margo-san whispers to me at the corner of the room.

"Don't ever leave Nei...make sure Nei stays as Nei"

...Nei-san as Nei-san?

"Don't let her go back from Natou Nei to Najima Yasuko"

Margo-san speaks to me with serious eyes.

"The bright personality of Nei right now is made up. After her twin brother, Kei has died...Minaho, Kyouko and, Nei herself took a lot of time to make a [different personality] that's different from her original personality. It is to cover Nei's sadness, hatred, and self-destructive impulses... "

"...Self destructive impulses?"

"Nei...no, Yazuko...thinks that Kei's death is her own fault. She thinks that she should die on the same gruesome death as Kei"

...Nei-san

"Yasuko is a mentally weak girl. From the day her parents were killed, kidnapped by Viola...she's been living in fear all this time"

Kidnapped...lived her days with murder criminals.

"Furthermore...Viola's aim was the twin brother so Yasuko was left as a worthless woman"

Viola's a homo so he kidnapped Kei-san as a sex pet.

Nei-san...a woman has no worth for Viola.

Rather, Kei-san succumbed to Viola's rule in order to guarantee Nei-san's life. That's what's gnawing to Nei-san's heart.

"Though it's a made up personality...a personality is a personality I like Nei. Aren't you the same?"

Margo-san asks me.

"Yes...I also like Nei-san"

I want Nei-san to smile like always.

Last night, when Nei-san was talking about her past in America...she reverted to Yasuko.

I don't want to see that weak and crying Nei-san anymore.

"As long as you're by her side...Nei can stay as Nei"

...Margo-san?

"Nei...is looking for potential partner she can depend on. Furthermore...it has to be a[brother]"

Nei-san wants a[brother]

"You've already become a huge presence in Nei...furthermore, Nei also acknowledges that you're a different[brother]from Kei Therefore, as long as she feels you as her[brother]...Nei can remain as Nei. Yasuko won't come back"

Margo-san looks strongly at me.

"Understood...I'll never leave Nei-san's side"

I promised.

"Thanks...also"

Margo-san said.

"It's psychologically possible but... Nei might try to become Kei in front of Mr. Viola"

...Kei-san?

"Because they're twins...Nei has always felt her own brother in the mirror"

Yeah...Nei-san feels her face is the shadow of Kei-san's image.

"Coming on a male pants suit today as well...acting like Kei in the broadcast earlier...I think her fear of viola and the feeling of wanting to clear up her regret with Kei are mixing up"

I think so too

By acting as Kei-san...she can feel Kei-san close to her and she can overcome her fear of Viola.

"If Nei-san becomes a full swing Kei-san...what should I do?"

Margo-san thinks for a while...

"...It's better than her returning to Yasuko's personality. Yasuko's heart is too delicate and weak...when she confronts Viola then her heart would break. If she can keep her mind by becoming Kei...then it's better to leave her like that"

Therefore...Margo-san let Nei-san act as Kei-san during the broadcast

"But...Nei is Nei. She's not Kei. Nei is a woman...!"

...That's right.

Nei-san's mind and body are of a woman.

She can't become a man

"Sorry but...I want you to stay by her side and watch out for her"

Margo-san tells me.

"I have to concentrate on fighting from now on. If not, everyone won't be able to survive...!"

Margo-san's also desperate.

"Leave Nei-san to me. I'll do my best"

"Yeah...thanks"

Margo-san looks warmly at Nei-san who's talking to chief Yazawa.

"That girl's my precious[little sister]...!"



"Umu...the information is roughly the same as the reports. Is Romeo Motague the only one with military experience? But, Giuliano Jenka has a better skill at commanding subordinates?"

"...He's also brutal"

Nei-san answers Chief Yazawa's question

"But...I heard that Cesario Viola's hobby is disguising, that even his family won't know him"

"Yeah...only Lorenzaccio Bandini and his dead sister knows the real Viola"

"You don't know as well?"

Chief Yazawa stares at Nei-san

"If I hear him speak on the same room, then I might find it out. But, it has been years already..."

Nei-san might not discover him at the moment.

"Then how do they work? If nobody knows who Viola is then there's a lot of trouble in the behaviors right/"

"Well...Lorenzaccio Bandini is the person that speaks and receives instruction from Viola..."

"Hmm...Then, Lorenzaccio Bandini can control who is Viola"

...Ah

Chief Yazawa's surprised from that.

"Could it be that they put some Viola imposters in the troop...Lorenzaccio Bandini who's pretending to be ordered by Viola is actually the one commanding the whole troops?"

There's that possibility too.

"But, I know Bandini and he's not an intelligent man. He's just vulgar, crude, and flashy...though he's the manager of Viola, I think he's not a person who can command a combat unit..."

Nei-san answers.

"Tsk...we won't know it from there then., Just thinking about it won't give results. Should I tell Kudou to send a unit to recon?"

Chief Yazawa said.

"When it comes to actual combat...the command system is made clear. More than anything...I want to shave off a number from those 30 people"

But...that's Cesario Viola's main team.

Won't Kudou-papa be in danger is he goes directly like usual?

"It's difficult to attack from the upper floor. Should I deploy two troops on the route? If we don't crush them first, we won't bump into Viola's corps"

The route from the first floor to the upper floor is divided into several routes by closing fire doors and shutters.

Viola's main troops are now in seventh floor.

On that route...there's another team on the 11th and 15th floors.

In order to attack from upstairs, you have to defeat the two groups that are ahead.

"Can we not go from below?"

Kouzuki Kenshi asks.

"...From below?"

"Yes. From the first floor...if I recall, the ordinary uniformed guards should've evacuated outside the hotel. We can recall them and send them from below. The enemy would never think that they would be attacked from behind..."

"That's an interesting idea but...it's impossible for the uniformed men to compete with Viola"

Chief Yazawa said.

"Can you do something with the numbers? If we rush in around 200 people... then even those American group can't respond"

"Perish the thought...are you going to cover Kouzuki security service with death threats?"

"If we want to take down the[enemy]then we need to sacrifice that much. I believe that all the employees of Kouzuki security service have the resolve to die at their duty..."

Oh...this guy's a son of the rich.

That kind of reason won't go through

"I'm not a demon who would throw people knowing they would die"

Chief Yazawa looks at Kouzuki Kenshi with eyes of scorn...then said

"That's right...should we try using that?"

Suddenly, he came up with something?...Chief Yazawa takes out his phone

"Speaking of which, there were talented people who are good for reconnaissance..."

...Is that?

Who...?!

Chapter 305 The man with the scent of Showa

"...Yes, hello, it's me. Are you still close by?"

Chief Yazawa's calling someone...

"I don't care about being betrayed. I know how people like you move at those times so that's fine"

Chief Yazawa took a breath then goes to the main subject.

"Could you come back for a bit?...Yes, it's a job request. The pay would be twice than usual. When you withdrew from the hotel, your contract with those guys are done, isn't it? Then earn a bit more"

A person who had withdrawn from the hotel...

"...The job specifics is reconnaissance. The troop that seems to be the main enemy group...is around 30 people, you jump in and reduce them to around 20. If you defeat the leaders then you'll also have some bonus. That's all. You don't have to annihilate them""

After a while.

"Okay, then I'll triple the pay. What about that?...Okay, that's a deal. Hah, I thought that you would give me a pleasant reply. Contact me when you arrive at the first floor lobby of the hotel. I'll be securing you a direct route..."

Chief Yazawa grinned.

"Thanks...Dai Grepher!"

...Dai Grepher?

It's Different dimension warrior Dai Grepher!

When he ended the call, chief Yazawa looked at us and said.

"Now then, I'll invite you guys to my secret base"

...Secret base

"Come with me"

Chief Yazawa heads out of the conference room.
Huh...Director Yamaoka's still depressed.

"What are you doing? Yamaoka...?"
"...Yazawa-san"

Director Yamaoka looks up at chief powerlessly
"I'm no good..."
"Who cares...it's just annoying if you're going to be depressed right there. Do you get that?"
"...Sorry"
"You're still on duty. Who cares whatever it is, do what you can. Move your body"
"But...I no longer have my men in this hotel"

Chief Yazawa looks at the two giant guards at the entrance and Kudou-mama
"...Don't you still have three people left?"
"We can't do nothing with three people"

Chief Yazawa leaks a sigh.
"Even though there's going to be a free guard who's going to plunge into the enemy main force and yet...are you an idiot?"
"I don't know what I should do right now..."

Director Yamaoka's hanging his head.
"I see. Then I'll take the people you have with you"

Chief Yazawa looks at the two giants.
"You two go to the 25th floor with my men...you know the faces of the elites don't you? Take Shindo's guidance. Secure the people from Shirasaka house. Use the route 4B. Get it?"
"...Yes"
"Then hurry up"
"...Roger!"

The two giants look down on director Yamaoka and exit in small steps
"Kudou Etsu-chan, come with me. I'll have you work at the HQ"

But...Kudou-mama

"Chief...I"

"What? Worried about Yamaoka?"

"...Yes"

Kudou-mama squats down and pats Director Yamaoka's shoulders.

"Are you abandoning your work too?"

"I can't leave him alone"

"...Etsuko"

"I'll stay by your side...okay?"

Yamaoka embraces Kudou-mama and cries

"I...I...Etsuko...!"

"I know...I know that you're doing your best. I'm the only one who knows...!"

Yamaoka's comforted by Kudou-mama

"Kudou, and now him...why are you always being attracted by useless guys?"

Chief Yazawa says in a tired tone.

"That guy...Kudou no longer need me. But, this person...he's useless without me..."

Kudou-mama says and embraces Yamaoka...

"Is that really the case?"

Chief Yazawa said unsympathetically.

"Don't you think that your attitude is what makes men more and more useless?"

"...That's not true"

"I wonder? He actually doesn't need anyone. If you're a man then you make mistakes at work. There are times when you fail, have bad luck, or the turn of tides are just not good. But, a man who can't stand up by himself at that time isn't a man"

"I want to be by his side when he's in a harsh situation!"

Kudou-mama looks up at Chief Yazawa.

"Isn't that just your selfish desire? Doing that, you spoil a man again...and won't he rot? Just like with Kudou"

"...Don't speak about him!"

"No I will. When he became independent from you, that was Kudou's first time becoming a full fledged man. Before...he was capable, but he's naive, and a man who does uneven work"

"...That's not true. He's still useless even now"

"It's different now. When I cancelled your duo...Kudou changed to be able to do anything alone. He got better"

Chief Yazawa said

"The two you...weren't good at working together as a duo. It was the worst. Pampering each other...there's no strictness at work. You do rough and coarse work. Therefore, I had you two separate"

Kudou-papa and Kudou-mama had been childhood friends.
Therefore...when they were novices, they are a duo as a couple.
And Chief Yazawa separated them?

"It's wrong...I'm the one who gave up on him. If I keep going with him...I will never have happiness"

But, Kudou-mama doesn't admit it. She insists that it's her will to leave Kudou-papa

"Who cares about that. Anyway, your habit of pampering men is no good. Whoever it is, men will only go rot with you"

"That's for us to decide. I don't need to be scolded by Chief Yazawa!"

"It is affecting Yamaoka's work...so I'll have to scold you hard"

The room becomes quiet.

"Ever since you started going out with Yamaoka...Yamaoka's no longer working for me or[Kakka] He's not looking at his subordinates. He's always been looking at you. That's why he became like this!"

"That's not true! We are doing our best!"

"Your hard work is for others to judge! Don't evaluate yourself!"

Ah...this won't end.

It's just a waste of time.

Kudou-mama doesn't feel like listening to others at all

...But

"Uhm...Kudou-san. I don't know about you...I don't think this is something I should say, but..."

But still...I've got to say this...

"Don't go justifying your own cheating calmly in front of your daughter. Do you understand how Michi feels when she's shown her parent's embarrassment?"

Kudou-mama looks at Michi in surprise.

Michi...

"...Thank you for the concern. But, I'm fine"

Michi looks at her mother coldly

"I don't think of her as my mother anymore"

"Michi! What are you saying to your parent!"

Kudou-mama throws her anger at Michi

"I don't recognize people I don't respect as my parent"

"...Even though you're just a brat!"

The enraged Kudou-mama pulls Michi and tries to slap her.

Michi...didn't try avoiding her mother's slap.

It seems she's okay being beaten by her mother.

...But

...Gatsun!!!

The cane sank on the concrete floor in front of her feet...Kudou-mama stopped moving!

Reika glares at Kudou-mama

"...I won't allow any further rudeness"

"What's with you...don't interfere with family business!"

Kudou-mama screams...Reika!

"What's the family in there!!!"

Reika's eyes glare straight at Kudou-mama.

"Don't use...[woman]and[mother]at your own convenience!"

Seki-san breaks in between the two people

"Fujimiya-san, calm down. Kudou-san too"

Then, Seki-san looks at Director Yamaoka

"Yamaoka-san...listen. You're obsessed with this woman...you're possessed by her"

"...Possessed?"

"Yes. It's the most disgusting way of living for a man. I despise you"

Seki-san's words are cold.

"Don't you think it's miserable for a man and woman of this age?"

...Then

"Fufufufu, ahahahaha"

Margo-san laughs.

"...Margo-san?"

"You're all wrong. You shouldn't get mad at adults with unsightly appearances like this. Laugh at them You should just laugh to ridicule them...that's what they taught me!"

"Yeah, you're right. If Kyouko-san was here she'd definitely say that!"

Nei-san laughs as well

"Wahahaha, so idiotic. It's so shameful! Hey, Yo-chan laugh too!"

...I

"Please laugh...I think I should laugh too"

Michi distorts her lips, her eyes are about to cry...she's forcing herself to laugh

"This is...this person is not my mother. I'll laugh...I will laugh...I have to laugh"

...Michi

I embrace Michi

"...Master"

"Chief, leave them alone. It's useless to talk to these people"

Seki-san said

"Umu, true"

Chief Yazawa looks at Director Yamaoka.

"...You can't go down right now and escape. Use the evacuation room on 32nd floor. The route is 8A. Keep hiding there until the enemy's eliminated"

The...he declares

"From today's date...you are both fired. You've done violation and abandonment of orders. This is a disciplinary discharge...you've got to give up"

Director Yamaoka and Kudou-mama didn't even try looking at Chief Yazawa.

"Sorry but...as you were employed by Kouzuki Security service before, it'll be hard for you to find jobs. You can't be recommended to the other companies. Therefore, disciplinary measures. Please think that you won't be put into work of guarding people"



Leaving director Yamaoka and Kudou-mama behind the conference room...
We walk into the hotel corridor.

The members from the[emergency evacuation room]along with Chief Yazawa and Kouzuki Kenshi, move around in large group.

"It's this room"

Chief Yazawa stopped in front of a door.

"This is the primary defense line operations command room...
the[Headquarters]"

"Was there a command room on this floor?"

Margo-san asks...Chief Yazawa

"No no...this whole room is an elevator room so you can move freely up and down in between 20th and 25th floor"

In short, if the enemy invades on the 20th floor, you can move to the room on

the upper floor?

"Well, come in"

Entering the room...there's about 10 people in a room of about 20 tatami mats.

The walls are covered with a lot of monitors.

It seems that the footage of the surveillance cameras on each floor are being analyzed in this room.

"What's the situation?"

Chief asks a lady in glasses.

Wait...isn't it Norma-san, Kudou-papa's subordinate

Ah, Tony-san's here too.

Speaking of which, these two were transferred from the information department of Kouzuki security service.

Then that means, most of the people in this room are from information department.

"Yes, the preceding troops are stopped at the 16th floor"

"The one that seems to be Viola's main force?"

"They're rapidly rising. They're on the 9th floor right now"

"Dai Grepher would do a recon...build him a route"

Chief looks at us.

"Drop the fire doors and shutters so they can't move in the hotel freely. Stop all of the elevators. Make all the controls possible only in this room"

"...Dai Grepher checked the surveillance camera at the entrance of the first floor"

"...He's here. Where do you think is the best way to make the shortest contact with Viola?"

"In that case, let's guide the enemy before the elevator hall on the 11th floor"

Norma-san said

"Then start up the elevator. Raise Dai Grepher-san upstairs from the first floor"

...No

Isn't that dangerous to go to the enemy using an elevator?

"Okay, let's go with that...I'll talk with Dai Grepher"

Chief Yazawa takes out his phone...



The surveillance cameras show that Viola's troops are in the 11th floor.
Yeah, as expected, they're in order unlike the other units.

There's no doubt that this is a unit under someone with a knowledge on military.

Passing through the corridors where the fire doors are closed...a rank of around 30 people arrived at a large elevator hall.

"..... ! "

One of the men in black combat suit points at the elevator.
Out of the three elevators where all power should be turned off...
The one in the middle has its light turned on

...Wiiinwiiinwiiin

The hidden microphone picks up the sound of the wire pulling up the elevator
...Right.

The elevator's active...and it's rising up from the first floor...

The men in black combat clothes look at their commander...the one with the red armband, Giuliano Jenka.

Giuliano instruct the men with his hands.

The men set up their guns and spread out in front of the elevator.

Meanwhile...the elevators raise towards their floor.

...Then.

...Ding!

The elevator door opens along with the sound.
The men in black combat clothes gaze inside...!
The one inside...!

"...What?!"

That man is...

A man's formal Japanese clothing made of gold and silver.

The head has a peculiar wig...

His face is whitewashed.

Could this be...?

Ma*ken Sanba...???

[...Yeieeeeii! Wao! Yeieeee! Wao!]

The old man in white painted face...suddenly speaks loudly...

[...Long ago, when I was [Sunset Nyan nyan]...my lil brother was [Sunset Ron-chan]]

W-What is he talking about?

[My father was[Sunset Banchou]and my mother was [Sunset dandan]on the Tokyo Yanaka Ginza shopping area. Do you get it...you don't get it I guess...
Yeieeee! Wao! Yeieei! Wao!!]

...Uhm

What's that...what's his aim?

[Hey hey...don't make that kind of face. Brother. World is friend, everyone's a brother. Beware of the doors and fire. An old man's saying...[Always burning in rosy fashion, this heart throbs. From bud to flower. I am Machiko. Yei, Yay]He said...! Isn't Machiko-sensei good at this? [The teacher for 25 years in his life...!]]That's not Machiko-sensei, it's Machida-sensei...!!!!...Hey! Someone retort!...Back me up! Back me up! Gatsu Koku Matsu! Shoryuken! Shouryuken! Nisshouken!...Konchi Kushou! Goraaaa!!!]

I don't get it anymore...!

But...all the enemies are Americans though...

What are you speaking in Japanese then?

Or rather, even though it's Japanese, I don't understand the meaning...

"...Now then, let's go"

Then, the old man takes out a fan from his pocket then opens it...
And he slides out from inside the elevator...

[For the second time, I renew the design of both the costume and make up!

I'm the different dimension warrior Dai Grepher, I come running when I hear that there's a festival! Ah, if you call me then I will come right away...
Subizubaa! Papapapapan!]

Then he jumped into the men armed with guns...!

[Now then, you guys are no human...I'll slash you up...!!!!]

Old man Dai Grepher...how do you take them down without a sword?

Chapter 306. Dai Grepher dances!

"...Good. He just jumped into the enemy suddenly"

Margo-san mutters as she look at Different dimension warrior Dai Grepher Oji-sama in the screen.

"Even though when he got off the elevator, he's facing with enemies with a gun upfront..."

While making an incomprehensible performance...he entered the circle of the enemy

"But...isn't he surrounded by enemies now?"

I think.

There's men in black clothes surrounding old man Dai Grepher in 360 degrees...

"Nah, his method is entering the enemy's circle and force a fistfight. He's the different dimension warrior after all"

Chief Yazawa said

"It's dangerous if they take distance and shoot...on the other hand, if you're surrounded by that distance...the enemy won't be able to use their guns"

I see, they can't carelessly shoot when there's the possibility of firing at a friend.

[HEY !SAM !]

The man with a red armband...Giuliano Jenka calls one huge fighter. That fighter pulls out a combat knife...and goes forward with his waist lowered. Is he a master of knives?...He must be a good fighter. The guy that's called Sam said something to old man Dai Grepher in English... Perhaps, a provocation...a small laughter comes out from the combatants of the enemy who had been silent this whole time

"Are you talking about Kabuki Star? Are you filming a samurai Movie?...That's what he said"

Michi said.

"Michi...do you understand English?"

"Yes, I learned english as a compulsory subject in Kindergarten"

Michi answers me like it's obvious

Wasn't she taking the same Ojou-sama school as Misuzu?

Those kind of school has the students with a lot of opportunities to go abroad...
so I think they take care more about practical English than lessons for exam.

"Those people laugh so loud even though you can't say it's a big deal"

Kouzuki Kenshi says in an amazed tone.

"They're Americans, their boiling point when it comes to laughing is low"

Nei-san answered

"Those guys are underestimating Dai Grepher because he's alone"

Chief Yazawa analyzed.

Sam swings his knife to threaten.

The men in black combat clothes behind comes after Dai Grepher one after another.

In the disturbing air...

Dai Grepher opened the fan in his hand...slowly fanning, he answered.

[...Aikyan, notto, supiku, ingurishi!!!]

...Ingurishi

[Redisu ando Jentoruman! ando, Otou-suan! Ookaasaan!!...I am Strong!
Stronger than you!!]

Dai Grepher turns the fan towards Sam

[Try me...!]

Sam's mouth smiles

...At that moment

Four combatants among the enemy instead of Sam holds their knife and attack Dai Grepher!!!

[Haaa, choina, choinatto...!]

Old man Dai Grepher on his flashy kimono rotates around...and strikes the fan into the necks of the combatants!

[...Gueeee!!]

The man hit raises a strange voice and falls down

[One...!!!]

Old man Dai Grepher spreads the fan and mutters.

[...There's people stronger than me]

W-What?

"That's an iron fan isn't it?"

Michi admires.

"Iron fan?"

"A fan made of iron. It's been used as a weapon since ancient times...it's been held so lightly, and he's too flashy that they didn't realize that it's made of iron"

"That's not just iron"

Chief Yazawa tells Michi

"He's iron fan is made of special alloy. It's harder than iron and it doesn't distort from impact. That's heavier than iron you see...!"

Old man Dai Grepher swings around that thing.

Ah, the iron fan takes down another guy...!

[Twoooo...! Leave the homeland afterwards...!]

Old man Dai Grepher takes down two men from both sides at the same time...!

Avoiding the knife of one person, taking down another one with his iron fan!!!

[Third...Miracle! Mikurunrun!!!]

He then swings the iron fan into the fourth person's throat!!

[Fourrrr!...There's a bald on the streets...!]

At the same time the fourth person collapses...!

Sam rushes to old man Dai Grepher with fierce eyes!

[...Ha! Ha! Ha! Ha! Haaaaa!!!!]

Sam swings out his knife in small ways like he's doing a boxing rush...

[Wahaha...mudamudamudamudamudamudamudamudaaaaa!!!!]

Old man Dai Grepher flutters, avoiding all of that.

[There you go!]

The iron fan strikes Sam's hand that's holding the knife!

The knife falls from the hand that lost its grip and sticks to the floor.

Sam tries to take out a pistol using the other hand...!

His forehead was struck by the iron fan at the next moment...

[Ugaaaaaaaaa...!!]

Sam falls down with his head bleeding.

[Five!!! Someday...the chief's daughter...!!!!]

Stepping forward with his iron fan at hand...old man Dai Grepher in his wafuku has saidl.

"Chief Yazawa...do you have a daughter?"

Seki-san asks, chief Yazawa shows a dark face...

"Yeah. She's 9 by this year"

Ah...old man Dai Grepher

It's true that he's a lolicon...

"No, but he's strong...I thought that he was amazing during the lobby fight but isn't it much different right now?"

I try to change the topic anyway

"He was fighting with Banba-chan of Banbarubie at that time"

Chief Yazawa said in a dark tone.

"That guy is into Banba-chan. That's why during the fight in the lobby...he was fighting only with Banba-chan wasn't he?"

Speaking of which, he was

Somehow, they look like they were having fun.

"At that time, he just purposely turned into the enemy because all he wanted was to fight with Banba-chan. That's why I thought that he would turn to our side if I negotiated with him"

"But, Banba-san is over 20 years old...if he likes Banba-san then I don't think that Dai Grepher-san is a lolicon, is he...?"

Seki-san asks, Chief Yazawa...

"Quoting from him...Banba-chan has a loli face and just looking at it is enough as a[legal loli] It seems he's not interested in Banba-chan's body He did say that it's his dream to make Banba-chan wear a toddler smock just to erase her body line, and make her wear a yellow school cap..."

Oh...a pervert.

"Besides, he's more into Kudou's daughter than Banba-chan"

...What, Michi?

True, Michi's a beauty and has a body shape that pedophiles would like, but...

"But, that guy's saying...[Yes Lolita! No Touch!][A true lolicon won't touch a genuine lolita]so he's putting up with Banba-chan"

Chief Yazawa said.

"It would be good if that guy dies with those enemies..."

Seki-san mutters.

"I would kill if I could...I always thought of that"

Michi also says in pain.

But, Dai Grepher has the skill...

Michi have even used her secret technique and all she could do is escape from his evil glance.

"He definitely has the power but I'll definitely not invite him to Kouzuki security service. That's what I've decided"

Chief Yazawa's eyes looks at the screen as if he's looking at a poisonous pest. Meanwhile...old man Dai Grepher takes down one enemy after another...

[...Ojama, Jama, Jamaaa! Ojamangaa!!]

As usual...he's shouting incomprehensible things...

"Can he shut up and fight?"

Reika frowns.

"I don't know why but he's like that during combat... When Banba-chan or girls he favors are watching, he's assuming that he's an[Oji-sama], he won't change that far but...his concentration in combat is low. Right now, Banba-chan is in the fight...and he thinks that I'm the only one watching his fight..."

Oh...old man Dai Grepher doesn't think that such a large group is watching is fight.

He thinks that only Chief Yazawa is watching so he does what he wants to do.

"Yeah...that's ten of them"

Dai Grepher's iron fan strikes another enemy.

"The three of the leaders didn't come out in front...they're guarded by the surrounding combatants"

Seki-san said.

I see, the red, blue, and silver armbands...Giuliano Jenka, Romeo Motague, Lorenzaccio Bandini are enclosed by enemy soldiers.

"It's about time..."

Chief Yazawa decides.

"...Open the line"

"Yes"

Norma-san operates the mouse.

Meanwhile, Tony-san hands the microphone to Chief Yazawa.

"...I connected it to the line on the floor's elevator"

Chief tanizawa...

"...That's enough, Dai Grepher. You've got ten seconds. The withdrawal route is C1...!"

The announcer sounds in the elevator hall where old man Dai Grepher is fighting.

Old man Dai Grepher stopped fighting...

He stares at the enemy combatants surrounding himself.

...Then

[...W-E-L-L T-H-E-N! It's about time I go! Go-Ki-GEEn, uruwashuuuuu!!!!]

He dances a mysterious song.

"Do it now!"

Chief Yazawa instructs and Norma-san pushes the switch

...Then

...Shukon!!

...Shushukon!

Smoke screens are discharged from the ceiling of the elevator hall.

[Well then...arrivederci!]

Old man Dai Grepher jumps into the open elevator.

Giuliano Jenka orders his men to shoot but...

The elevators closed quickly...

...Basu!

...Basubasu!

Some men shot at the elevator door but...

"...It's useless. This hotel is thorough when it comes to counter-terrorism measures. The elevator's are bullet and explosion proof"

Chief Yazawa said as he look at the screen.

"While at it, splash them with water from the sprinkler"

"...Roger"

As Norma-san's hand moves...the sprinkler in the elevator hall starts spraying. The group of enemy got wet with water.

"Take a careful look...is there no one from those Dai Grepher took out pretending to be dead?"

Yeah...even if you take heavy sprinkling from the ceiling...

The fainted men doesn't even twitch

"With this...the enemy troops are reduced to 20"

Chief said



"Now then...should we examine the results of Dai Grepher's recon?"

The group of men in black combat clothes are getting soaked and withdrawing from the elevator hall.

But still...they're aiming for the upper floor

"Did you notice something?"

Chief asks...Reika speaks.

"As expected...all of the instructions to the men were all made by Giuliano Jenka"

"But, Giuliano Jenka occasionally looks at Lorenzaccio Bandini"

Seki-san says

"Yeah, there were scenes where it looks like Lorenzaccio Bandini is the one instructing Giuliano Jenka. The other one...Romeo Montague seems to be caring about Lorenzaccio Bandini's behavior"

Margo-san said.

Amazing...everyone's observing those things while watching the fight on the screen.

"Therefore...I think the conductor of the group is still Lorenzaccio Bandini"

Margo-san concludes.

"But...where's Cesario Viola?"

I asked.

Is Cesario Viola not in the group?

"Cesario Viola should be on the right back corner!"

Nei-san says

"Could you replay the screen?"

"Yes"

Nei-san said...Norma-san projects the battle on the monitor.

"Take out those taken from bird's eye view...!"

"This?"

A surveillance camera looking down from the ceiling.

"Here...look. There's three people protecting this one person. Those three people haven't been moving all this time, Giuliano's instructions aren't working either..."

True, only those four have been on the same position all the time.

"Then...the one guarded is Cesario Viola?"

I asked, Nei-san...

"Maybe...because, he's the only one who reacted!"

...Reacted?

"Dai Grepher-san's boring talk about his parents"

...What?

"He didn't go as far as laughing but he was definitely reacting!"

Nei-san...what do you mean?

"...Cesario Viola can understand Japanese!"

...Oh right.

Viola's taken by his parents who were working from US army to spend his childhood in Japan.

Therefore, he can speak Japanese.

"Among those enemies...the person who can understand Japanese, and even react to an old Television joke is only Viola...!"

...I-I see.

"C-Could it be that Viola kept saying all those ridiculous things to bring out Viola?"

If so...then what a deep strategy!

"Nah...I don't think so"

Chief Yazawa said harshly

"That's just his hobby"

...Hobby

"Really...even though he's so skilled. What a disappointing personality"

Chief leaks a sigh.

"Chief...Dai Grepher-san has arrived on the first floor"

Norma-san reports.

"It seems he wants to communicate with chief..."

"Connect him...ah, just audio. Don't show the image here to him"

"...Okay"

On the screen...old man Dai Grepher on the first floor is shown.

"How did it go? Have you decided on my on-stage...?!"

...Yeah

He's really disappointing.

Chapter 307. Dark Clouds

"...Yeah. Take a little rest. I might make you work on the last one. Of course... I'll pay a separate reward, and there's 102k yen hourly rate during breaks...!"

Chief Yazawa communicates with old man Dai Grepher.

"Therefore...no more betraying"

I see...in his case.

There's a possibility of him still sticking on Cesario Viola's side in this situation... Therefore, we have to keep him on our side until the fight is over.

[Very well. I'll accept your terms]

Old man Dai Grepher consented readily.

"Then...the waiting room for guards on the west side of the hotel should be safe. Use that. There's a shower and you can eat and drink anything from the fridge"

[I don't need a break, I don't mind if you send me as Banba-chan's follow-up]

Old man Dai Grepher proposes, but...

"The other two of Banbarubie 3 are still alive and well...you sure about that?"
[...Tell me when Barbie and Ruby drops out. I'll be coming right away]

Sure enough...old man Dai Grepher isn't in good terms with the other ladies of Banbarubie.

"That's impossible...those ladies are veterans. They won't be retiring earlier than Banba-chan"

[...You're right.. That's what I think too]

"Take a rest for the time being...I'll forward the progress of the battle in the waiting room on the first floor"

[...I hear and obey!]

Old man Dai Grepher in his wafuku replies like a samurai then switched off the line.

"...Dai Grepher, he's strong but...anyway...he's too perverted that we can't have him as an ally at all. He makes strange moves even if he's on our side. That's why I can only make him work alone"

Chief Yazawa speaks disappointedly.

"When he's fighting an enemy...it's okay to shoot him from behind. Just shoot him along with the enemies...!"

Seki-san speaks her disgust to old man Dai Grepher.

"There was an organization that did it before but...even when they were using ten machine guns, Dai Grepher was okay for some reason...and the organization that betrayed him seems to be annihilated"

As expected of a different dimension warrior

"He can also read[Qi] Once he feels blood thirst, he can take initiative and react..."

Michi said.

I see...he's reading their[Qi]so he can move on a different dimension from those unexpected attacks from enemies.

"Then that means...Dai Grepher-san's skills are close to Kudou style?"

When I asked...Michi shows a displeased face...

"It's not rare for martial arts to read the enemy[Qi]during fights. Kudou style is characterized by erasing one's own[Qi]and beating down the[Qi]of others, but...Dai Grepher-sama's technique is establishing a bumping[Qi]with one another"

Bumping[Qi]?

"That person's[Qi]is...anyway, very uncomfortable and disgusting. Therefore, the other party will try to avoid him without being conscious of it"

It's too much of a[disgusting existence]...that their body unconsciously avoid him?

"The essence of his skill is to get into the bosom of the opponent at the speed where the gap between the consciousness and unconscious is made. I think that

it's a feat but...there's no other warrior that would make the other party feel so uncomfortable as him"

Yeah...I can understand Michi's feelings.

It's true that it feels unpleasant to have old man Dai Grepher approach you.

"The only one who can endure fighting with him is mostly Banba-chan"

Chief Yazawa said

"Right...that girl's head is a bit of a fairy tale"

Seki-san sighs.

"She's too innocent she doesn't doubt any people... If Barbie-san and Ruby-san aren't looking after her...I'm sure that she'd be swindled by the bad guys already. Just recently, in front of Akihabara station...it seems that she bought some incomprehensible high priced printmaker"

"Really?"

"Well...It seems that the gallery which sold it to Banba-san was crushed by Barbie-san and Ruby-san's assault. They're vacant right now"

Wow...that's trouble.

Ah, rather than that...

"By the way...Michi"

"Yes, Master?"

"Michi can read[Qi]right?...Then could you tell the state of Cesario Viola's command unit earlier?"

The command line of Viola's unit is a mystery.

The leader of the men are managed by Giuliano Jenka.

Then Giuliano receives instructions from Romeo Motague...Lorenzaccio Bandini is said to be Viola's manager.

Then...it's confirmed that Cesario Viola himself is in the unit.

And yet...

Cesario Viola, the boss of all...doesn't show any indication of instructing Lorenzaccio Bandini at all

What does that mean?

From what we see...Lorenzaccio Bandini is the top of the unit...

Cesario Viola is following a few escorts and doesn't seem to be following the command.

"Actually, Viola's instructing Lorenzaccio Bandini in some way or something? Can you not read that with the[Qi]?"

I ask Michi...

"Sadly...I can't read[Qi]through screens. I won't be able to judge it unless it's on the same space..."

...I see

So Michi's[Qi]reading has that kind of weakness?

"Either way...we've got to investigate that problem...it's a matter of Cesario Viola and the foundation of his organization"

Margo-san says

"At first...they sent out a fake Lorenzaccio Bandini ahead, making us think that Bandini isn't a big shot in the organization. But this time, he's acting as if he's a bigger boss than Viola. Including the existence of the female[white Viola]... there's still many mysteries in their organization"

"...We can just take them all down"

Reika said.

"If we annihilate them all then we can ask questions later"

"You can't go that way...Reika-oneesan"

Margo-san smiles at Reika.

"The center of the organization changes in the situation. If[the situation you see now]is correct, and we take down Lorenzaccio Bandini and Giuliano Jenka... the chain of command will be lost. It would be easy to reap the men who lost their commander and just became a crowd. But, if...[the situation seen now]is a fake..."

Everyone's eyes concentrate on Margo-san.

"What if you wanted to focus all of our attacks on Lorenzaccio Bandini and Giuliano Jenka?"

...Right.

Why is the boss, Cesario Viola not taking the command?...The reason's unknown

"We don't want to take too much risk. If possible, we want to detain them without taking so much damage here. Then...we should think of the process on how to destroy the enemy troop in a reasonable way. Should we take down Cesario Viola first or Lorenzaccio Bandini?...This is a huge problem"

Yeah...even if we forcibly defeat Lorenzaccio Bandini first...
Then Cesario Viola becomes the leader and the troops function normally, then it's meaningless to force ourselves.
In contrary...if we try to take down Cesario Viola first then the solid command line will be able to stop our attack.,

"But, the enemy's main troops were reduced by Dai Grepher-san to 20 people. If you make an all out attack on this number..."

Reika tries to force a push
...But

"The enemy unit stopped at 14th floor"

Norma-san shows the image of the surveillance camera on the monitor

"The two units are retreating on the same route It seems that they're aiming to group up at 14th floor"

That's bad.

"How many people are there in the units?"

Chief Yazawa asks Norma-san.

"The first team engaged with the team under Kudou-san on each floor so they're reduced from 30 to 15 people. The unit behind are still intact with 30 people"

If the two preceding units join up...Viola's main troops would be $15+30+20=65$ people

"The troops that are invading another routes all began ascending to the lower floor." It looks like they intend to withdraw on the first floor and join with the

main troop"

The hotel is separated by fire walls and shutters...it's not possible to go up to the upper floors unless you go up in several different routes.

Therefore, Viola and others divided the troops and started invading the separate routes.

Kudou-papa and others don't know which one of the divided troops was Cesario Viola's main troops so they intercept all invading units on each floor, collecting information bit by bit while scooping out the number of enemy soldiers.

But...Now with Nei-san's announcement, and old man Dai Grepher's reconnaissance, Viola's main unit comes out.

Then, if we take down the remaining 20 people in Viola's main force, this fight will be over.

Viola's feeling threatened by that so he hurriedly decided to regroup with the troops

"...Kudou, can you hear me?"

Chief Yazawa heads to the radio.

It's the same type on the thing we brought from the underground emergency evacuation room.

It has less risk of being eavesdropped because we're using it inside the hotel.

[We're checking the situation here]

Kudou-papa's voice come out of the speaker.

"Don't let the enemies group up...take down the enemy units withdrawing!"

[...Roger! We'll make those who are close attack in sequence!]

Chief Yazawa's expression is steep

"...I hope the attack team is sent in time"

Eh...what does that mean?

"Since it was a system to ambush and intercept on each floor...it's too hard to chase a retreating enemy"

Seki-san explained to me with a strange face...

"Even now, the hotel is a maze, it's difficult to move from the point of

interception"

"...How about opening the fire doors and letting the interception team head straight to the enemy?"

Kouzuki Kenshi says grinning

"If we open up the fire doors to make the shortest distance...do you think we can move our unit while controlling the movement of the enemy"

"...If it's Kouzuki security service's top elites then they could use that move"

Seki-san smiles wryly...

"We're familiar with the internal structure of the hotel...since we have several patterns of the labyrinth state in our heads...even if they release some of the fire doors...we can manage to do something. But...Kudou-san's teams won't"

When an emergency happens...the maze inside the hotel is supposed to be the a top secret among Kouzuki security service.

Seki-san knows to some extent where to change the maze, to open, to go...

Kudou-papa's subordinates...the free guards don't know.

"But...everyone has an electronic device such as phones, right? If you show them the route..."

Kouzuki Kenshi says further...

"What would you do if that map you presented is known by the enemy?"

Seki-san answers with a disgusted tone.

Right...if the free guards are to be knocked down by enemies and their electronic device shows the maze diagram on each floor is passed to the enemy.

"Anyway...it's better for us to beat only the 15 people troops that's ahead. The second 30 people team...I think we have to give up on them"

Margo-san said while watching the enemy troops appearing on the large monitor on the wall.

"Besides...can't we lock up the troops that invaded the other routes so they can't go down to the lower floor? We know that they're not Viola's main troops, just Russian baddies...so there's no need to take them down, is there?"

Margo-san said, Chief Yazawa...

"Right...When they come down 2-3 floors, cut down their passage"

Yeah...with that, we can block their merging with the other teams.

"When it comes to this...we need all the force even if it's just a bit. Seki-kun, and Fujimiya-kun, join up with Kudou-kun's team and intercept with the enemy force"

Chief Yazawa orders the two

...But

The two look at each other...

Reika nods at Seki-san

Seki-san responds with a smile

"Chief...we can't accept that order"

"...Why, Seki-kun?"

"We're ordered to guard these people"

Seki-san and Reika look at me and Nei-san

"Well, you can leave them to Margo-ouchan and Kudou's daughter. Besides, this is the[HQ] I'm here, and the other guards are from the top elites"

Chief tells the two with strict eyes.

"But...it's an imperial order"

Seki-san retorts

"Fujimiya-kun thinks the same?"

"Sorry, but..."

Reika also refuses to leave our side.

"...By all means?"

Reika looks at me...

"Yes...I promised to protect these people no matter what happens..."

I...

"No, but...it is as Yazawa-san said, we're short on people so it's not that I

mind. Margo-san and Michi are here too..."

"...No"

What...Yukino?!

"It's not good to break this team...!"

Yukino looks at me.

"I wonder? Rather, I'd have the team dismantle so we can move lightly"

Kouzuki Kenshi says smiling

"No...not now Because..."

Yukino who's been silent all this time since coming to this room speaks

"I can't trust these people...!"

Yukino's eyes look at Chief Yazawa and Norma-san and others.

What...you can't trust them...?

Nei-san says as she look at Margo-san.

"Maru-chan...I want to rest in a room"

Margo-san looks at Nei-san's eyes...

"Right...we would be obstructing if we stay in this room..."

Chief Yazawa tells Margo-san.

"Yazawa-san...could you lend us a room to rest? As you know, Nei is one of Cesario Viola's targets. I'm mentally tired because of the broadcast earlier so I'd like to rest"

Chief Yazawa looks at Norma-san.

Norma-san pushed some keys...

"I'll open up room 2505"

Then...she takes out a card key

"We're going to the 25th floor using this room. Room 2505 is the room just across this room...!"

"...Thank you"

This room's a whole elevator

I feel the room rising up

"Well...true, you should take a bit of rest. Leave the fighting with enemies to us"

Chief Yazawa tells us.

"Yazawa-san...of course we would like the information inside the building to be transferred to room 2505 so we can understand the progress of the war...!"

Margo-san said smiling.

"If we know the situation then we won't be afraid...!"

Chief Yazawa

"Of course...Norma-kun, lend me a terminal. Make the line able to communicate with room 2505"

"...Are you sure, Chief?"

Norma-san asks Chief Yazawa...

...Right

Norma-san is a person who don't make small plays at such times.

"Yeah, of course"

Chief Yazawa's smile is stiff

Then...

"Ah, we've got a computer for the terminals here so take whatever you need to use."

Tony-san who can't read the atmosphere even more than Norma-san tells Margo-san

"...The terminals are the same aren't they?"

Chief Yazawa says, but...

"No, after all, it's best to use the one that suits oneself"

Tony-san says lightly.

This guy's Kudou-papa's subordinate, and he worked with[Kuromori]so...
He's completely thinking of us as friends.

"What equipment do you recommend? What's the most useful to extract info?"

Margo-san asks Tony-san.

"If it was me then, this...!"

"Then I'll borrow this...is that okay, Yazawa-san?"

"...Yeah. Take it"

Chief Yazawa answers expressionlessly.

"The line is connected to the writing desk..."

"Un, please. Please deliver the information properly to us"

"I know"

Tony-san answers with a smile

"Then, Yazawa-san...excuse us"

Margo-san gives her thanks.

I, Nei-san, and Michi bowed together.

"We'll be continuing to guard these people"

Seki-san and Reika also bows.

"Yeah...take care"

Chief Yazawa answer with only that.



"Then...why are you coming with us too?"

Yukino asks Kouzuki Kenshi as soon as we moved into room 2505.

This room is a normal room.

There's two beds.

But, me, Nei-san, Margo-san, Michi, Seki-san and Reika, Yukino and Kouzuki Kenshi.

With eight people inside...it's somewhat narrow.

"Isn't it better for you to stay in that room?"

"Well...it seems more interesting to be with you people"

Kouzuki Kenshi says nonchalantly

...But

"...Yukino, what was that about?"

I asked Yukino right away.

"What about?"

"The part you say you can't trust Yazawa-san and others"

Yukino...

"Well...isn't it strange?"

"...Like I said, what is?"

"Why did that person let us into their headquarters? Aren't they being open to us about everything? In the first place, are we people he could trust that far?"

We...[Kuromori]is a criminal organization with prostitution as main profit.

"Well...isn't it because Seki-san and Reika were with us? I think that Margo-san is also trusted by Yazawa-san..."

"I know that. But you see...he won't normally let the two of us in you know? Those people know about us"

...Right

Chief Yazawa is far from trusting Yukino or me.

"Showing everything in their fully confidential headquarters because his subordinates are with us...even letting a group of strange children in the mix... isn't that strange?"

"Yes, but...then why did Yazawa-san do that?"

Yukino says.

"Isn't that obvious?...It's to throw us off guard!"

...Throw us off guard?

"They purposely let us in their secret place to show that they're opening up to us that much"

...That's just

"I think so too"

Margo-san said while connecting the computer terminal

"Of course, they're not our[enemy]...not bad people either. But, there's no doubt that they're hiding something from us"

...Is that so?

...Then

The radio I put in my pocket rings!

Is it a contact from the emergency evacuation room?

Everyone who has a radio listens to their earphones.

[...Hello, Danna-sama?!]

...This voice, Misuzu?

"What's up?"

[It's a big problem...Danna-sama!]

Misuzu's voice is tense.

[Grandfather and Kuromori-sama is gone!]

Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan?!

Chapter 308. Kouzuki Kenshi

"Gone...how?"

When I asked...Misuzu on the other side.

[Grandfather said he wants to talk with her alone, so he went with Kuromori-sama in the monitor room. Then, they haven't come out all this time...]

Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan...

[I thought that it was strange, so I tried opening the door...then the two of them were gone!]

They escaped the emergency evacuation room from the basement with just the two of them????!!!

[Hello, it's me...can you tell?]

The line changed from Misuzu to Katsuko-nee.

[Inside the panel of the wall of the room...there is a hidden lifting device that caters one person. Since it can only go from bottom to top, I think that the enemies can't come down through this device]

Was there an escape room hidden?

[What to do? If you want, we can chase them with this lift, but]

I look at Margo-san.

Margo-san.

"Katsuko-san, stay in there. Even if you chase them now, you can't reach to where Minaho and Kouzuki-san is right now. Besides, we don't know the elevator leads it from the hotel. It's just dangerous if you chase them unreasonably and encounter an enemy...!

...That's right.

Jii-chan knows the structure of this hotel so he slipped out with an escape device, but.

It must be a secret route where he will go in the hotel after this.

But, Katsuko-nee doesn't have that knowledge so she can't chase them alone.

[But, I'm worried about Ojou-sama]

Katsuko-nee says worriedly

"I know how you feel but...Katsuko-san, take care of Nagisa-san and the other children's mental health. I'm sure that everyone's worried..."

Yeah. Misuzu, Megu, Mana, Ruriko, Yoshiko-san...are all afraid.

"Katsuko-nee...can you make everyone in the room hear my voice?"

Margo-san nods at my proposal

Anyway, those girls need someone who can say words to ease them

[Yes, wait a moment...!]

Katsuko-nee opens the line and after a while

[Okay, go on...!]

"Hello...it's me. I've heard the situation from Misuzu and Katsuko-nee"

[...Onii-chan]

[Yoshi-kun, are you okay?]

The one microphone picks up the sound in the[emergency evacuation room]
Mana and Megu's voice jumped into my ears at the same time.

[I'm sorry...Onii-sama]

The one grieving...Ruriko?

[Even though Onii-sama has given me orders...I took my eyes away from Grandfather]

"...It's done so there's no helping it. Don't mind it"

It's too late to talk and scold her about it.

"Jii-chan originally evacuated us to the[emergency evacuation room]and planned to return to the upper floors of the hotel. You do know that, right?"

[Yes, there were signs...so I should've never took my eyes off from Grandfather]

"Ruriko, that's already done...Ruriko did her surveillance properly. Therefore, Jii-chan made an excuse to be alone with Minaho-neesan to escape Ruriko and other's eyes, is that correct?"

[Yes, I would've never thought that he would escape together with Kuromori-sama]

"I think that Jii-chan explained his reason why he absolutely want to go to the upper floor to Minaho-neesan, instead of asking Minaho-neesan to overlook his escape. And, from what I've heard...Minaho-neesan decided to go upstairs with him"

That's the only scenario I could think.

"Either way...Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan aren't people who would silently abandon us. Am I right...Ruriko?"

[Yes, Onii-sama...I know that, but...]

The dark shadow of anxiety is covering Ruriko...

"Misuzu, deal with Ruriko...Yoshiko-san too"

[Yes...Danna-sama]

[...Certainly]

Ruriko has grown up dependent on Jii-chan...

Even though she understand that there might be some reason...her mind can't able to respond to the reality that Jii-chan left her silently

"Anyway...we'll be looking for Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan's whereabouts Once we discover somethin, we'll contact you"

[Please...Onii-sama]

"Yeah. Megu and Mana, try to get along with everyone and wait for me...!"

[I know, Yoshi-kun]

[Yeah...Onii-chan]

"Nagisa too...take care of them"

[Yes. Leave this room to me...dear]

If Nagisa watches over the room then there's no need to worry.
Ruriko's anxiety should be eased with this.

"How's Mao-chan?"

[Completely asleep. She met various people today so she's too frolic and now tired]

I see...there's so many fuss about today.

For the small Mao-chan, the day is already over, but...

Our day isn't done yet.

We're in the brink of the game right now.

"Katsuko-san...is all the data from the hotel being sent to the[monitor room]?"

Margo-san asks.

[Well...not all of them are coming. Of course, the image data of the floor battling with the enemy are arriving. The data of the entire hotel aren't sent, there are some floors that are completely hidden]

"...As expected"

Margo-san says while looking at the terminal borrowed from the headquarters earlie...

"It's the same here...Chief Yazawa doesn't intend to let us access the data except for those he want us to see"

...Does that mean?

"There are things they definitely don't want us to see...!"

Margo-san smiles wryly.

There's no doubt that Jii-chan has sent instructions to make Chief Yazawa restrict our access.

What are they trying to hide?

[But, this equipment is connected to the internet outside the hotel]

Katsuko-nee said

[I can't write but we can see the information outside freely]

"Can you check if the press picked up the current situation of this hotel?"

[Wait...no, it's not appearing on any news sites]

Katsuko-nee answers Margo-san's question.

"It's a news blackout...it must be the work of Kouzuki-san?"

Shirasaka house is the only press organization that this house can't suppress. Furthermore, I don't think that the Japan media has the power to control

Cesario Viola, an American Criminal

"What we know right now is that Kouzuki-san has plotted something to summon Cesario Viola to this hotel. Furthermore, he has his board and their children together"

"...Aren't we the same?"

Yukino said.

Right...We were also invited by Jii-chan here.

"We're the same but...Yukino's different."

Margo-san said.

"The fact that we brought Yukino-san is unexpected... Normally, you would be on the school's confinement room"

"No way, that's such a narrow room!"

Yukino remembers being trapped in the confinement room at the basement of the principal's office...she makes a complaint

"...Anyway, Kouzuki-san is the one who gathered all the people in here. Then, purposely gathering us...we were isolated in a safe room"

...Safe room?

"He left the guards and escaped by himself...Kouzuki-san has a lot of confidence in the defense of the emergency evacuation room in the basement. Otherwise, he won't leave both of his precious granddaughters together there"

Yeah...that underground room should be completely defended.

"Then, we were[quarantined]in that room too. Nei...check the door"

"Got it, Maru-chan"

Nei-san touches the door knob of the room

...Gachagacha.

"It's not opening...locked"

...Does that mean?

"The key's not working from inside?"

I asked just in case.

"Of course...it's not doing anything"

"Or rather...this room, the normal hotel rooms are auto-locked so the door should open if you turn the knob from inside the room"

Margo-san said.

If you close the door, it's locked automatically so it won't open from the outside...

In order for the people to evacuate immediately when a fire or something similar happens in the hotel...

If you turn the knob from the inside, the door should open.

And yet...this room is locked.

"Does this mean, as expected, Jii-chan...?"

"Rather than Kouzuki-san, it's Yazawa-san. He operated it from the[headquarters]and making us think that we're using an electronic lock"

In short...we're trapped?

Earlier, Yazawa-san said that the 21st floor should be the absolute defense line. This is the 25th floor. I think that we're absolutely protected if we're on this floor"

"Speaking of which...Yazawa-san tried to pull Seki-san and Reika-oneesan away from us!"

Nei-san...

"Yeah...This room is an evacuation for us...no, I think it's intended to lock us. Earlier, I noticed it when entering the room, the door of this room is sturdy that's impossible for ordinary rooms. This is originally a room built assuming the restraint of an enemy. If Michi-chan and I were seriously refusing. It's not just the doors, but also the walls and windows are strengthened than usual..."

Margo-san says.

"But you see...Seki-san and Reika-oneesan is with us...!"

Nei-san grinned.

"Seki-san has her pistol so she can just shoot the electronic lock circuit of the door, Reika-oneesan..."

Right...if we have Reika's death cane, then we can easily take down the door

"...Should we break it?"

Reika looks at Margo-san and me

"Wait...we won't have any clues what to do after even if we get out right now.
Let's gather information here for a while longer"

Margo-san heads to the comm device...

"Katsuko-san...check all the areas that can be accessed in that computer, then
I think that the restricted areas would be coming out via reverse engineering"
[Sure...I'll try]

"We'll be doing the same thing on this terminal"

Margo-san heads to the computer terminal.

Yeah...if we know what Jii-chan is trying not to show us...

There's nowhere for us to move to...

Over Margo-san's shoulder...Nei-san, Seki-san, Reika, Kouzuki Kenshi looks into
the monitor.

I...don't know anything about it so I'm not butting in

"Hey, is there any tea here?"

Yukino asked.

"There's a pot in there isn't it?"

True, there's a small pot for the guests.

"Does it have water?"

"Let's see...oh, there is"

The attendant had put water thinking about the guests who'll check in

"Then, put in some tea"

Yukino orders me

"No, but you see...this room is for two people originally...so there's only two
teacups, and the pot can't boil water for everyone...besides"

"...What?"

"There's only two packs of tea"

"There's two isn't there?...Then I'll drink so brew me a cup"

This is what Yukino is about.

She doesn't think about the atmosphere around her.

"Master, there's no need to listen to her orders"

Michi who's been beside me all the time speaks

"If you want to drink then do it yourself"

Michi's eyes are cold

"Right, then I'll do so"

Yukino stands up...pushes the switch to boil the pot and puts the teabag in the cup.

Firmly...she drinks what she want to drink

"...it looks like we can see the hotel's blueprint"

Margo-san said as she look at the monitor.

"This is where we are right now...the route going down to first floor is shown through the maze shaped hotel. In case of emergency, we can descend by ourselves to the first floor by following this blueprint"

Margo-san said

"Lend it to me...I'll remember it all"

Seki-san comes forward.

"Memorize...that's a different maze each floor isn't it? Besides...this is the 25th floor..."

The maps you have to remember is 25 pieces.

"It's not a big deal. I'm originally familiar with the internal structure of the hotel...it's necessary to remember the pattern of the maze of each floor. Give me 5 minutes. I'll put it all in my head..."

...I see.

Since it's dangerous when it reaches the hand of the enemy so you can't take the map...

You have to memorize it in your head.

"It's fine. That's what I'm good at"

As expected of a top elite guard.

Taking the terminal from Margo-san...Seki-san memorizes the map on the screen with a very fast momentum...

"Oh...so[Kakka]discloses this much information to you"

Kouzuki Kenshi says as he look at the image of the terminal from behind

"What do you mean by that?"

I asked instinctively...

"Well you see...the executives and the other students are at the floor above... but information isn't disclosed to them. Well, if you show them the map inside the hotel, those people might just wander around"

True, Kouzuki Souji and the prince faction would do that.
Those guys don't know what fear is.

"Really...everyone seems to be trusted by[Kakka]"

Kouzuki Kenshi grins.

"Trusted, yet...why are we trapped in this place?"

Yukino said

As she drink the hot tea from the cup...she eats one of the tea cakes that only have two prepared.

Somehow...aren't you amazing?

"He's trusting you people that's why he's treating you carefully"

Kouzuki Kenshi answers.

"Before...I've heard this from [Kakka]..."

From Jii-chan...?

"The human world has a[surface]and[underground] People who only know the[surface]are weak. Just like Kouzuki Souji-san. But...to say that you're free from the worry of the sadness and suffering from the[underground]molds you

into an upright man"

True...Kouzuki Souji only knows the[surface]of Kouzuki house.
He's a fool, has a strong self-respect, annoying...but, an upright man. He's not a twisted, disgusting man.

"On the other hand...those who know the[underground]are strong, those who only knows the[underground]have a twisted character. They're nasty, and sly people"

Well yeah.
If you can only see the world[underground]...that is painful on it's own

"What's the best is...you yourself are in the[surface]while you know the existence of the[underground.] Have someone stand negotiating with the[underground]...and never coming to touch the[underground] [Kakka]has always been telling us his students to become those kind of people"

Yeah...I get the idea.
You shouldn't be involved with the[underground]as much as possible
I am a member of the underground which is[Kuromori]so that's what I truly think.

"IN the end...what's important is the sense of balance. You have to be well balanced accepting both the[surface]and[underground]according to where you belong"

The people in the [surface]...as a person in[surface]
The person[underground]...as a person[underground]

Therefore...[Kakka]has divided the people he called into the hotel into three groups

...Kouzuki Kenshi?!

"For each group...it's natural to make a difference in the information you want to tell. The ratio of the[surface]and[underground]is different..."

Kouzuki Kenshi points to the figure of the hotel presented in the monitor...

"On the top floor...where most of the executives and the students should be, have little to no information conveyed to them. They don't even know the

purpose of the enemies attacking this hotel right now. However, some of the battles on the lower floor are shown...making them horrified. Those people are; All people from the[surface] It's enough to let them know the horror of the world behind us...that's what Kakka must be thinking"

Yeah...those on the upper floor doesn't need to know the whole truth of this attack.

No, we don't want them to know.

The continuation of Nei-san's sad past, and it's fate...

"Besides...from what I hear from everyone's talk, it seems that Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama are evacuated to the basement of this hotel. These people know about the world[underground]more than those on the upper floors. Or, [Kakka]has judged that it's better for them to know... However,[Kakka]is worried that they might be completely dyed by the[underground]world..."

Right. In order for Misuzu and Ruriko to manage the Kouzuki house in the future...

They have to know about the world[underground]

But...that said, they don't need to live in the world[underground]

That is true for Megu and Mana.

I don't want them to work in the[underground]in[Kuromori]

I don't want them to be dyed further...

Katsuko-nee and Nagisa who had retired as a prostitute already...

"Then...currently, the people in this room. Everyone's closer to the people of the[underground]than those who are below..."

Kouzuki Kenshi looks at us.

Margo-san, Nei-san...and, Me...

We're the execution unit who carry out the plan in[Kuromori]

Seki-san, Reika, Michi...

Though they're named as guards...they don't choose the means for the purpose.

We're all lacking the sense of hesitation to break the law...we're the same kind.

It is as Kouzuki Kenshi said...we're people who are closer to the world of[underground]

"But...Everyone's not a complete[underground]people You're not people who are stained with evil. That's what I thought after watching everyone's actions for a while"

We...

"I think that everyone here had been sent to the[underground]side in order to confront the[underground] For[Kakka]he's expecting everyone as a human resource to set up counter-attacks in the[underground]world"

We're not like that

"Therefore...if the complete information is disclosed, you would be convinced that you had fallen to the[underground] Therefore,[Kakka]has confined everyone here...trying to make sure that no further information is conveyed"

Kouzuki Kenshi says confidently

"It's a very interesting opinion but...I don't think so"

Margo-san answers.

"Rather than that...what's your position to say those kind of things to us?"

Right...Kouzuki Kenshi is...

What group does he think he belongs to?

"I can't go back to the upper floor. My father, has betrayed Kouzuki group. No...from the start, I don't have ambition like the other students. Therefore, it's an opportunity for me to be banished from the private school. I finally can reach the position I want to go to...!"

Kouzuki Kenshi smiles...

"I want to be a person from the[underground]side...!"

Chapter 309. Longing for the [underground]

"The other students,[Kakka's]...or the vassals of Kouzuki house are on the surface. No, it's good that they don't know the underground, but...I want to be[Kakka's]vassal who rules the underground. That's more interesting...and I can enter the center of Kouzuki group efficiently than fighting those in the surface. Currently,[Kakka]only has Yazawa-san entrusted to work on the underground so it's possible for the young me to be the second in charge underground...!"

Kouzuki Kenshi grins.

"That's why you followed us?"

Margo-san asks.

"Yes. I have to be using underground talents like you people in the future...If I don't take initiative and put my danger like Yazawa-san, people from underground like you people won't trust me, would you?"

This guy thinks of wanting to make us his people.
Ah.

...He's underestimating us.

"In the end...you're still a child of the private school. You haven't stepped out the frame of the private school just like the others..."

"...What do you mean?"

Kouzuki Kenshi reacts to what Margo-san said.

"You seem to be interested in what position you would take from the Kouzuki...or rather, that's only your interest. But, you see...we've got nothing to do with it?"

"That's not true isn't it? Being involved with Kouzuki group should be beneficial for you as well. Either way, you'll be incorporated with the underground of Kouzuki group...in that case, I would like to be appointed to the position to connect you with[Kakka]"

That's Kouzuki Kenshi's aim?

"Then, I'll learn about the underground...and I will follow Chief Yazawa's track and succeed to be the top of the underground division of the Kouzuki group"

Kouzuki Kenshi says composed.

"Kouzuki Kenshi-san...[Kakka]will never make these people members of his own underground"

Seki-san said.

"[Kakka]wants to return these people to the surface. Therefore, we're trapped in this room right now...[Kakka]wants to settle everything with his own hands"

"I don't believe that. There's no way[Kakka]would do charity to the people of Kuromori house, would he? He should be thinking of it as a plot to make Kuromori house his subordinate in the end...!"

Kouzuki Kenshi knows my relationship with Misuzu...
He doesn't know the whole picture of Kuromori family
What's in our hearts...

"...It's impossible for you"

Michi said

"You're not someone from the underground. Not even standing at the entrance"

Michi's cold eyes pierces Kouzuki Kenshi

"You don't have a dark part in your heart...!"

"What do you mean? Even I have some darkness in my heart...I have desires and greed. I'm a normal healthy young man"

Kouzuki Kenshi's still laughing

"That's not what I meant...you have never stood in the darkness alone, have you? Those people who never had such experience will never understand us...!"

...in the darkness...

I remember.

In my house...the dark room with no electricity.

Wrapped up in the blanket on the sofa...enduring the coldness of the night with my own temperature.

Those times when I was alone.

"We have shaken off the pain, the sadness in that darkness alone, therefore; We are here right now..."

Michi had a period where she was raised by her grandfather, apart from her parents

Margo-san was chased away from an Indian settlement...there was a time she spent in a facility...

Nei-san...her parents and her brother, Kei-san died.

Everyone experienced lonely nights.

"Well, surely, I'm from the Kouzuki clan...it may be a privileged lifestyle from the view of others but...what about it? Do you think that people who had experienced hardship in their life are greater?...That's nonsense!"

"That's what not she's saying"

Seki-san comes in between.

"To make it simple...Kenshi-san doesn't understand our feelings...!"

"When you compare yourself with other people, you'd feel that there's something lacking. Or, the sense of loss when you lose something...you don't know the frustration of those unbearable emotion..."

Reika follows up Seki-san.

Seki-san suffered from her alcoholic father.

Reika too...she parted with her family early, and lived with her grandfather.

"Reika-oneesan, it's useless to explain those things...people who don't understand never will...!"

Nei-san says with dark eyes.

"[You don't know the taste of life unless you ate bread with tears]?...That's foolish. You're just drunk on the fact that you have experienced a painful past. You're basking in your own amazingness from standing up from that situation"

Kouzuki Kenshi smiles as he makes fool of us.

"Rather than that...empty your heads and think simply of profit and loss. It would be better if you work with me in the future...I guarantee it!"

Really...are all rich kids like this?

No...Misuzu and Ruriko are different.

Those girls have deep darkness in their hearts.

Therefore...we're attracted to each other.

We have become a[family]

"You're the one who followed...you'll only fall to hell. Either way, you're the one who's going to run away alone in the end"

Margo-san said.

"Well...everything's give and take. In exchange, if everyone thinks they're at disadvantage with me, then you can cut me off. Let's dry up that part"

"...Really, you're not suited for the underground work"

Margo-san looks at Kouzuki Kenshi with eyes of scorn.

"How about you start a black company and try exploiting a lot of people? I think you're better suited for that job...!"

Nei-san looks at Kouzuki Kenshi like he's garbage.

"You're always in a position above the other party...you think you can just say everything looking down on them, don't you? Staying with people you can deceive...they're lacking information and dull people so you think you can do anything with them?"

"That's an unexpected thought...I just live my own way. I'm often warned for having a bossy attitude but...people who are resolved to stand on others needs this much bluff I think"

"Just shut up you fucking idiot!"

Nei-san said.

"...What?"

"I'm saying you shut up...don't ever speak again unless we tell you!"

"...No, I"

...Shururun!

...Zuba!!

Michi's whip and Reika's cane pierces the floor in front of Kouzuki Kenshi at the same time...!

"...The next one would hit"

"Won't you understand unless we use force...?"

Michi and Reika's bloodlust...turned Kouzuki Kenshi silent as expected.

"You see, the people underground are okay to kill those who underestimate them. If you get underestimated, you can retaliate by killing. If not, it'll chew you to your bones. You bite the other party to death no matter how powerful they are. We are all people who possess a fang..."

Margo-san said.

"Therefore...courtesy is important in the underground world. Those who can't express courtesy will apologize by dying. The powerful can do anything just like the surface world. Strong people doesn't have to lower their head and endure. Since the start, live, die...we're in the world of kill or be killed"

"Or rather...let's just kill him. Isn't that way better?"

Nei-san said, Seki-san...

"Sorry but please let him live. Fujimiya-san and I would be in trouble if he dies here"

Yeah...both of them belong to Kouzuki security service.
It would be bad if Kouzuki Kenshi dies in front of them.

"Well then, let's have him charge against the enemy. When that happens, Seki-san won't take responsibility, would you? It's fine, Dai Grepher came back alive. Instead of an iron fan, we'll give you at least a slapstick!"

Nei-san says somewhat excited

"No...that is"

Kouzuki Kenshi tries to open his mouth

"...Shut up"

Michi glares at him.

"Though I feel pissed hearing his selfish logical development...thanks to that, I've seen it a bit"

Margo-san smiles

"The reason why Minaho went out of the basement with Kouzuki-san"

"What is it?"

I asked unconsciously.

I want to know Minaho-neesan's intention

"Didn't he say it a while ago?...The group of executives, Misuzu-san and others, and us. Kouzuki-san says that there's different information restrictions on each group...I think that's true"

Each one has a regulated amount of information to be accessed...?

"After all, it's not wanted for the people on the upper floor to know much about the underground world...and I think that there are something he doesn't want Misuzu to see. That's what Kouzuki-san wants"

Well...I get that, but

"We don't know what they don't want us to see but...we're the execution team on the underground. It would be troublesome to keep this a secret this late. Well, they keep the information restricted on our group...but either way, Kouzuki-san's feelings for the upper floor and basement people are correctly analyzed by this person"

Margo-san looks at Kouzuki Kenshi's face.

"But, if so...I thought of what kind of person Kouzuki-san thinks of himself?"

Jii-chan...what does he think of himself?

"Kouzuki-san wishes that his own relatives won't know too much about the[underground]...In short, he thinks that he's a person who's very familiar with the people on the[underground]"

I-I see...

"True...Kouzuki-san has a lot of contacts in the[underground]world, and I think he's more familiar with the[underground]more than the normal

businessmen in the[surface]"

Margo-san sighs.

"This is all putting people like chief Yazawa and Michi-chan's father in between. The head of Kouzuki family...shouldn't make contact with the people[underground]by themselves. Chief Yazawa should be watching from behind always. He should be doing the groundwork that Kouzuki-san doesn't know"

Yeah...that's of course

Chief Yazawa should be watching from Jii-chan's shadows so he won't be in danger at any time.

"We now know what's inside Kouzuki-san's head but..."

...But?

"Kouzuki-san himself doesn't know that he himself is a person of the[surface]just like the other executives. That person is the same as Kouzuki Kenshi over here...a person who's been longing for the[underground]all the time"

Longing for the[underground]?

"Therefore...Kouzuki-san's kind towards[Kuromori] He has been generous with the old[Kuromori's]Kuromori tower brothel since before...he was looking forward to coming to the mansion and taste the atmosphere of the[underground] 7He made the Kouzuki security service like the organization. Because he longs for the[underground]world...he thought of increasing the chances to be involved with the[underground]"

I see...normally, you won't make a VIP guard company using your name. If you think that company is necessary...then, just secretly make one that's apart from Kouzuki group.

Make it look like it has nothing to do with the Kouzuki house's company. That way...you can easily act freely as the[underground]organization

... Ah, that's why.

Kudou-papa doesn't belong to Kouzuki security service...he's doing a[Kudou detective office]on his own.

There's such a big writing on their office car saying...[We have a business relationship with Kouzuki security service but we're people of a different company], is an appeal to the people of the[underground]
That way...the people[underground]people can easily make contact with Kudou-papa...

"The problem you see...Kouzuki-san believes that he's closer to the[underground]because of the increased opportunities to make contact with them"

Jii-chan believes so.
That he has a stronger feeling of familiarity with the[underground]...
He's concerned and doesn't want to let his family know too much about the underground.
But in fact...he's showing restricted information

"But...Kouzuki-san's truly a[surface]man Kouzuki-san isn't a person from the[underground] I think that gap in perception is very dangerous"

...Margo-san

"I think that Minaho has heard Kouzuki-san's true purpose when they were alone in the room"

His true purpose.

"Kouzuki-san had to bring Cesario Viola's party here even if at the expense of the hotel..."

Right.
There must be a meaning...a purpose.

"And, in order to achieve that goal...Kouzuki-san has to get out of the basement and return to the upper floor. He told Minaho the reason...and I think he convinced Minaho But, Minaho thought that it was dangerous to let Kouzuki-san go upstairs alone"

Therefore...Minaho-neesan head upstairs with him

"Minaho...she's an[underground]person to her bones. She thinks properly as a person from the[underground]and she judged that it's better to be by Kouzuki-

san's side"

"...Isn't Chief Yazawa here too? Isn't there no problems even if chief stays by[Kakka's]side instead of Kuromori-sama?"

Seki-san speaks her doubt.

"Is there a reason why Kouzuki-san who escaped from the basement can't join up with Yazawa-san immediately? Like negotiating with someone where Yazawa-san isn't present. If not, then Minaho won't leave the[family]and follow Kouzuki-san"

Yeah...Minaho-neesan is like that.

Perhaps, this negotiation would involve our[family]in the future

Therefore, Minaho-neesan didn't tell anyone and escaped the basement with Jii-chan

"Now then...here's the problem"

Margo-san said

"What are we going to do?"

...We

"Are we going to stay in in the absolute line made by Yazawa-san, looking at the restricted information and wait until morning?"

Margo-san lags...

"Though, if the enemy breaks the defense line of Kouzuki security service, the enemy units will rise to this floor"

"Well...if we determine the main enemy unit and contain the movement of the other teams, we can exterminate Cesario Viola by putting out all the forces. I think that the current situation is advantageous to us"

Seki-san says, but...

"But, there are four people missing, right? I think there's still opportunities for the enemy to turn the tables"

Right...Miss Cordelia and the white Viola. Then, there's a mysterious person. It's no miracle if something happens in the future.

"...Anyway, I think it's better if we leave this room!"

Nei-san said""

"I think so too. I can't just agree to wait...I don't want restricted information from someone, I want to know the truth"

Margo-san smiles with Nei-san

"I've got to verify it with chief Yazawa..."

Seki-san, a top elite of Kouzuki security service...has said.

"I think, when we had Seki-san and Reika with us...I think that Yazawa-san is assuming that we're escaping this room"

I said

"Didn't Yazawa-san try to take Seki-san and Reika away from us?"

"Well..."

"But...in the end, he agreed to let the two accompany us. With Reika's strength, we can just tear away this door. If Yazawa-san really wants to keep us locked in this room, he'll definitely never let Reika go with us"

He should've given them a different order or something.

Chief Yazawa is Reika's direct boss.

"Besides...we have access to the hotel's maze map. Don't this mean that he's assuming that we're leaving this room?"

That's probably the case.

"I'm sure that chief Yazawa is uneasy"

"...Uneasy?"

Seki-san asks me.

"Yes. I think that Yazawa-san is uneasy that Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan are unguarded. Therefore, I think that Yazawa-san wishes that we join up with Jii-chan from the bottom of his heart...!"

Chapter 310. Dark night route

"I think so too. Yazawa-san knows that we will leave this room...of course he won't admit it officially"

Margo-san said

"But still...I think we should contact Chief Yazawa"

Seki-san said.

"I don't think it's good to act according to hypothesis"

As Chief Yazawa's subordinate, she thinks that she should ask her boss' judgement before anything.

"If you ask for his official stance...he'll say we shouldn't come out"

Nei-san said

"I can understand the feeling that you don't want to be trapped in this room but this is safer for now. This is four floors above Chief Yazawa's absolute defense line. If by any chance the enemy breaks through the defense line, we can escape to the upper floors..."

"I didn't come here to just run away!"

Seki-san and Nei-san confront each other

"Now then...that's the problem"

Margo-san smiles wryly

"Seki-san is thinking of our safety first. Of course, that's very important. But..."

Margo-san's eyes look at Nei-san

"Nei...thinks that she has to confront Viola. If not, she won't be able to escape her past suffering. I myself want to help Nei no matter what. I intend to go to the bottom of hell with her but...I won't force everyone to join"

The people's gaze gather around Margo-san

"I want you all to decide what do you want to do from now on"

...I

"I...of course, will follow Nei-san and Margo-san. Until the end"

I've made my resolve long ago

"I'm only to protect Master. That's my promise with Misuzu-sama"

Michi responded immediately

"I'll go too...!"

"Fujimiya-san?!"

Seki-san's surprised from what Reika said

"...I'm the[Onesasan]so I have the obligation to protect these children"

Reika's prioritizing being our elder sister more than being the guard of Kouzuki security service.

"What about Yukino?"

When I asked Yukino...she put down the cup she's drinking tea from

"Of course, I'll go with you people"

...What?

"I feel uneasy in this room. I don't want to stay any longer"

...Does that mean?

"Fu, fufufufu"

Kouzuki Kenshi laughs

"I see, that's how it is...!"

W-What?

"This room of course has surveillance cameras, even bugged. Of course, this conversation is all heard"

...Heard?

By Who?

The one's holding the monitor system right now is...

Chief Yazawa and Jii-chan

"If you don't want[Kakka]to continue watching you idling around in this room...then I guess it's better to go outside"

Kouzuki Kenshi looks at me.

"I've said it earlier but...I don't have anything anymore"

Kouzuki Kenshi who had his father exposed as the traitor...he can't stay in Kouzuki group unless he shows his allegiance to Jii-chan

"Either way...you should feel the horror of the real[underground]world by experience. You're just too big-headed right now"

Margo-san comments on Kouzuki Kenshi

"I know it's better to be scared. Well, I'm already ready for it..."

Just how long will that frivolous talk last...?

But...now that even Kouzuki Kenshi is going to leave this room.

What's left is...

"...I get it already"

Seki-san aighs

"If I don't go with you you won't be able to move around the hotel! I'll go! I'll follow you around okay!"

Seki-san is the only one who memorized the map of the maze hotel.
In truth...without Seki-san, we can't get out of the room.

"Chief Yazawa! You're watching anyway! I'm going to follow these children. You can fire me for violating orders or something!"

Seki-san shouts at the surveillance cameras.

"Sorry...you've got troublesome[little brothers and sisters]"

Nei-san tells Seki-san

"I love you Onee-chan!"

Seki-san blushes in embarrassment.

"I haven't decided whether I would become your sister or not!"

"But still...you already are. Our Onee-chan...!"

Nei-san said smiling.



"Reika...break the door!"

"Okay!"

Reika holds her death cane.

"There's no need to do this...if Yazawa-san wishes for us to escape then he can just unlock the door"

Kouzuki Kenshi says ironically

"Yazawa-san is a salary man you see...he would be in trouble later if there's no evidence that we escaped on our own. He'll say[I heard that they're likely to escape from the bug but when I tried to deal with it, they already broke the door and left the room]"

Margo-san said.

"...Here I come"

...Doguaaaa!!!

The special alloy stick pierces and destroy the electronic lock part of the door!

...Giiiiii

"Okay, it's open...let's go"

Margo-san goes out of the room first.

Margo-san explored the door leading to the[headquarters]which is on the other side of the corridor just in case.

The doorknob doesn't turn.

She knocks into the thick metal door.

"Yeah...looks like they're not on this floor."

The[headquarters]is an elevator, and it's built to move around 5 floors freely. Right now...it's likely that they moved to another floor.

"This floor is the top floor where the[headquarters]can move, right?"

Nei-san nodded at Margo-san's question.

Then that means that Chief Tanziawa is on the lower floors.

"Then, should we go down?"

Assuming we want to confront Cesario Viola...we only have to go down
Of course...that's going to a more dangerous location

"Should I be the vanguard?"

Seki-san who's the master of the map proposes to Margo-san...

"No. We'll change the formation but, Seki-san will have to stay in the second row please"

Margo-san answered.

"The vanguard will be Michi-chan"

"...Certainly"

"If you think something's strange even if it's just slight, report it. No, I don't mind if you attack before attacking. I'll leave that to Michi-chan's judgement"

Margo-san seems to be intending to make full use of Michi's ability to feel the [Qi]

"Take out your whip...if you take it out when you feel the danger, you won't make it in time"

"Roger"

Michi takes out the red whip from under her skirt.

"Seki-san will be on second row, please navigate Michi-chan and make follow-ups"

"I better have my pistol out too, right?"

Seki-san takes out the revolver pistol from her concealed holster

"Oh, that's not automatic? Don't automatic have a higher number of bullets than the revolver?"

Margo-san looks interested.

"It's better to have more bullets if you're a combatant, but...I'm a guard. We're not supposed to take the initiative to attack you see? Therefore, I'm using a revolver that works reliably in any situation than an automatic with a

large number of bullets"

"Since the level of the machines are better than they used to be, it's rare for the automatic to jam, isn't it?"

"But...this lumpy pistol somehow makes me calm. It's trustworthy, or rather"

"Oh...that's great"

Margo-san's convinced from what Seki-san said.

"Then...Reika-oneesan will be on the third row. Please guard Nei, him, and Yukino-san"

"...Sure"

Reika's weapon can only attack at short range.

Margo-san seems to have judged that it's better for her to change positions with Michi

"Then, I'll be on the rear"

Margo-san takes command while watching the surroundings from the back
That part doesn't change.

"Uhm, what about me?"

Kouzuki Kenshi asks.

"You're going to follow us three meters behind. When enemy comes attacking you then shout out loud. We'll change to an interception stance while you're rolling around in pain. Try not to be killed instantly without making at least a noise. You're the shield when we're attacked from the behind so try to attract the enemy before you die"

Margo-san said smiling.

"Uhm...I'm going to get killed?"

"Who knows? Well, try to do your best alone. If you're lucky then you would live with just a major injury?"

Margo-san clearly declares she's not willing to protect Kouzuki Kenshi

"Ahahaha...that's a nice joke"

"No jokes...I'm serious"

Margo-san's eyes are cold.

"Sorry but, from now on...we are already filled with just protecting our[family]
Take care of yourself. We don't have any obligation to help you"

"Ahahaha...Seriously?"

"Yeah...seriously"

Kouzuki Kenshi seems to have noticed that he's in the danger zone for the first time.

Kouzuki Kenshi who's been treated as a special member of Kouzuki house all this time...

He has been taught and convinced that it's natural for others to take care and protect him.

But...in this place.

That[logic]doesn't work.

We're already at the limit of just protecting ourselves.

We don't have the leeway to protect other people.

"As expected...should I shut in myself in that room?"

"Are you sure about that? That room's door is broken already...you don't mind being alone in there?"

Margo-san smiles

"...I'll go with everyone"

Kouzuki Kenshi steels himself.

"Okay...let's go with this formation Seki-san, please navigateus"

"...We're going down?"

"Yes"

Margo-sansaid

"Perhaps...Kouzuki-san and Minaho are below this floor. If the whole fight is planned by Kouzuki-san...then he should be thinking of interviewing Cesario Viola when the enemy strength is exhausted"

Jii-chan's going to meet Viola?

A direct interview...????!

"That's the only reason I could think of why he brought Cesario Viola to this hotel"

Margo-san tells me.



"Next...go right on the next corner"

Seki-san guides us based on the map she has on her head.

Michi goes at the front searching for the enemy presence...if there's no problem then she moves forward.

It can't be helped if it takes time.

Lives are invaluable.

"There's no enemy around this area anyway"

Kouzuki Kenshi said.

"This is the 24th floor. It's above Chief Yazawa's absolute defense line. There's no way we would encounter an[enemy] Won't you understand that if you think about it?"

"Didn't we tell you about four people infiltrating during the first fight, did we?"

Margo-san tells Kouzuki Kenshi

"There's only four of them right? They're going to be recon or something anyway. I don't think that they would be recklessly pick a fight. In the first place, they must have not reached this floor yet?"

Kouzuki Kenshi states his self-theory

"Well, I wonder?"

MArgo-san answers while checking the back.

"Miss Cordelia is someone who has teamed up with Kyouko-san in the past. If so...I think that it's possible that she can do anything..."

Margo-san doesn't lower her guard.

"...Hm?!"

Michi...the vanguard, stopped

"What's wrong, Michi?"

"Somehow, I feel some strange[Qi]"

Michi drops her waist and sets up her whip

"...Behind too"

Margo-san said

"...It's coming!"

Margo-san pulls Kouzuki Kenshi's arms and pushes him in the middle

"Seki-san, Reika-oneesan!"

"...Got it!"

"...Here too!"

Seki-san follows up Michi on front

Reika looks behind Margo-san

"No, something's in there!"

Yukino points at the ceiling...not the front, not the back

Looking up!

There's a person wearing a gray protective suit sticking on the ceiling!

"They completely erased their presence...?!"

The ceiling fighter attacks from the above!!!

...Aaaaaaaaah!!!!

Chapter 311. Team

"Get down!!"

Margo-san turned back and throws a knife type shuriken to the enemy attacking from the ceiling

...Dosu, dosu!

The shuriken sticks to the belly of the enemy wearing gray fighting clothes but it seems they're wearing blade deflecting vests.

The enemy's stance only broke but there's no damage.

I cover Nei-san. I lowered my hips and and made my body as small as possible... Yuknio clings to Nei-san from behind.

"Haaaaaaaaa!!!"

Margo-san runs at full speed and jumps to the gray enemy!
At that moment...the enemy lurking around us also takes action!

"I won't let you!!"

Passing through Margo-san...Reika rushes to the enemy on behind!

"Michi-chan, get down!"

Seki-san points the handgun to the enemy appearing in front!

...Doouun! Dauun!!!

She shot twice as a warning!
Though it doesn't hit the enemy...the accurate shooting stops the movement approaching us.

"...Leave this one to me!"

Michi confirming the situation, she heads towards the gray enemy fighting Margo-san

"Yaa! Haaaaaaaaa!!!"

Margo-san pulls out something like a metal flexible baton and strikes down

the gray enemy coming down from the ceiling.

The gray enemy pulls out a big combat knife and fight !

...Gaki! Bakikiki!

The two metals collide and sparks fly.

"Haii! Haii! Haiii!!!!"

On the other hand...Reika releases a three stage thrust with her cane to the enemy on the rear!

The enemy barely avoids it...and takes a distance from us

...Dauuu!!

Seki-san shots another bullet!

She's making sure the enemy in front won't move.

"...Avoid it!"

Michi's red whip flies to the gray enemy!

The gray enemy jumps backwards.

While jumping, they threw a knife shaped shuriken...Michi avoids by stepping backwards.

The enemy shuriken stabs the floor on Michi's flank.

Because of that...she can't make a second shot with her whip

"...Look this way!"

Michi makes the beckoning cat pose...

Kudou style martial arts Mystic art[Shingetsu]...

"No, Michi!"

I shouted

"W-What?"

Michi's concentration loosens.

At that moment...

The grey enemy shouted something in english

"Lie down! That's a flashbang!"

MArgo-san said, I then pushed Nei-san and lied down the floor.

Yukino did the same.

The front and back of the corridor shined brightly...!!

"...Uu!"

Looking up...the three enemies have already disappeared.

"Is everyone okay?"

Margo-san said while breathing roughly

"I'm fine...Yo-chan protected me!"

Nei-san answered as she hugs me.

There's tears in her cheeks.

"...My eyes are flickering. I can't see anything"

Kouzuki Kenshi seems to have taken the flash directly

"Close your eyes for a while. It'll heal with time"

Seki-san answers while replenishing the bullets she shot

"Sorry, I acted to disarrange the formation..."

Reika apologizes to Margo-san

"No...I think that was the correct decision. The enemy didn't come close here because Reika-oneesan jumped in..."

"Normally, I would be in the middle of the ranks...we could've repelled the enemy that came in the ceiling"

Reika didn't notice the enemy on the ceiling, and it seems that her initial response was delayed.

"No, that person was special so my body moved on it's own. Normally, I'd leave it to Reika-oneesan, even though I'm the the rear and take the enemy from behind...I thought that I had to fight with the gray enemy so I jumped into the middle. If it wasn't for Reika-oneesan jumping in and hold the enemy from the rear, it would've been bad...sorry"

Margo-san apologizes to Reika.

"If it wasn't for Margo-oneesama, I won't be able to deal with the gray

enemy"

Michi said.

Margo-san pulled the shuriken the gray enemy threw on the floor.

"Oh...I knew it"

"What's it, Maru-chan?"

"Here, look"

Margo-san shows the enemy shuriken to Nei-san.

Following, she takes out her shuriken...

The two shuriken almost have the same shape.

Though, the materials and processing is slightly different...

"...It means we're fellow students"

Margo-san smiles

"My master is Kyouko-san. And she was with Kyouko-san before me..."

Miss Cordelia...

The gray enemy earlier was Miss Cordelia?

Then that means that the one who attacked from the front and behind are the white Viola and Rosalind.

"Because fellow students are able to understand what's the scope of the other...even if they break the formation, I think that Margo-san taking her own was the correct decision"

"Rather than that, I think that Fujimiya-san and Michi-san responding to the sudden change formation did well. I think that Margo-san's judgement was right...each moved to a position where they thought they could be at their best and follow up with each other. We're working as a proper team...!"

Seki-san praises the entire team.

"As for Seki-san...you stopped the enemy in front with just three shots, as expected"

Reika said.

"Well...those people weren't serious you see"

Seki-san smiles wryly

"They weren't serious? But...!"

Yukino's surprised.

"If they were serious then the enemy would've used a gun from the start. I think that most of us would be dead if they shot while completely out of sight"

Margo-san also agrees.

"The attack this time was just to come and check our fighting skills?"

I ask Margo-san

"Rather than recon...it's more like a greeting. They didn't come to seriously attack..."

"The fourth person didn't come out"

That's right...there's a team of four people along with Miss Viola entering the hotel.

The last one didn't show up

"Either way, I think they're observing our situation somewhere...!"

"Then. why did Master stop me...?"

Michi looks at me.

"Yeah. The enemy's aim is to wait and see...so won't it be bad for us if we show all our cards? Besides..."

There's a doubt inside me.

"We don't know whether Michi's[Shingetsu]will work on martial artists master, right?...Besides, Michi didn't notice Miss Cordelia's[Qi]when she was hiding on the ceiling, right?"

We had Michi as the vanguard because we rely on her ability to perceive[Qi]
But, she didn't notice Miss Cordelia
If miss Cordelia is a master who can completely erase her presence...it's possible that Michi can't use her[Shingetsu]

"Sorry...Master"

Michi bows her head.

"No, it was my fault to make a formation that depends on Michi's ability too

much"

Margo-san blames herself

"Don't worry about it. A monster opponent like that is hard to deal with"

Seki-san smiles and Margo-san followed up.

"Let's return to the previous formation. Fujimiya-san's the vanguard, I'm in second row. Michi-san will be protecting the other children and look for everyone's[Qi] Then, Margo-san will be the rear"

Margo-san nods at Seki-san's proposal.

"Fujimiya-san didn't charge alone like before...if something happens suddenly, we can change our positions to our judgement just like now. We already know each other's abilities so let's follow up each other"

The combat team's combination is definitely getting better.

"As expected of the top elite of Kouzuki security service...Seki-san You've got a better leadership than I do

Margo-san said.

Is she losing confidence in leading the team due to Miss Cordelia's attack?

"Wrong...Fujimiya-san and I have come to think[What can I do?][What's my position in the team]thanks to you. If it was me before...well, although I've got plenty of experience and skills, I lack the eye to look around because I only think about myself. Joining up a team like this...I've noticed and understood a lot of things"

"I'm the same as Seki-san"

Reika said

"Up until now, I was selfish... I regret on it"

"Therefore...we'll leave the team's command to Margo-san. Of course, if we noticed something then we'll immediately point it out, but...I think that Margo-san is the only one has the eye to look at the whole unit with the perspective of a leader"

"Yes, don't mind and give us more instructions"

Michi adds to Seki-san and Reika.

"I also trust Margo-oneesama. Let's keep on going...!"

"Everyone...thank you"

MArgo-san's inspired.

"Yes, yes! It'll be fine, Maru-chan! I'm sure it'll be a good team"

Nei-san said smiling.

"Besides...you have good eyes. That really helped"

Seki-san praises Yukino

"Well, I just saw the ceiling by chance and saw some people floating around...!"

Yukino triumphantly snorts.

"We're expecting more from you. We're relying on you"

"... Leave it to me!"

This one's so easy to get cocky.

Seki-san doesn't know the exact relationship between Yukino and us...
She only understand that we're taking Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter as a hostage.

Well, as a hostage, Yukino's allowed to speak as much she wants...
She's somehow calming down, or rather...she's blending with us, but
She's big when Megu and Mana aren't here.
Those two reject Yukino too strongly...

"Speaking of which...are your eyes fine now? Can you see now?"

Yukino talks to Kouzuki Kenshi

"Ah, it's gotten better. I'm already fine"

Yukino has a kind girl nature in reality.

It's just that she thinks of herself as a special existence...

She doesn't understand the gap with other people...

Looking at Kouzuki Kenshi's behavior earlier...I noticed.

Kouzuki Kenshi also believes that he's special, and that he reigns over others for some reason.

Therefore, he's thinking he could bind us and be the head of Kouzuki

group's[underground]division...

Instead of gaining our trust...

He's appealing with his ability, jumping over...

Kouzuki Kenshi considers himself as a higher being than us from the beginning...

That's why he's convinced that we're under him without any problems.

...Yukino is the same.

She thinks that she's a special being than the other people from the beginning...

Therefore she's bullying Megu...

She's horrible to her sister.

Yukino and Kouzuki Kenshi are similar.

Well...both of them are children of distinguished families.

They're in half-hearted positions.

Jii-chan, Misuzu, and Ruriko, who are the born noble...they respond to other people properly as there's a clear responsibility to protect the house...

A half-hearted person...only clings to the authority of the house, and do unnecessary things.

They can calmly shame their home just to protect their pride...

"...Hm?"

Huh...wait, something's wrong

"What's the matter, Yo-chan?"

Nei-san looks at my face

"The students and their parents have a completely similar character, don't they?"

"Yeah, for some reason, they're all completely in sync!"

...Then that means?

"Kouzuki Kenshi-san's father, Kouzuki Noboru-san is the same?"

Kouzuki Noboru...induced by Miss Cordelia, he teamed with Cesario Viola but...

"We aren't alike...father and I are completely different people"

Kouzuki Kenshi says clearly, but...

"Completely alike...including their personalities...!"

Seki-san said

Seki-san is Jii-chan's full time guard.

She's likely to be guarding even in places where the executives gather...

Her opinion should be correct

"What about it, Yo-chan?"

"If you notice something then say something. It may become an important hint"

Nei-san and Margo-san looks at me.

"Well, I just thought of it. but..."

I look at Kouzuki Kenshi

"True...Kenshi-san may have the ambition, and I think he does drastic actions"

Kouzuki Kenshi belongs to the rising faction while having the blood of Kouzuki family

And he's devoted to be the coordinator of both groups.

Well it's already known that he wants to be a boss of the[underground]of the Kouzuki Group.

He's smart, likes to do various things...he has the talent to move people as he want.

Kouzuki Kenshi is never incompetent

...But

"Kenshi-san...let me ask you, if you were in your father's shoes...would you plan to kill all the other executives in the current situation?"

Kouzuki Kenshi...

"If I was my father then I won't do such nonsense. Apart from the strong hostile executives...it's wrong to kill people who can be under me"

Right...Kouzuki Kenshi looks down on others.

He thinks that it's better to control foolish people one day.

...He's not an eccentric that would kill everyone.

"I might want to dispose huge people who are hostile to me but...I'll just sell gratitude to the other people. I think it'll give better long term results..."

He's smart and talented and yet...
He loses the reality because he over evaluates himself too much
He's that type of human.

"Then...don't you think your father, Noboru-san's actions are a bit too much?
Don't you think it's strange to say that the leader of the traitors is your father?"
"No, I'm sure that my father did it. Father is a man who doesn't like to be under
other people"

"But, it's possible that someone has induced him, isn't it?"

"Well...that's true, but"

"Let me ask you once again...do you think that Kouzuki Noboru-san is a person
who would do such radical rebellion?"

Kouzuki Kenshi thinks for a while...then answered

"Speaking of which...it feels wrong. The plan and action done by my father is
certainly too extreme looking at the current situation...father is weak and a
lowly person unlike me...!"

No...you're also a lowly person!

Fierce Battle Arc／Captive

Chapter 312. Division work

"...Let's organize it a bit"

Margo-san said.

"First, Viola has suddenly visited Japan. That's for certain..."

It's only a few days ago that Nei-san's data leaked into the underground society.

Viola who was in US came into Japan quickly when he discovered that.

"Kouzuki Noboru had been preparing a coup by hiding agents into Kouzuki security service. I think that's also definite..."

From the theater to the hotel, those guards that attacked us...Kouzuki Noboru's plan for coup shows that he had made preparations way before.

"I think that it's also definite that Miss Cordellia is the one that connected Viola and Kouzuki Noboru"

Viola's aim is Nei-san.

Kouzuki Noboru's aim is to dominate the Kouzuki group.

"Miss Cordelia brought two people with different purposes together then..."

Then...Viola obtained information from Kouzuki Noboru's agents...
Kouzuki Noboru made Viola's invasion as the chance for his coup...

"...Wrong"

What...Yukino?

"It's not two...there's three. It's Moritsugu-sama"

...Oh right.

Yukino's granduncle...The head of Shirasaka house, Shirasaka Moritsugu also has a contract with Viola.

Blending with the invasion...Viola's asked to assassinate the rebels in the

corporate group of Shirasaka house and kill Shirasaka Sousuke and his family. Jii-chan said that when he was talking with the three anti-Shirasaka Moritsugu factions...

"I see...if Cesario Viola's organization's modus is to make money from the concerned parties in just one encounter then..."

That's right...we were only concerned about Viola's grudge against Nei-san... Originally, Cesario Viola's organization is one of the leading criminal organizations in US.

The invasion of the enemy already exceeds the level of the male Viola's grudge. If this is an official activity of a criminal organization then it's natural that they would try to earn as much as possible

"I think there might be a fourth or a fifth customer..."

"Yeah. Kouzuki Noboru's plan is most likely only to assassinate some of the executives that doesn't agree with him"

For example, Kouzuki Souji's father, and Kouzuki Satoshi's father... Kouzuki Noboru would become the only Kouzuki house's member on the board of directors.

The prince faction would collapse...and at the same time, Kouzuki Noboru who's supposed to be in the rising faction, will become the boss of the board at once

"Right...I think that's what my father thinks"

Kouzuki Kenshi affirmed.

"If you think about it calmly...there's no way my father would come up with a reckless plan to kill all the executives and even[Kakka's]child..."

"Yeah. It's surely another man's plan...perhaps a fourth person who made a request to Viola or Miss Cordelia"

That's what I think

"But, that's strange...then why did I think that father has ordered all of it?"

Kouzuki Kenshi says curiously

"That's because this man confidently said that the[criminal is Kouzuki Noboru]"

Yukino looks at me.

"What...me?"

"That's right, it's you. You said it in a strong tone so everyone believed it!"

"...S-Sorry"

True...it might be my fault

"Right. Even though I don't know what kind of man Kouzuki Noboru is. With the idea from the information at hand, I said that he's the mastermind behind all the cases"

I was wrong.

A single man's speculation won't move at any case.

The speculations of several people intermingle...the conflicts collide and the incident grows bigger.

The more people involved in this case the more it becomes complicated

That's how it is.

"Wait a minute...is this really Yo-chan's fault?"

Nei-san said

"It's this man's fault! At that time...wasn't he the one who spoke his thoughts proudly?"

Right...I'm the one who spoke the opinion[Kouzuki Noboru is the boss]

"Well that's true, but you see. First, Yo-chan talked about his theory...Maru-chan and I verified if that theory was logically correct...but at that stage, Yo-chan's theory is only a thought with no backing evidence..."

"Right. I do remember thinking[Is that really the case?]"

Seki-san said

"That's right. But, but you see...there was a person who affirmed Yo-chan's theory, appearing at a tremendously good timing you see?!"

That's right...at that time.

Chief Yazawa suddenly appeared.

He praised the theory I made.

"That's when Yazawa-san started making us feel that Yo-chan's theory seems

to be correct...making us think that Kouzuki Noboru was the mastermind behind all this?"

...What?

"But you see...now that I think of it, Yazawa-san didn't say that Yo-chan's theory is[correct] If I recall, Yazawa-san said...[It's quite a good reasoning]didn't he?!"

...That's right.

Chief Yazawa didn't say that my reasoning was correct...!

"You're right. We might've been misled by Yazawa-san..."

Margo-san thinks.

"Please wait. But...isn't Chief Yazawa on our side?"

Why would he be deceiving us?

"Let's go back to square one and try to verify from the start again"

Margo-san tells me.

"But...if Yazawa-san is an[enemy]then Jii-chan?!"

Right.

Jii-chan is...

Jii-chan who became our[family]

"...Let's erase all the assumptions first"

Margo-san said coldy

"But...for Jii-chan to betray us"

Then that means betraying Misuzu and Ruriko?

Could that even happen?

"That's not it...point it all back to zero"

...Margo-san?

"What if Chief Yazawa isn't moving according to all of Kouzuki-san's instructions...?"

...What?

"If Yazawa-san isn't a loyal subordinate...and he's acting on his own will, contrary to Kouzuki-san's orders"

What if Chief Yazawa's a traitor?

"In the first place...why is Kouzuki-san acting away from Chief Yazawa? Why take the trouble of going down the basement and going back up? Maybe, it's to escape the eyes of Chief Yazawa's surveillance?"

That's right.

Jii-chan sent his full time guards to protect his two sons and their families.

Why can't it be the other top elite under Chief Yazawa?

Also, Seki-san and Reika...he allowed them to enter our team and leave his side.

Does that mean, if Seki-san and Reika are with him...they can't escape his surveillance network?

In the secret[emergency evacuation room]...furthermore, for Chief Yazawa to not know the existence of the secret[escape passage]...

Then...Jii-chan's current locations is unknown to Chief Yazawa.

"Thinking about it...I know the reason why Yazawa-san let us out of the room 2505 Even purposely showing the map of the maze hotel..."

Everyone's eyes concentrate on Margo-san

"I think he wants to find Kouzuki-san's location..."

Chief Yazawa doesn't have the people to search for Jii-chan now that Viola's attacking.

No...he might be planning to make director Yamaoka do it

Therefore...he came to the room where the executives are evacuated.

But, both director Yamaoka and Kudou-mama became useless.

Chief Yazawa puts his eyes on us.

"Of course, this is just a hypothesis. Please don't think of it as an absolute"

Margo-san said

"Yes...I can't believe it. For Chief to betray[Kakka]..."

"I think so too...Yazawa-san is a loyal person"

Chief Yazawa's subordinates...Seki-san and Reika are puzzled.

"But...we should pay attention to the possibility"

Michi said

"Well...I think so too, but"

"But...he's someone who served[Kakka]for thirty years. Yazawa-san is...!"

The two guards doesn't seem to be convinced.

"I think he's been looking for a chance to betray all for all the decades he's been serving"

Kouzuki Kenshi said

"Don't say selfish things on a whim!"

Seki-san's angry

"But you see, I think it's shady. That old man...when I first saw him, I felt it"

Yukino said.

"If Chief Yazawa's suspicious what about Kudou-san?"

When I asked...

"I can understand when you think that old man is a comedian but...Yazawa-san feels like a scammer. Our clan also has that kind of people"

Our clan...Shirasaka house?

"Everyone's a good hit, in fact, there's even educational background and abilities, though...they plot to entrap the people around behind the scenes.

Suginami-ojisan resembles that person's atmosphere so much...6

"No but you see...Kouzuki-san is from Kouzuki security service, it's natural for him to work behind the scenes. He's just sociable..."

Since he's the chief of VIP guards...

It's natural that his communication skills are high.

"But you see... I feel something's fishy with that person"

Yukino seems to dislike chief Yazawa instinctively.

"Anyway, we can't say anything but...let's just have it in mind that we have to be careful with Yazawa-san Right now we're on the critical moment...we can't

afford to overlook any possibility"

Margo-san said

That's right, this is a battlefield.

If you think naively...even if it's trivial, your life would be lost immediately

"Then...what should we do? Should we stop searching for[Kakka]?"

Reika asks Margo-san

"No, I think that looking for Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan is the top priority..."

If chief Yazawa is really the enemy...

Then it's too dangerous to leave the two of them without being guarded...

"Right! It's better if we join as soon as possible. Then, we can hear Kouzuki-san and Sensei's story"

Nei-san said.

Yeah...in fact, I think we should talk directly to Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan.

There's so many questions I want to be answered...

"By the way...the fourth person related to the enemy. There's the problem left which is...who asked the enemy to kill all of the board of directors?"

Kouzuki Kenshi said.

"Let's not talk about that for now...we don't know if our guesses are correct. There's a huge possibility that we become misdirected"

Margo-san dismissed Kenshi's question.

"We've already have enough of misleading things! Then that means...!"

Nei-san looks at Kouzuki Kenshi's face.

"...What?"

"What about you...could you be a spy that the[enemy]sent to confuse us?"

Kouzuki Kenshi laughs out loud...

"You say something funny"

"Is that a no?"

"Isn't that just the[devil's proof]?...Nobody here can prove that they're not a[traitor]"

Kouzuki Kenshi smiles

"Every human has something suspicious about them..."

...I

"No...there's no [traitor] in our[family]"

"Isn't that just your own selfish thought?"

Kouzuki Kenshi provokes me.

"I'll never betray Master"

Michi said

"Even Yo-chan will never betray Mi-chan!"

"The one Master will never betray is you"

Michi looks at Nei-san

"Right...he'll never betray Nei"

"Margo-san won't betray Nei-san too, would you?"

I asked

"Reika won't betray her family right?"

"Yes. I'll absolutely protect my [little sisters]..."

...Reika

Inside Reika's head...my priority is low.

What Reika wants is[family]...not a[man]

Well, that's fine

"Even I will protect everyone"

Seki-san said.

"If chief Yazawa makes another order...I will not accept it. I will continue guarding until everyone's safe. I'm a guard who protects people. My weapon is to protect..."

Seki-san said...then she looks at the pistol at her hand.

"Oh...so everyone has god faith it seems?"

Kouzuki Kenshi shows a shrewd smile

"Then...the only suspicious people are her and me, right?"

Saying that...he looked at Yukino

"No...I believe in Yukino"

"...What?!"

Yukino's surprised from what I said.

"Yukino's high-handed, selfish, egoistic...but not a bad person. Her true essence is a good girl"

"Y-You...what are you saying?"

Yukino's feverish.

"On the day of entrance ceremony...wasn't it Yukino who talked to the dark and depressed me?"

...That's right.

At the day of the entrance ceremony...my father disappeared.

It was Yukino who called out to me who's depressed and trembling...

"That's a lie! There's no way I would be calling out to someone like you!"

Yukino doesn't seem to remember.

The me on the day of the entrance ceremony...

But, I remember...

At that day, Yukino was beautiful...and kind...

Since that day...I've been obsessed with Yukino.

"But, you're right. Yukino was gentle to me"

Kouzuki Kenshi glares at me.

"Uhm...she's Shirasaka Yukino-san, isn't she?"

"That's right, I am Shirasaka Yukino. What about it?"

Yukino asks Kenshi as if she's protesting.

"No...I've always wondered. Why is everyone letting a woman of the enemy force walk freely...?!"

True...Shirasaka house is our enemy

Both Kouzuki house and[Kuromori]are hostile against them.

...But

"Yukino's not an[enemy]"

I said

"But, she's not also an[ally]!"

Nei-san tells me

"You mustn't make a mistake on that part, Yo-chan"

That's right, Yukino isn't an[ally]

She'll never become my[ally]

Yukino and I will never understand each other.

That's how apart our hearts are.

I know that

"That's right. I hate you so much after all!"

Yukino said

"It's no use persuading me. I hate men like you with all my guts. The hate I have for you have already marked on a DNA stage! Normally, I don't even want to hear you speak but for now..."

She glares at me frustrated.

"It can't be helped...that's right, I've got no other choice so I'm talking with you! Be grateful!"

I laughed.

"What?...What's so funny!"

"No...I just thought that if Mana was here, she'd say something horrible to Yukino again"

Yeah...Mana would attack Yukino.

Megu would surely glare.

"That girl's stupid...so she got deceived by a bad man like you. She's still a child so it can't be helped..."

Yukino looks at me.

"Take care of Maika. Take responsibility for her"

"...Yukino"

"Now that it came to this...there's no other choice. Our house would be collapsing"

Yukino looks down.

Her father was socially annihilated...

Even if Shirasaka house survives...she knows that she has no more place in there anymore.

"It's miserable but...I think that I've got no choice but to leave Maika to you. Bowing my head to Yuzuki Sensei and Kouzuki Misuzu...above all, Megumi is something I absolutely hate..."

Yukino's pride will never allow it.

"Therefore, it has to be you. Take care of Maika okay!"

"What about Yukino-san, what are you planning to do?"

Nei-san asks Yukino

"Even I want to know that!"

Yukino answers self-mockingly.

She can't see her future at all

Yukino's frustrated...

"Well, that talk is already over! Let's go! Even if it's above or below! I'm already done taking this hallway!"

Saying that, Yukino goes in front trotting

"Hey, wait...don't go alone!"

I chase after Yukino

"Ah, wait...Yo-chan!"

"...Master!"

Nei-san and Michi follows me.

The formation collapsed.

At that moment...!

...Shukokon!

...Sukokokokon!

Gas bombs were shot out from the ceiling.

I've seen this before...!

When old man Dai Grepher retreated from the battle with the enemy...

Then that means the one manipulating this is...

"...Nei!"

At the moment Margo-san tries to chase us!

...Dodadadadada!!

A machine gun from behind?!

Bullets open a hole from the top of the wall.

The first shots was a warning?!

"Everyone, hide yourself on a nearby cover!!!"

We try to hide ourselves but...

As a result...the distance between MArgo-san and us opens!

...Gyuiiiiiiin!!!

Suddenly, a loud noise...and the firedoor comes from the ceiling!

I-If this continues...

We'll be divided!!!

Chapter 313. Across the wall...

...Zudadadadada!!

...Doudadadadada!

The number of machine guns from the back is increasing!
Three...no, it might be more.

...Dougagagagagaga!!

...Toudadadadadadada!!

Different types of machine guns? The gunshot that comes to my ears are different.

A heavy rain of bullets.

Seki-san can't even shoot back...

Margo-san and Reika can't move either.

Meanwhile...the fire door comes down at high speed.

Should we go back to where Margo-san is?

But, If I raise my head...I'll surely be shot!

"W-What the hell"

The frightened Yukino clings to me from behind

"Hey, Yukino...let go!"

I can't act fast if Yukino's clinging to me.

"No way!"

Yukino shouts half-panickingly!

...Oh

The fire door's closing!

...Wiiiiin...don!

It's completely closed.

We're separated from Margo-san.

"...Master!"

Michi shows up from behind.

"This fire door prevents the machine gun bullets. It's okay now"

Michi did come to this side?

"Ahaha...they got us now"

Nei-san's here too?

Then, Yukino and me...

"Dear me...this is a troubling situation"

Kouzuki Kenshi...you're here too?!

Margo-san, Seki-san and Reika are separated by the fire door.

We're completely done.

"The other side was waiting for our formation to collapse with the surveillance cameras. They've always been able to manipulate our progress route with fire doors?"

The people who can do that...

Are only the people in the headquarters controlling all the systems in the hotel.
In short...chief Yazawa?

"Could it be that they were eavesdropping our conversation? Then they immediately took action as soon as they doubted Chief Yazawa? As expected of Yazawa-san, an immediate judgement of his is amazing"

While we were speaking about our doubts on Yazawa-san, I thought[Is that really so?]somewhere in my mind.

Yazawa-san himself knew it...

We're still skeptical whether he's an enemy or not.

Well...Margo-san, Seki-san, and Reika are the same.

Therefore, our carelessness...though there's a surveillance network on this hotel, we talked about our suspicion about Yazawa-san.

Who would have thought that the enemy would be making a move this fast...

...Dogaaaa!!!

The sound of something hitting comes from the other side of the fire door.

...Reika?

But...the fire door doesn't even move an inch.

It's really a wall made of bulletproof and anti-bomb specifications

"...Yo-chan!"

Nei-san puts the communication device to her hear.

That's right...we have to use the communication device when in trouble, right.

Michi and I did the same thing as Nei-san...attaching the communication device.

[...Can you hear me? Nei, Over?]

"I can hear you, Maru-chan...Over"

To prevent interference while communicating in the vicinity, they put[Over]at the end of the words.

Then...we have to clearly tell who we're talking to and who you want to answer.

"Is that side okay? Maru-chan...Over"

[Yeah. When the fire doors went down, the machine gun people immediately retreated...over

[They were shooting from quite the distance...to the extent that Michi-imouto's[Qi]sensor didn't reach. Over]

Reika said

"I'm very sorry...Over"

[It's not that we're blaming Michi-chan. The enemy just had it better. Besides... it seems that the other side's purpose is to divide us so they didn't seriously shoot us. Over]

"What do you mean, Margo-san? Over"

I asked...

[Their exact aim isn't us. If they really intend to kill us then they should've closed their distance...then, we could've dealt with them but. If they shoot at a distance random, it won't do anything...over]

"There was five people shooting from behind? Over"

Michi said

Michi properly counter the numbers.

If it's 5 then it's not Miss Cordelia.

Then, as suspected...

[Yeah, I confirmed it as well. There's three of the same type of machine guns... the remaining two were different types. The gunshots were completely different. Over]

[Yes...all of them are used by the top elites of Kouzuki security service. The two are personal and the three were supplied]

Seki-san said.

[I don't know who exactly shot specifically. There's a habit of rhythm when shooting, so. The five of them are top elites under chief Yazawa...over]

...Was it under Yazawa-san's instructions?

[Yes, I also discovered it...Over]

Reika says.

There's no doubt.

[In that case...it's better not to say that much over this communication device. This is the machine borrowed from Kouzuki-san in the basement, right?]

Margo-san sighs.

[Since there are repeaters in the walls of each floor, it's a system that would enables you to talk underground you see? It means that it's easy to eavesdrop from the repeaters...Over]

If you're someone controlling the system...

No, this is a hotel of surprises.

This mechanism was built to be eavesdropped from since the start.

"Got it, Maru-chan...it's better to talk while thinking that we're being heard... Over"

[That's how it is, Nei...Over]

We're separated by a wall so this communication device is necessary.

Phones can only make one-on-one calls...

Or rather...if we make a call in this hotel, it would be eavesdropped whatever we do.

Therefore, we have to keep talking prepared that we're being listened to.

[Anyway...it seems that the layout inside this floor hasn't changed except for the walls that were closed now. If we go around the wall from here...it'll take at least ten minutes. But, it's not that we can go there, be at ease...]

Seki-san remembers the map for each of the maze floors.
Even if one place is blocked...it seems that she knows where to go to reach our place.

[Don't leave that place okay?...Over]
[Right. If you move poorly then you'll lose track of the current location...we won't be able to catch up. Over]

Seki-san and Margo-san said, but...

"But, I don't think that the enemy would allow us to join up...Over"

Margo-san and others might be attacked multiple times while we detour...
We should start preparing for that.
The enemy is listening to our calls.

[It's fine... We're professionals...whatever happens, we'll absolutely pick you up so wait there...Over]

...Margo-san

"...Hey hey, what are they saying?"

Yukino who doesn't have a communication device looks at my face.

"They're going to take a detour and pick us up here...so we're waiting"

"Really, here?"

"No, there's no other choice., We can't walk around the hotel freely"

Kouzuki Kenshi who doesn't have the communication device speaks as such
...poke poke

Hm?...Michi's poking my shoulder

"...What's up?"

Michi shows her phone to me.
She's hiding the screen with her hand. She's afraid that the screen's reflected on the surveillance camera...
She moves her hand carefully so she can make it visible to only me.

I see...using the compose mail mode...

...We can communicate by writing.

Instead of sending mails...we can just show the sentences as we write directly, we can tell our messages without being eavesdropped.

Michi's screen writes this;

【I remember the maps of the hotel】

...Michi?

Michi quickly writes the next sentence.

【When Seki-san was memorizing earlier, I've been observing from the side】

Earlier in the room 2505...she was memorizing the map together with Seki-san who's looking at the terminal?

...As expected of Michi

With Michi on our side, we can freely walk around the hotel.

【Please don't tell others about this】

Yeah...it'll only be bugged if I talk it here.

I'll keep it in my mind for now.

"What are you two doing?"

Yukino asks me.

"Nothing. It's a private subject"

Oh right.

"From now on...if you come up with something, write it on your phone. Just show what you want to say on screen to the other party. Be careful that it doesn't appear on cameras"

"I see, that's a nice idea...!"

Kouzuki Kenshi nods.

"But, I don't have a phone with me"

I see, Yukino...

She's kidnapped by us...

"It's fine...you can just continue talking what you think as usual"

Michi said

"What's with that?! Are you making fun of me?!"

"That's not what I mean. I just thought that it's better for you. Your power to say anything you think without feeling the atmosphere around you, it's been working effectively as an alarm. You don't have any bias"

...Bias?

"Then those three people first attached...Margo-oneesama, Seki-san, and Reika-oneesama had their confidence in my ability to sense the[Qi] I also had confidence in my ability. Therefore, I didn't notice the enemy approaching who erased their[Qi] You're the only one who noticed the enemy sticking on the ceiling"

That'd right...Yukino's the only one who didn't believe in Michi's ability so she noticed the enemy.

"At that time...if your warning was delayed for a few seconds, I think the enemy have already defeated us. Thank you very much"

Michi bows her head to Yukino

"Eh...that's, what..."

Yukino's puzzled

Yeah, it is as Michi said.

At that time, Margo-san threw her shuriken at the very limit so the enemy dodged it somehow, but...

If Yukino didn't notice the[enemy]...Nei-san would've been caught.

Nei-san falling into the hands of the enemy means our defeat.

"Therefore, please say what you think from now on...without any bias., Please"

Michi said, Yukino...

"I-I get it...I just have to say what I think right? What? I can do that much..."

Why are you being embarrassed?

"Right. Then, should I try to speak out my opinions too?"

Kouzuki Kenshi smiles.

"Your opinions are unneeded...!"

Michi said clearly

"You're a mass of bias after all...!"

...True

"Right...you're making wrong impressions on our relationships...of course you may say that's what we're making you think but anyway, you're dominated with bias...!"

...Nei-san

"Yukino-chan doesn't have any bias so yeah...it helps!"

Nei-san smiles

"...Master, please stay by her side"

Michi whispers to my ears as she look at Nei-san.

"She's quite nervous..."

I see...she's separated from Margo-san.

Nei-san's heart is in panic.

But still...she's trying to encourage us as the senior, the[elder sister]

"Nei-san ...!"

I hold Nei-san's hand

...Cold.

As expected, she's under excessive tension.

"What's wrong, Yo-chan?"

"Nothing...I just want to be by Nei-san's side"

I cuddle with Nei-san

"Geez...you're a spoiled child! Yo-chan!"

Nei-san leans her body to me.

"Do you hate spoiled boys?"

"Not at all...get spoiled a lot"

I hug Nei-san

[...We're moving while looking at the situation. There's no attacks so far. We might come there faster than we thought...Over]

Seki-san's voice comes from the device.

[No, there's no way there's nothing...concentrate. Over]

Margo-san said.

"Speaking of which...even though the information is restricted, can't we see the image on this floor from the emergency evacuation room in the basement? At least we can check if there's enemies or not...Over"

Nei-san said

[Right. Should we ask them?...Hello, Katsuko-san? It might be Misuzu-chan but, can anyone in the basement hear us...?]

Margo-san tries to contact the underground...

[...Unfortunately, The communication with the underground is now disconnected...Over]

...Who?

This voice is...

[...Miss Cordelia?]

Margo-san mutters

[...Correct]

At that moment...Michi shouted

"They're coming from the front!!"

There's three silhouette coming from the other side of the corridor. There's two in black combat clothes...and one in gray combat clothes. They're not erasing their[Qi]this time. They're walking towards here calmly

"Margo-san...they're coming this way. The three from earlier...Over"

I reported.

[Shit!...the attack earlier was a diversion?...!]

"That's right, Margo Starkweather...!"

It's not a voice from the device anymore...

Miss Cordelia's real voice is heard clearly

"Najima Yasuko and Shirasaka Yukino...the two targets and three extra"

The three's eyes look at us.

"Then...we'll be taking you all...!"

Those three pull out guns from the holster...

Chapter 314. Prisoner

...Michi bends over.

She's aiming for an opportunity to counterattack the enemy but...

"Stop that, Michi"

I said.

Our back's completely blocked by a thick fire door.

The three people on the other side are professionals.

Even if she could create an opportunity with[Shingetsu]...Michi won't be able to protect the four of us.

Above all...I don't think we should let them know about Michi's[Qi]skills.

"Ojou-chan seems to be using some strange technique...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs fearlessly

...She knows it?

"...It seems that it was foolish to show it in front of father"

Michi mutters.

Right...Michi used[Shingetsu]to Kudou-papa

Were they watching the surveillance cameras?

In that case...Miss Cordelia's already hacked into the system of the hotel.

No...if Chief Yazawa really betrayed us then it's better to think that information about us are already given to Miss Cordelia.

"Don't move, we don't want you killed yet. We want you to live for a while longer. You've got an important role...yes, a hostage"

Miss Cordelia removes the googles and mask covering her face.

Yeah...there's no doubt.

It's the same face of the white woman coming to the theater this afternoon.

There's earphone on her ears and a small microphone on her mouth.

She takes out the communication device from her pocket.

"That's how it is...Margo Starkweather, hurry up and recover them"

Miss Cordelia's communication device is completely the same as ours.
The color, shape, size, and material...
Our devices were placed at the[emergency evacuation room]in the basement.
In short...these are originally equipment of Kouzuki security service.
Having a completely identical equipment means...
I can only think that someone from Kouzuki security service handed the device to miss Cordelia.
The possibility of Miss Cordelia and chief Yazawa's connection is becoming thicker.

"Maru-chan...this is bad. We've got no choice but to be taken. Over"

Nei-san said frustratingly

[...I'll definitely come to save you. I definitely will]

Margo-san's voice comes from the other side of the communication device.

"Well, Good Luck. I'm expecting you...!"

Miss Cordelia speaks to the device.

"We're going to the 21st floor as planned...come after us Over"

...21st floor?

"My, isn't that your plan? Didn't you broadcast a while ago that you'll be confronting Cesario Viola on the 21st floor?"

Right.

Nei-san impersonated Kei-san and told Viola[I'll wait on the 21st floor]
But, that's where Kouzuki security service's...no, chief Yazawa's[absolute defense line]set up, it's a line that can pull the enemy so it's only declared as[temporary]

The purpose of that is to make Viola aim for the[21st floor]...yet it's only an excuse to see through the main unit of Viola who's pushing forward.
Actually, Nei-san isn't planning to wait for Viola at the 21st floor.

"You need to execute it once decided...how do you say it in Japanese? Oh right[Shoshikantetsu]...!"

Ah...Miss Cordelia's...

She may be connected with chief Yazawa and have observed our past actions.
The contents of what we said...
But, miss Cordelia is not us.

"I don't know why are you so confident in your abilities but...you escaped from the isolated room and headed to the lower floor, right?"

Miss Cordelia interprets that we have broken the 2505 room door and go on the lower floor instead of the upper floors.
Of course, when we made the decision of going down...we were prepared for the possibility of confronting Viola, but...
The primary aim is to search for Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan...

"You see! There's a woman I promised to protect!"

Nei-san lies on purpose.

"Then, we've got to wait on the 21st floor properly...!"

Wait, could this be...?

"Dammit, I'm thirsty...I want to drink tea"

I said.

"Yukino...aren't you the same?"

Yukino shows a"? "face.

...Please, don't say anything right now..

I beg you ...!!

"I'll let you drink tea if you want. That might be the last tea of your life however"

Miss Cordelia said.

...As suspected.

She doesn't know that Yukino drank tea alone in room 2505.

Miss Cordelia is also given limited information.

Perhaps...though she has the video and audio on the hotel corridor...

She doesn't know the conversation in room 2505...

...Why?

[Sorry miss Cordelia but I've got to consult Kouzuki[Kakka]in the basement about our future responses. Could you restore the line underground?]

Margo-san said.

She was listening to my conversation with Miss Cordelia...

Margo-san also asks a leading question...!

"No. Mr. Kouzuki Shigetaka and[Black Forest]are separate organizations, aren't they? Judge and act on your own"

Miss Cordelia answered snorting her nose.

[Our boss...Kuromori Minaho's in the basement though?]

"Can't you act without consulting your boss? You're the commander on scene right? Make your own judgements. Margo Starlkweather"

That's definite...

Miss Cordelia doesn't know that Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan escaped from the basement.

Chief Yazawa's manipulating the information intelligently...

We were at the room 2505 when we were notified about Jii-chan's escape from the basement.

Afterwards, the consultation with our people...the situation in room 2505 wasn't seen by miss Cordelia.

No, even our conversation in the corridor...there might be parts cut because he doesn't want miss Cordelia to know.

"Anyway...I won't allow you to communicate with the basement"

...Wrong

It's also chief Yazawa that disconnected our communication with the basement. It's not miss Cordelia.

If we talk to Katsuko-nee or Misuzu...Miss Cordelia would notice Jii-chan's absence.

He did it on purpose.

In short...chief Yazawa may have betrayed us, but...

He's not completely cooperating with miss Cordelia.

"Rather than that, are you sure? You people can't go to the 21st floor that easily...!"

Miss Cordelia said.
Chief Yazawa's subordinates would be pursuing Margo-san?
[I know that...!]
Margo-san's low voice echoes in the earphones.
[I want you to secure the hostage's lives until we reach you]
"Very well, I promise. Margo Starkweather"
Miss Cordelia answered.
[...Michi-chan, take care of everyone]
"Understood...Margo-oneesama"
"I'm here too...Margo-san"
I'm not useful for anything but...
But, I...
"I'll be Nei-san's shield"
I can at least use my life for her.
[Please...hold out until we reach you]
[We'll be coming right away...Lord]
[Everyone, act calmly...okay?]
Margo-san, Reika, and Seki-san sends their messages.
[...Nei, don't ever give up]
Lastly, Margo-san encourages Nei-san
"I know...I get it. I'm the eldest sister in here...Maru-chan"
[Yeah...take care of everyone like an onee-chan]
"Yeah...Maru-chan"
[See ya. I'll come right away...Over]
"Yeah, I'll wait...Over"



Miss Cordelia's two subordinates...
Perhaps, it's the white female Viola and Rosalind...Both of them aren't taking off their mask yet.

The three enemy points gun at us as we walk through the corridor.
The enemy's formation is encircling our left right and back...
We can only escape through front...and they will definitely shoot if we do.
Every time we approach a corner...Miss Cordelia would instruct "Right""Go left"
We could run with our best on a different direction at the moment we turn to a corner but...
Where should we proceed in this hotel's maze?
Wherever we run...we would be visible on chief Yazawa's surveillance cameras.
...Wait

"Kenshi-san...could it be that you're thinking of escaping alone?"

Kouzuki Kenshi's priority for Miss Cordelia or even chief Yazawa is low.
Even if he escapes alone, they won't send out a search party.
If he hides somewhere until morning...Kouzuki Kenshi's survival chances would be high.

"That's what I've been thinking since a while ago..."

Kouzuki Kenshi answered.

"Stop that, if one person runs away...everyone else would be killed!"

Yukino said

"I don't think that's the case. It seems that this girl...Najima-san was it?...
Najima-san's effectively used while she's alive"

Kouzuki Kenshi looks at Nei-san.

Nei-san has never introduced herself to Kouzuki Kenshi...
He thinks that the name miss Cordelia said,[Najima Yasuko]is Nei-san's name.

"It's not Najima...it's Natou Nei. It's that's woman's name...!"

For Yukino, Nei-san's a second year delinquent on the same school she's attending.
Even Yukino was listening to Nei-san's story last night...she knows that Nei-san's real name is Najima Yasuko, but...
The image she recognized at first doesn't quite fit in.

"Anyway, this woman might be allowed to live but...they don't mind if they kill

you, or me...don't do anything stupid okay"

Nei-san's past...her relationship with Cesario Viola.
Yukino knows that the male Viola's aim is Nei-san.

"Or rather...you have a mark on your name. Shirasaka Yukino-san"

Miss Cordelia said.
Yukino's shaken.

Right. Yukino's listed as the name on the[Kill List]Shirasaka house has requested on Viola.

"I don't mind disposing you but...I'll leave it to the other Viola. It's not a job I received..."

...What?
I turned on the commination device's switch

"It's not you who worked with Shirasaka house and received the request to destroy Shirasaka Sousuke's family from the head?"

"That's right. I'm the one who's making the deals. "Deals" is an expression in Japanese isn't it?"

Miss Cordelia answered with a smile.

"What I only did was to offer a business. The actual work is done by the other Viola. You see, we didn't come to Japan for a regular work. It doesn't mean that we have to do the work ourselves...isn't it bad if we try to earn money on an area that has a person in business even though we're only doing a business travel, is it?"

...What does that mean?

"The male Viola has an officially business orders from the organization and...
Miss Cordelia isn't?"

I said it aloud on purpose

"You came here to that Viola?"

Michi also speaks up.

"That's how it is. It's troublesome you see. Other than threatening, killing and

destroying, you've got to do some troublesome things as well"

Miss Cordelia smiles wryly.

"Let me be clear...I'm not interested in the two boys. You can run if you want. We'll definitely kill you though"

"I...would rather not"

Kouzuki Kenshi said

"I don't have the stamina"

"Is that so?...What about you?"

Miss Cordelia looks at me.

"I won't run. I won't run leaving Nei-san behind...!"

"My, you're a brave one"

She glares at me...!

"Who are you? You're the only one I can't identify wherever I look up...!"

Well of course.

I'm just a normal first year high school student.

It hasn't been a week since I made contact with[Kuromori]

"He's a member of Kuromori house"

Kouzuki Kenshi says but...

"Wrong. There's no boy of his age at Kuromori. He has no connections with Kouzuki house nor Shirasaka house..."

"I do have a relationship with Shirasaka house...Yukino and I are classmates"

I answered smiling.

"...A classmate?"

Miss Cordelia shows a grumpy face.

"I don't get it but I sure acknowledge your guts. For you to try to let Margo Starlkweather hear our conversation through that device..."

As expected...it's exposed?

"You don't mind it do you? You haven't picked up the radio from us so don't

you want us to be able to contact them freely?"

Perhaps...Miss Cordelia wants information.
She's trying to take out information from the contents of what we and Margo-san talk about.

Therefore...she's not taking the radio.

"Hmm...should I kill you first?"

Miss Cordelia points the gun at me.

"S-Stop! If you want to kill then kill me first!"

...Nei-san shouts.

"It's fine. Nei-san...this is a bluff"

I smile at Nei-san

"My...Why do you think so?"

Miss Cordelia's expression doesn't change.

"I'm the dumbest among the people in here. I'm slow. Therefore...I can talk this much you see?"

That's right...

If it's Michi or Nei-san...they'd keep silent and prepare to sneak away.

"Therefore...you intend to pressure, threaten me and try to make me speak a lot of things, don't you? I'm a guy who gets carried away easily so I might talk about everything right away...I must be careful!!!"

Therefore...I'm attracting miss Cordelia's attention.

"You really got some nerve"

Miss Cordelia hits me with her fist that's not holding the gun!
...I can't avoid.

She beat me in the face and I was blown away!

"...Yo-chan!"

"I'm fine Nei-san...!"

The taste of blood spreads in my mouth.

"Don't make fool of me! You brat!"

Miss Cordelia insults me.

...Then

[...My my, Miss Cordelia is like that I see. Well, it looks like you're not so composed]

I hear Margo-san's voice from the earphone.

Michi seems to be sending the conversation over here to Margo-san and others just like me, it seems.

"Shut up! Margo Starkweather!"

[The miss Cordelia I heard from Kyouko-san was a more composed and cooler person. Could it be that Kyouko-san's evaluation is too high? Or could it be that you deteriorated since you left Kyouko-san?]

"...Didn't I tell you to shut up?"

[You promised the safety of the hostages until we come, didn't you...?]

"This boy charged at me!"

[Doubt...I've been listening to your conversation properly. Miss Cordelia...!]

That's right.

We're not gonna get done easily.

"...That was my bad just now. Sorry"

Miss Cordelia apologized seriously for hitting me.

"It's fine. It's my fault for purposely provoking a person like you...!"

I said and laughed.

"I hate men. Therefore all of my subordinates are women. Especially young boys...Just looking at them fills me with disgust...!"

Miss Cordelia looks at me with eyes of hate...

"Margo Starkweather...hurry up and come. I'll kill this boy in front of you. I'll torment him to death...!"

[Sure. They won't have a single scratch until then...!]

Margo-san...!

[Of course...you're going to promise it with your pride in the line, Miss Cordelia?!]

"...I promise that!"

[Then...we'll hurry up so wait for me!...Over!]

That's fine.

This is okay.

Nei-san and Michi are ten times smarter than me, but...

They're mentally weak.

Therefore...I have to be the one taking all the pressure Miss Cordelia throws out.

By doing so...both of them can calm down and think of their future responses.

What the inferior in strength and intelligence me can do is...

To protect these two people's nerves...

"...anyway, let's go!"

I stand up

"...Are you okay, Yo-chan>"

I smile at Nei-san and Michi...

"...I'm fine. I'm completely okay!"

Chapter 315. Valkyrie

We turn the passage many times and descend the stairs.

...21st floor.

Miss Cordelia ordered "stop" in front of a door.

...What? It's not a guest room?

It's iron door painted with the same white paint as the aisle.

Is this a hotel employee's door?

What goes in this room?

The two subordinate said something in English.

One of the subordinate speaks something using a different communication device.

After 30 seconds...the door's lock opened up.

Another masked person in black combat clothes shows from the inside.

The fourth person.

With this, all the four people who disappeared from the first raid are now complete.

"...Enter"

Miss Cordelia pokes with her gun and orders us.

With four enemies pointing their muzzles at us...there's no choice but to obey.

We go through the door.

There's a corridor but unlike the one where the guests pass through...there's no wallpaper pasted and the carpet is thin. It's a simple structure.

"That way...!"

Urged by miss Cordelia...we go through the corridor.

There's a couple of doors in the corridor.

What's written on the door is...[Second dressing room]

...Dressing room?

"Go across the door in the back...!"

...There?

It's a small theater.

We rise up on the stage.

"Fufufu...this is usually used as a facility used for film previews, press conference, talk shows, etc."

Miss Cordelia said laughing.

There's a big rattan chair in the middle of the stage.

The light from the ceiling and the stage front is gathered towards the chair.

"Yasuko-san...take a seat over there"

Miss Cordelia orders Nei-san

Nei-san's trembling.

"...Nei-san"

I hold Nei-san's hand...

"Yeah. I'll be fine Yo-chan. I'll be fine"

Though she's staggering...Nei-san walks towards the chair.

Then...she takes a sit on the rattan chair.

"Deeper...sit properly. Cross your legs...a bit more bold. Have you seen the movie[Emanuel Lady]?"

Miss Cordelia gives Nei-san various orders

"Hmm...well, that's good enough..."

Miss Cordelia takes out her phone and captures a photo.

"And...sent"

To whom did she sent Nei-san's photo?

Immediately after, miss Cordelia's phone rings...

"...The ride of the Valkyries"

Michi mutters

"...What?"

"The ringtone's...a Wagner classic"

Even if you tell me that, I don't understand.

Miss Cordelia answers the call.

"My...that's a fast reply Aren't you very busy right now?"

Miss Cordelia puts the phone into loudspeaker mode.

We can also hear the voice of the other side of the call.

[...Why Japanese?]

...A man's voice.

"Do you want your men to know what you're talking about? Mr. Viola...!"

The other side of the call is the male Cesario Viola!

[You see, I've got nothing to hide from my men]

"Is that so?...Aren't your men frustrated because the situation's not like the plan?"

[My men have no problem with it. It's none of your business]

"Because...who would've thought that this hotel is a haunted mansion filled with all these surprises?"

[Yeah...this hotel is definitely a cursed《Haunted》. It's totally different from the information we got from you...!]

The male Viola didn't know that this is a special counterterrorism facility of Jii-chan.

Rushing in without knowing that...

The male Viola, and Jii-chan...or chief Yazawa has no connections...

"Sorry...we never thought that it was a building like this too...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

[That's not funny! Thanks to that...we've been flooded with water multiple times, covered in gas...we got through a lot of troubles!]

"Sorry but you're not the only one who had those suffering...you know that we snuck in the hotel before you, right?"

[Then that means...you too?]

"That's right, it's a horrible day. Who cares about the water or gas...we had

huge amounts of flours, metal basins, oil cans, anyway, it's got a lot of traps planted along the way...!"

Miss Cordelia's story is a lie.
There's no way this has a variety show like traps... !

[Either way, it's your job to pre-investigate this hotel right? The map of the hotel we received beforehand is useless. What on earth is this RPG dungeon-like hotel?]

"That's right...even we are surprised!"

Miss Cordelia says swiftly

[Furthermore...when you explore this dungeon, there's no treasure boxes. Only monsters come out./ Furthermore, there was a comedian who's quite crazy!]

"No way...there's no person like that existing!!"

[Don't lie! Even though it's stalking some showa gag that only I know...He's stupidly strong! What's with that funky monster? Since when did Japan allow black jokes?]

"Are you sure you weren't dreaming? There's no way a Japanese happy fighter that's diligent and expresses emotions weakly exists!"

[There's one mon!!!]

"mon"?

[There's really one! He looks like [General Avalenbo]While speaking like the topknot[Tarou the peach Samurai], this golden monster kicking us would come in my dreams tonight]

Err...I can't just honestly say"sorry"about old man Dai Grepher
That person's an exception among Japanese.
Furthermore...He's a pedophile.
I'm really sorry

[Anyway...the water, the gas, and the samurai monster. The damage here is enormous. Thanks to that...the underlings seems to be quite angry. To be honest...it's hindering the morale It's a bad situation...]

Old man Dai Grepher's attack seems to be surprisingly effective.

Well...that person's got such an abnormal behavior...

Viola's troops act as they want around so of course they would be upset. Ten people were taken down in a 30v1 fight in a blink of an eye...and he escaped unharmed at that.

That's literally a nightmarish hell.

[I used to live in Japan long ago but...I heard that all the Ninjas are dead. Was that a lie? As expected, does ninja villages still exist...?!]

"I don't know about that. I've asked Kyouko before but she just laughed and didn't tell me anything. But, I think that Kyouko's technique is a traditional ninja style so I think that there's still Ninja's in Japan."

...What are they talking about?

"Sorry, Mr. Viola. As asked earlier, aren't you very busy? Can we talk about Ninja's later? I'll have the investigation team search for them"

[Who cares about the ninjas...!!!]

Even though he started talking about it...Viola got angry.

"Hmm, then, hurry up and get to the main point"

[Miss Cordelia, what was that picture you just sent me?!]

Viola said in anger.

"It as you see...we have secured Najima Yasuko. I just thought of letting you know"

[Secured...you didn't check the location but secured it...?!]

Miss Cordelia smiles.

"Yes, that's right. She's with me. I also split her with the Kouzuki security service. She's completely in control of our troops...!"

Viola's tone have changed.

[What?...Tell me that earlier]

"My, didn't I bother to send you a picture?...!"

[I can't know if you found her location or kept her yourself with this photo. I seriously thought that you just discovered Yasuko's location...]

That's why he contacted miss Cordelia in a hurry?

[Well, that's an achievement. You saved me...miss Cordelia. I owe you]
"...What are you talking about?"

Miss Cordelia answers nonchalantly

[Eh...you're going to bring her right? Yasuko, to us? What? Now that you have Yasuko we can withdraw from the hotel with Yasuko as hostage...!]

"My, what about the other business?"

Viola has a contract of killing the rebel forces of Shirasaka house and possibly killing some of the executives of the Kouzuki group.

[We'll withdraw and just blow the hotel up. If you blow some of the pillars on the first floor all together then it's calculated in advance that the entire hotel would collapse. If the entire building collapses then those in the upper floor won't be saved...!]

That's just...!

There's no way that can be done.

"There will be a lot of victims you know?"

[It's the fault of those who stayed this hotel. Instead of them having bad luck, they reap what they sow]

"Did you issue a withdrawal directive to the people in the other units?"

[The Russians? Those guys were summoned to be meat shields. They'll continue to resist until we run away. So if we bury them under debris, it'll be two birds in one stone. We won't have to pay for their allowance tonight...]

Viola wants to kill the Russians he brought with him...!

"Hmm. So that's what you were planning."

Miss Cordelia's smile doesn't break.

[What floor are you in right now?]

"21st floor"

\[Then, I'll be waiting...take Yasuko and go down]

Miss Cordelia then;

"...But I refuse"

[What did you say?]

"I'll stay here...you come to pick us up. Cesario Viola...!"

[Bitch...are you underestimating me!]

"Right...if anything, I'm making a fool out of you"

[You bastard, fucking bitch...I'll kill you]

Miss Cordelia smiles

"You see...you know who I am don't you?"

[Who cares...I'm in the organization for longer than you!]

"That's right, think about the organization. I'm in the audit department. I have come to audit your scandal this time...well, I'll give you a bit of help but the most important thing is to make sure to settle things by yourself!"

...What?

Viola and Miss Cordelia has a different position in the organization?

"If this goes on...I'll report that I'm the one who secured Najima Yasuko... And when you return in Los Angeles, you'll eventually be labeled as[incompetent]and be disposed by the organization. Are you okay with that...?!"

[You lass...I won't forgive you underestimating me!]

"Your threats won't work on me...you're not the only[Cesario Viola]in the organization, but I'm the only[Miss Cordelia]"

[...But]

"Okay...I'll end my call with you. I'll speak with Lorenzaccio Bandini from now on"

Viola's attitude changes at that moment.

[Please wait...doesn't that mean you're abandoning me?]

"If you don't obey the Audit department then there's no other choice but to cast you away from the organization you know? I'll take away your command and let Lorenzaccio Bandini take over. Your troops will withdraw. We already have Najima Yasuko at hand...and I'll do the rest with my audit team. It's easy to assassinate ten people...!"

[You're going to kill all the targets in this maze like hotel?]

"You may not be able to but I can"

Miss Cordelia's smile shows a color of madness.

"At this stage...we are ahead of you on the floors and have secured Najima Yasuko. You can tell even with your dead brain cells that we're far better than you, right?"

[You used our attack troops as a diversion...!]

"Now what? The results are everything in our business...shape up!"

Miss Cordelia said clearly...

"Let's see. We're in the room called[Between the stars]on the 21st floor. That's why, go up here with your power"

[Could you come a bit lower?]

"No! Come to the 21st floor and get Najima Yasuko! I'm not giving compromises." We're the actual people who secured Yasuko. But if you can come to this room with your power...then I'll hand Yasuko to you and report to the organization that you made all the accomplishments...!"

The male Viola...

[Are you sure about that? We can just go back to the first floor and collapse the hotel while you're still there?]

Miss Cordelia won't lose.

"Oh? Do you think you can easily go down to the first floor while taking such a huge squad?"

A fearless nasty smile shows on her lips.

"We're a small units...so we know secret passages you don't. If you flip your troops and head to the first floor, we can quickly withdraw from this hotel. We'll use the inefficiency of yours to escape quickly Besides...let me tell you beforehand, it's impossible to bomb the first floor...!"

[...Why?]

Viola asks in a thick voice.

"The samurai monster from earlier. He's in the first floor now. If you come down, you'll take him on again...!!!"

That's right...old man Dai Grepher is waiting on the first floor. Even Chief Tnaizawa would order Dai Grepher an emergency sortie under the

crisis of the hotel collapsing.

[...Ojamjamajamajama, ojamanga!]

Viola's in a light panic.

[Dammit! Okay. I just have to go up there to you right! The 21st floor?!]

Viola's anger is misplaced.

"[Between the stars]...Well, isn't it great that we talked in Japanese? You can't let your subordinates listen to this stupid talk...!"

Miss Cordelia makes fool of Viola even more.

[Wait for me! I'll go right away! I won't kill just Yasuko, you too...remember this!]

"Sure, sure, I'll wait for you...please hurry up. Bye bye!"

[...H-Hey!?!]

Miss Cordelia ended the call.

"...What a foolish man. Even though he already lost at the stage when he's invited into this hotel...!"

...What?

"Well, isn't that right? This is a haunted hotel full of strange tricks. Viola said that it's like an RPG Dungeon earlier but...if it's a dungeon then they would have trap holes"

...Trap holes

"I've checked through all of the blueprints of the hotel from the construction to changing parts. This hotel isn't only a maze that can spray tear gas. There's a lot of trap holes...they can shut off the corridors with firewalls, and spray out real killer gasses." The people in the control room are making use of Cesario Viola's troops purposely. It's so easy to annihilate them..."

Chief Yazawa's purposely doing it?

"Viola seems to think that the hotel would collapse if he blow up the main pillar on the first floor but that's impossible. Suppose that this hotel was a normal building then he thinks that it's possible but...this hotel's pillar has

different materials. The building materials used isn't for a hotel...this is a small fortress. The bombs Viola brought in won't do it"

The hotel Jii-chan instructed to made is that strong.
...But

"What's your purpose...?"

I asked.
I understood a lot from the conversation of Miss Cordelia and Cesario Viola just now.

Miss Cordelia and Viola are form the same organization...
They're not a united team.

"Didn't you hear? I'm from the audit department. I just came to audit Viola's job...!"

"Then...why let us know?"

That's right...she purposely let us hear her conversation with Viola...

"That's just killing time"

Miss Cordelia's smile doesn't go away.

"It's boring just going here and there...auditing, watching..."
"That's not the truth, am I wrong?"

Nei-san said while sitting on the rattan Chair.

"You want to meet Kyouko-san, don't you?"

That's right...Miss Cordelia is;
A former partner of Kyouko Dothnomechey-san

"Well yeah...there's that personal thought too"

Miss Cordelia admits it easily

"I want to meet Kyouko. And..."

Miss Cordelia's smile distorts.

"I want to kill her with my own hands...!!"

...Kill?

"Don't you like Kyouko-san?"

Nei-san said, Miss Cordelia;

"Yes, I love here...therefore I'll kill her. That's all...!"

Kukuku , Miss Cordelia laughs.

"If I capture you, Kyouko will appear before me. That's what I'm waiting for...!"

"Kyouko-san isn't here! She's not in Japan right now!"

Nei-san shouts

"I wonder?...from my research, Kyouko has entered Japan yesterday evening"

...Is that so?

"If Najima Yasuko, or Margo Starkweather, or Kuromori Minaho are in trouble...Kyouko will definitely show up"

...That's Miss Cordelia's aim?

"Now then...It's boring to wait until Mr. Viola comes to this room...!"

Miss Cordelia looks at us.

"Someone have sex in here"

...What?

"I'm telling you to show me how you have sex in here...!"

Chapter 316. Headbutt

"Oh...if I'm not mistaken, you're people from a prostitution organization, right? Why don't you play some sex show?"

Miss Cordelia seems to have investigated[Kuromori — Black Forest]

"Sadly...there's no prostitute in here!"

Nei-san said

"Or rather...I'm unrelated to Kuromori-san"

Kouzuki Kenshi says something unneeded.

"My, is that so? How about you die first then?"

Miss Cordelia said calmly

"No...I didn't say that in that meaning. I-I'm a member of Kouzuki house"

"What's your name...?"

Miss Cordelia glares at Kouzuki Kenshi

"K-Kouzuki Kenshi"

"Dunno...you're not on the kill list, nor on the protect list"

...there's a protect list?!

"In short...there's nobody who would care if you die here!"

"That's...I-It's a problem!"

"Is that so? My girls are saying that it's a waste of time if we came to Japan without even killing a person"

Miss Cordelia tells the two people in black combat clothes in English.
The two laughs out.

A female voice...as expected, it's the female Viola.

The other combatant waiting in the room doesn't talk.

She's just pointing the gun at us calmly

Seriously...who's this?

Compared to the friendly atmosphere miss Cordelia gives to the female Viola...

it's strangely nervous, but...

"Who cares. I'll think later about how to deal with Kouzuki Kenshi-san...do a sex show. We're bored to death"

Nei-san glares at miss Cordelia.

"...You intend to mock us don't you!"

"Isn't that obvious?! I hate you people...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"You people from a prostitution organization don't know what Kyouko's worth that you made her a bouncer...!"

"Kyouko-san's not a bouncer! She's our ally!"

"...Even worse. I'll never forgive Kyouko who became friends with the prostitutes. I've got to punish properly...!"

Miss Cordelia who was once a partner of Kyouko Dothnomechey-san... It seems that she has a complicated love and hate towards Kyouko-san.

"Who cares, do it right now! Have sex like dogs in heat in front of me! I'll watch and laugh at you...!"

Anyway...they want to beat us—
Breaking our hearts.

"If you don't start I'll kill this guy...well, he doesn't seem to be an ally of yours, so you won't be concerned if he dies anyway...!"

Miss Cordelia points the gun at Kouzuki Kenshi.

"S-Stop!"

"I-I get it! I'll do it...!"

Nei-san said.

"We just have to sex in front of you right?"

Then she looks at me.

"...Yo-chan, please"

...Nei-san's still a virgin
For her first time on this place?

"Not you...Najima Yasuko"

Miss Cordelia said

"You're Mr. Viola's price. Mr. Viola's struggling to search you. He came here to mess you up. Above all, he came with a platoon who loves perverted sex..."

Miss Cordelia laughs, looking coldly.

"He'll rape you...Mr. Viola would get angry at me if someone made a move on you beforehand...!"

...I see.

For Miss Cordelia...Nei-san, Minaho-neesan and Margo-san have taken away Kyouko-san from herself.

Therefore...this sex show request is to torment to Nei-san.

"With that said...have someone else do the sex show"

The other girls...Michi and YUkino

"...Master, I don't mind"

Michi said

"No, Mi-chan!"

Nei-san shouts...

"There's nothing to worry about...I have dedicated my mind and body to Master. I will serve Master wherever it may be without losing my pride...!"

Michi said in a dignified voice.

I'm very glad about that but...

...But Michi

...That's not okay

That's not what Miss Cordelia is looking for.

Miss Cordelia wants to see us cry in despair...

If Michi continues to be dignified in the hardships...

I know that she'll make more horrible demands on us.

She would kill Kouzuki Kenshi just to make us weep. That's definite.

...Besides.

"...Michi, not now"

I said

"...Master?"

"It's not the time to show your power...!"

Our eyes met.

"What?...This girl's[power]?"

Miss Cordelia jumps in between.

"She's not used to sex yet...that's why she's entering her own world. It won't be a show-like sex even if we do it..."

If we have sex here...

It's possible that Michi might synchronize her heart with me...

I don't want to show the tuning of[Qi]to miss Cordelia.

They must not be aware of Michi's[Qi]power.

The[Shingetsu]is our final card.

"With that said...it's your turn, Yukino!"

"Meee?"

Yukino answers with a grumpy face.

"...You get it don't you? We can't afford to drain Michi's strength, who's our combat personnel"

It's already exposed to miss Cordelia that Michi a actual combat staff with the formation we had at the corridor.

Of course, it's just absurd to declare it in front of Miss Cordelia...

But...there's no other choice.

Yukino's idiocy is abysmal...

She won't understand unless I say it clearly...

She's a woman who doesn't read the atmosphere...!

"So what...why me!?"

Look...

"Nei-san can't do it, it's impossible with Michi...then you're the only one

remaining!"

"I don't want that! In the first place, I'm not your ally!"

"We'll put you in for now, as a special!"

"No thanks. I refuse! I'd rather die than become your allies!"

"Then how about you die first?...Huh, Shirasaka Yukino!"

At that moment...Yukino is reminded that she's on the hit list.

"...I-I"

"You've got a reason to be killed more than Kouzuki Kenshi-san! If you keep ranting then you'll be disposed right away. You're the one who has to appeal to these people with anything even sex show!"

That's right...Yukino will be absolutely killed if this continues.
If nothing happens...she'll die immediately

"I-I get it already"

Yukino answered.

"I just have to do it right?! Okay, I've already been seen by the school...it's too late to be embarrassed with a sex show!"

Yukino says it with her mouth, but...
There's already tears in her eyes.
The noble daughter with high pride...Shirasaka Yukino.
No matter how many times she experience cruelty...her heart will never yield.
In reality, she hates it.
In this place...showing our sex as a spectacle...
But...right now.
This is only her way to survive...!



Yukino and I head to the rattan chair where Nei-san's photo was taken.
The lights come from the front and directly above, shining on us. Dazzling.

"Now then...entertain us"

Nei-san and others are seated on the audience seats.
From the left and right of the stage...the white Viola are monitoring everyone.

Miss Cordelia orders another combatant in black clothes in English
Then...the combatant takes out a can of cola from the fridge on the stage and handed it to Miss Cordelia.

Why is there a fridge in that place?

"What's this?...It's different from the taste of American Cola!"

Opening the can, drinking a sip...Miss Cordelia complains.

"Even though they said that they were going to prepare everything we want... those people aren't thoughtful. You can easily find American colas...!"

The refrigerator was placed as Miss Cordelia requested...
As expected...this small theater...
It's prepared in advance waiting for miss Cordelia and her team.
This is the 21st floor.

This is the absolute defense line set by chief Yazawa.

Having a waiting place prepared here...they prepared too much
...Besides.

Miss Cordelia disappeared on the first floor and then acted freely inside the hotel afterwards...because there are people who overlook her.
In short, the people who control all of the monitor systems of the hotel...
Chief Yazawa...!

With this, the connection between chief Yazawa and miss Cordelia is confirmed...

Let's rearrange it inside my head again...

First...the certain ones.

Chief Yazawa and Miss Cordelia seems to be connected behind the scenes.
On the other hand...Miss Cordelia and the male Viola are from the same organization but they're fighting.

Therefore...chief Yazawa and the male Viola aren't connected.

It's a pity that chief Yazawa's using Kudou-papa to fight the male Viola.
With that said...there's no need to doubt Kudou-papa and his men.

Miss Cordelia said that she's coming to audit for Viola but it's unknown what that is exactly.

But, miss Cordelia personally wants to see Kyouko-san.

In addition to her love and hate with Kyouko-san...she hates us[Kuromori]

Following...the unknown

Chief Yazawa's purpose is totally unclear.

Why did he betray Jii-chan?...Of course, it's possible that all of chief Yazawa's actions can be just following Jii-chan and Jii-chan himself betrayed us.

Personally, I believe in Jii-chan...

Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan's whereabouts. Where are they right now?

Why did they suddenly disappear...?

I don't know the reason why.

The male Viola's mystery troop.

Why is Lorenzaccio Bandini taking command?

What is the male Viola's role?

And...the identity of the fourth combatant.

I don't think she's a part of miss Cordelia's team but she follows orders.

Who is this person?

The hopes...or, the parts I don't have to worry.

The people in the[emergency evacuation room]in the basement should be safe.

Jii-chan escaped without leaving a guard so it's protection is perfect.

Therefore, I don't have to worry about Misuzu.

On the other hand...the things I have to worry about.

Right now, the people in this room...especially Nei-san.

Also, Margo-san and the other two who are supposed to be heading to this room to rescue us...

Won't they be attacked by Kouzuki security service under chief Yazawa?

Also, Kudou-papa and his team fighting the male Viola's army.

Miss Cordelia seems to believe that the male Viola would arrive in this room on the 21st floor.

If so...chief Yazawa is very likely to drop Kudou-papa

"What are you being absentminded for?! Hurry up and start!"

Miss Cordelia's voice got me back.

Shit...I got absentminded.

"...Yo-chan, Yukino-chan...sorry!"

Nei-san tells us.
She must be thinking that it's her fault that we're going to be shamed in of them.

"Don't mind it Nei-san. We love being watched...!"

I said wanting to soften Nei-san's heart.

"You might be but I'm not!"

Yukino looks at me hatefully

"Who cares...just strip. It's not a sex show but a rape show...!"

I prepare myself and tell Yukino.

"Isn't that your specialty!"

...Yukino

"I don't mind it but...do you intend to walk around in the hotel with torn clothes after I rape you?!"

"...What?"

"I'm saying that if you don't want it to be torn and broken then hurry up and strip...!!!"

I threaten Yukino

"S-So he has that kind of personality?"

Kouzuki Kenshi's surprised by my sudden transformation.

"Master is a person who does what he needs to do thoroughly...!"

"That's right, Yo-chan's a guy with a strong gut...!"

If you say that at this time, I'm a bit embarrassed.

"I-I'll strip! I just have to strip right...!!!"

Yukino who yelled loudly is already in half-crying state.
I'm really sorry but...that helps.

Yuknio who's expressing her emotions immediately...

She's an optimal heroine for a sex show.

She's going by miss Cordelia's wishes.

If it was Michi...

Michi would just endure the humiliation from the start to end...showing an expressionless face.

She's got guts so it won't be a[spectacle]

"I-I'm not interested in men so strip from behind...Shirasaka Yukino goes in front...and take off your clothes in the light so I can see it better...!"

Miss Cordelia orders Yukino to strip.

"Go, Yukino..."

Yukino goes forward.

"I-I get it!"

Yukino glares at me with her wet eyes.

"I want some music...ED!"

Miss Cordelia calls out the fourth combatant.

The fourth person is called ED?

She commands something in English.

ED, heads to the back of the audience seat of the theater.

Then, she operates the audio equipment...

"Now...strip while dancing to the music...!"

A strange music flows from the speaker

"Hurry up!"

Yukino takes off her clothes while spilling tears.

Yukino's suffering expression has sex appeal.

Miss Cordelia watches Yukino's stripping satisfied.

"Good. you have the talent! Should I introduce you to a shop in Vegas? No... you don't suit Las Vegas. Let's see, it's better with more rundown district shops. Like Tifana...or the people near the Mexican border would be pleased. They would like a vulgar woman like you strip...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs at Yukino's stripping.

She must like to look down on girls like this...

I can easily understand her character.

Miss Cordelia and her two subordinates...the white Viola and Rosalind look at Yukino happily.

They have the same hobby with their boss?

The problem is only ED...

Yukino's not a person from the underground world.

Right now, she's doing her best...furthermore, her emotions are about to explode from the anger and embarrassment.

Therefore...Miss Cordelia would be shown the best spectacle.

Hopefully...this would create an opportunity.

"..... ! "

Michi on the audience seat nods at me.

Michi understands.

Of course, Nei-san too

"Sorry! Yukino-chan! Sorry!"

Nei-san who came to see where Yukino's raped severely until now...
She's apologizing to Yukino.

This is a fake.

This is to make miss Cordelia careless...

We didn't come to the pandemonium halfheartedly.

"Yo-chan too...sorry!"

Nei-san's eyes are appealing.

I know...I understand.

Michi holds Nei-san's hand...

Michi is properly following up with Nei-san's heart.

Ready for a counterattack anytime...

What's left is for me and Yukino to create the[Opportunity]...

I take off my clothes in a hurry

"...Dammit...dammit...Bakaa...!"

Yukino throws her sailor uniform while crying.

Her skirt drops.

She's now in her underwear only...

I got on my underwear quickly.

"My, your breasts are small but ain't you got a cute body!"

Miss Cordelia said as she look at Yukino's style

"Look...next is your underwear! Hurry!"

Yukino turns her hand on the bra hook in the music and light.

Yukino's breasts burst out at the same time the hook comes off.

The last time I saw this pink nipple is this morning

The white Viola makes a flirty voice.

Really...they're laughing at the naked Yukino like they're watching a stripshow of a lady on a tourist spot...

"Hurry hurry...strip the panty too!"

Yukino glares at Miss Cordelia while spilling tears.

"What are you doing! Hurry!"

Yukino puts her hand on her white panty and take it off.

"What's with that strange tattoo? Also, your pubic hair is shaved?"

I shaved Yukino's pubic hair a few days ago.

And on her lower abdomen...there's the indelible[吉田]tattoo engraved.

"What's written in that...Yoshi,ta? What's[Yoshita]? Is it the name of your lover...?!"

Miss Cordelia asks, Yukino;

"...It's the name of my most hated man in the world!!!!"

She screams while spilling tears.

"Hmm, why did you carve that man's name then?"

"So I won't forget the feeling of hatred!!!"

Yukino puts her hand in her lower abdomen

"Is that so?...Who cares. The other guy is ready?"

Miss Cordelia looks at me.

I took off my underwear silently...and expose my erect penis.

"My...that's energetic. As expected of a prostitution man"

I want to make miss Cordelia think of me just as dick slave of [Kuromori]
If this is to loosen her guard...!

"...ED!"

Miss Cordelia tells ED to change the music.
From the light dance music...to a moist ballad.

"...Then, begin!"

Miss Cordelia smiles
The white Viola are also watching us.

"...Yukino"

Naked, I go in front of Yukino.
Yukino hides her crotch and chest with her hand.
Her face is dyed in shame...her eyes are wet with tears.

"Yukino...let's go"

At the moment I try to kiss Yukino's face.

"Youuuuuuuuuuu!!!!!!!"

...Zugagooo!!!

Yukino headbangs me!!!

"...Ouchhhhh!!!"

The naked Yukino looks at me with eyes of hatred!

"No! I don't want this after all!"

"Don't give me that shit! You!"

I head-butt Yukino's forehead.

"Ouuuuchhhh!!! What are you doing!!!"

...Gotsu!!

Yukino head butts me again!!!
Beating down using hand or something...
If you take such obviously rebellious attitude, I know that it'll make Miss
Cordelia displeased.

Both Yukino and I...

Therefore...we can only beat each other's forehead.

"Ouch...Stop it already!"

While saying that, Yukino makes another serious head butt!

"You should stop!"

I also return a head-butt to Yukino. Seriously.

Miss Cordelia...

She's laughing.

The white Viola too.

But, this won't do...this won't make an [opportunity]

"Damn you...!!!"

I sweep Yukino's feet and make her fall...!!

Then...I cover over her naked body...!!!

Chapter 317. My and Yukino's miracle sex show!

"...It hurts you know! Idiot!"

Yukino who collapsed on her back as I pushed her down shouts at me!

"You're noisy! Shut up idiot!"

I shout at Yukino as well.

I cover from above...Ah, Yukino's escaping

"Don't run!"

I pin down Yukino's body.

"What, what, what...youuu!"

It's pissing me now that it comes to this.

"Goddammit!"

Yoko-shiho-gatame!!!!

"Hey wait, where are you touching! You idiot!!"

Eeeiii!!

Dammit!!

"Ouchhhhhhhh, you're heavy! Get off me! Idiot!!"

Yukino twists around herself below my body.

Miss Cordelia laughs.

The female Viola are laughing too.

Rururu, rururuu.

I hope it's a good weather today...

"You idiot!"

...Gotsun!

Yukino still head butts from the bottom.

"Ouch, what are you going to do if I become more idiot than this?"

"Who cares, just die already! I hope your head gets broken and you die...!"

Looking at us shouting at each other...Kouzuki Kenshi mutters.
Hearing that, Yukino glared at him...

"You, what are you staring at!"

"No, it's just that it's my first time seeing sex for the first time in my life"

"Don't give me that bull shit! I'll beat you up!"

Yukino's anger doesn't calm down.

"Is it not okay to watch?"

"Isn't that obvious?! Close your eyes and your ears! You Trash! Dunce! Pervert!"

Miss Cordelia then;

"Are you a virgin?"

Kouzuki Kenshi speaks clearly.

"Isn't that obvious?"

I-I see.

This guy is the oldest among the students...at college age.

"I vow to have a clean body until I marry!"

"To whom? Your mother?"

"Wrong! My fiance!"

FFiance...?!

"Yes, I have a fiance. And, we promised each other to[have a clean body until we marry each other]Therefore, I'm actively protecting my virtginity"

Protectively protecting it?

"Hmm, your girlfriend is doing it with other men in secret!"

Yukino speaks harshly from below me.

"That's not true. Shiori-san is a kind person, she'll never tell a lie. Ah, she's on good terms with Kouzuki Satoshi-kun. The two of them often play around..."

Kouzuki Satoshi, isn't he the playboy along with Tsunoda among the students.

"Just the two of them...?!"

"Look, I'm busy with my studies so I can't be by Shiori's side. In that respect,

Satoshi-kun knows fashion shops and trends...it seems that they were drinking until morning last week"

...Until morning

"That means she's just cheating on you"

Yukino's amazed.

Kouzuki Kenshi laughs it out.]

"There's no way that's true?! Shiori-san is my fiancée, Satoshi-kun knows that"
"What were they playing until morning then?"

"No, it seems that the two of them were drinking alcohol at the rooftop of the city hotel...Shiori-san seems to have gotten too drunk so Satoshi-kun took her to the hotel room and have taken care of her until morning. That's what Shiori-san told me..."

Ah...no good.

Kouzuki Satoshi surely took care of her naked...

Miss Cordelia bursts out laughing.

"Hey, Shirasaka Yukino-san. How about having sex with this guy instead?"

...What?

"No...like I said, I swore to protect my virginity until I'm married!"
"It's just interesting to force the oath to be broken you see...it's interesting to see a woman reverse raping a man...!"

B-bad.

"You seem to hate that man to the extent you head-butt him, isn't that better for you?"

...I

"I don't want it...her being embraced by another guy...!"

Yukino's been accepting only my dick.
I'll never be able to have Yukino's heart.
We'll never understand each other even if we die.
Our way of thinking, view of life, our outlook of the world are completely different.

But, the feeling that this body is mine is strong.

"...You"

Yukino looks at me with a surprised face.

...Then

"Me too...I'd rather have this man instead of this virgin guy"

...Yukino

"My...don't you hate that man?"

Miss Cordelia looks at us with a face making fool of us.

"I do...I hate this man...!"

Yukino looks at me and spills tears again.

"But...this man's good at only sex. Our body matches. Therefore I get angry!"

Yukino shuts off her complex emotions and look at me.

Yukino's weak to the pleasures of the flesh.

Originally, she's a woman who doesn't think deeply and acts depending on her mood.

Not reason...she lives according to the principle of pleasure...

"Hurry, make me feel good already! Either way, that's only your worth...!"

That's right...for Yukino.

I only have the value of a human vibrator.

No, it's an amazing chance compared to the first stage.

When I was her classmate...I was the same as a stone on the road for Yukino.

It's a worthless existence, as good as nothing.

Even as a human vibrator, it's an amazing progress to be recognized as an existence.

...But

...Dammit!

"...I'm going to fuck you up Yukino"

"Sure, violate me. I quite like to be violated by you...!"

"...Stop messing around!"

I put on my weight as I kiss Yukino.
Yukino immediately intertwine with her tongue.
When she decided to have sex...Yukino loses sight of the world.
She's the kind of woman that drowns in sex.

"Hey, suck my tongue...suck my tongue a lot...!"

i grant Yukino's wish.
I massage Yukino's breasts at the same time.

"Stronger...grip it. Crush it...do it roughly, I love the pain...I love it!"
"Then I'll do as you want!"

I enjoy the elasticity of Yukino's breasts.
Rubbing around her nipple that's sharply pointing.

"Lick it..."
"...What?!"
"Lick my nipples. Like a dog"
"No thanks!"
"Then...suck it like a baby. It feels good being sucked by you!"

I put Yukino's nipples in my mouth.
"Yes...That's good! That's amazing!"
...Yukino
"You can do it if you try you see...Ah, tease the tip with your tongue...!"

I roll around her nipple with the tip of my tongue.
Yukino looks at me with an aroused face.

"Yuknio...I'll lick below so lick me too"
"...I-I get it"

I crawl my tongue on Yukino's body from her nipples.
Going around her belly...
My tongue slips through the tattoo.

"Hey...open your legs!"
"...L-Like this?"

Yukino loosens the strength of her legs.

"More!"

I open Yukino's legs widely by force.

So her private parts become visible to miss Cordelia.

This is a sex show for miss Cordelia to watch.

...I must not forget that.

"Hey, I'm licking it! Do it to!"

We're on a 69 position with the man above.

"What, aren't you quite wet!"

"Shut up...you're rock hard too!"

Yukino is easy to get wet.

I'm easy to get erect.

That's all.

"Oh, as usual, this smells...!"

"Yukino's crotch is smelly too!"

"It's fine, I'm already used to your smell"

...Yukino?

"You see, when I masturbate at night...your smell always comes in my head...!"

Yukino...you've got smell fetish?!

...Uuu

Yukino's lips wet the glans.

I also lick Yukino's slit.

...Picha...Picha...

"...Yukino's juice is sour"

"What, is that bad?"

"...What?"

"What's wrong with the body if the juice coming out is sour?"

"...Like hell I know!"

"You're doing with other women so you know it don't you? Is there anything

wrong with my taste? Is there nothing strange?"

So she's worried about that...

"It doesn't mean it has any problem you know? You've got a good body, only the body...Yukino's useless part is the personality!"

"Are you talking about yourself?! You're only good at sex..."

Yukino says as she lick my penis.

"That's not all...you've got a bad face and brain. Seriously, you're just a man who has no merit but sex...you human trash!"

"Right. Yukino's face is also beautiful...it would've been perfect if you only got a good personality!"

"Shut up! It's only you who say that my personality is bad! Papa's always praising me[Yukino's a good girl]"

Yukino, your father is a perverted rapist.

Are you happy being praised by that Shirasaka Sousuke?!

"Hey...lick the part above"

"Above? What Above?!"

I pretend not to know on purpose.

"Geez...my clitoris! Clitoris...lick it!"

Okay, I'll do it...!

"Haaaaa...aaaaaaaaa!!!"

Yukino's voice melts in pleasure!

"You're good! Not just good...more, with your tongue...please!"

"Like this?!"

"Aaaaa...so good! it's completely different when I touch myself...your tongue feels really good!"

As if hitting the jackpot in a slot machine...

Yukino's slit spills out love nectar in one go...!

"When you do it yourself, do you stir and thrust yourself with your fingers?!"

"Yes...that's right...Yes!"

Yukino speaks while trembling in pleasure.

"Then, should I thrust in my finger too?"

"No...not your finger! Fingers won't do...the usual...!"

...Yukino?

"The length and thickness aren't enough! Thrust the other one in!"

She looks up at me with wet eyes.

"Your penis...your penis has the perfect size! It reaches me exactly all the way...!"

"Oh, is that so?!"

I raise my body.

"Yukino, get on all fours"

"...What?"

"I'll do you from the back so it'll be a good show on the audience!"

"...Pervert!"

Saying taht, Yukino puts her hand on the stage floor.

"Raise your ass higher...hey!"

"...Like this?"

Yukino raises her small 16 year old ass.

"Here we go"

I place my erect dick on her wet opening

"Ah...your hard, and hot...!"

"Yukino too, aren't you drenched and hot?!"

"H-Hurry up...bury it deep inside meee!"

...You don't have to tell me!

I push in my erection inside Yukino.

Pushing out the love nectar, it drips down to Yukino's thighs.

"Aaah...ahn!"

Yukino's body trembles...

"...I came lightly"

"...Eh?"

"I'm saying that just putting it in made me cum lightly..."

"Is that so?!"

I begin the piston.

I pierce the innermost part of Yukino!

The love nectar continues to drip.

Yukino's body on all fours has her breasts shaking below.

"Grab my breasts from behind!"

"What?"

"Hold my breasts! Tightly! "

"Like this?"

I reach out for Yukino's breasts while still inserted.

"That's right! Yes...good. Your hand feels good!"

Even I feel good...

Yukino's body elasticity...the texture of the skin...I want to devour more.

That's right...this body isn't a body to love.

I want to devour...it's a body that I want to eat greedily and drown in carnal desires.

"Ahn...aaahn...aaaaaa...!"

Yukino barks happily to match my piston.

Our whole body is already sweating.

The sweat from sex is different from sports.

It contains a faint obscene odor.

The scent of Yukino's sweat rises my sexual senses.

"Uuuuu...Aaahn...good...this is amazing...so good...!!"

Yukino who's drowning in sex can't see anything as usual.

She's just falling into pleasure...

From the tip of Yukino's nipple, a sweat ball drops to the stage floor.

...Dammit!

It's the usual sex with Yukino.

It only feels good...there's no development, it's only an act of rubbing both mucous membranes...

"Hey, I don't like this position..."

Suddenly, Yukino on all fours speaks

"What? Are you embarrassed being watched by people fucked from behind?!"

"Who cares about being seen by people!"

...Yukino?!

"I want to do it while looking at your face!"

...What?

...W-What's going on?

I pull out my penis from Yukino's inside.

"Lie down...I'll be the one on top...!"

I lie down on the floor.

Yukino rides on top of me.

She rubs her wet crotch to my thighs.

"Ufufu...it's still hard"

She strokes my penis with her hand.

Gently stroking the glans with her fingers.

"Look...it's coming inside me!"

Looking down on my face, Yukino puts my penis on her own vagina.

"...I'm going to gobble you up!"

...Uuuu

My erect penis is being sucked in...

"...Ah, uuuun...Ufufufu, you're making a pleased face!"

Yukino tells me, showing a wicket smile

"Look, look...Ah, you frowned...you're feeling good inside me don't you...?!"

"Yukino's also looks so pleased...!"

"Well...I'm usually being violated by you. This time, I'm the one violating you...!"

Yukino swings her waist deeply!!

"...Aha...here, this part feels good! So good!"

Yukino bumps my penis on the point where she feels good.

"Here?!"

I grab Yukino's ass from below and thrust upwards.

It doesn't have that much meat but...it's a soft ass.

The tense feeling of this girl's butt is unbearable.

"That's right! It's not just good! Heree...ahn...Ufuuun!!"

Yukino dances naked above me lewdly.

The meat of her breasts shake around.

"Ah...aaaahn...aaaaah!"

Yukino puts her body down and wishes for my mouth.

"What? You want a kiss?!"

"I don't want your kiss...Y-Your tongue, I want your tongue. I want you to lick me. I want to suck your tongue! I want to make noises with it!"

Yukino's tongue plunges into my lips...

Deeper than kiss...a French Kiss.

Meanwhile...Yukino's waist moves up and down.

Ooh...Yukino's womb is wriggling.

It's sucking up my penis.

"...I hate you"

Yukino said as she lookd own on me with passionate eyes.

"...I hate you"

"...Is that so?"

"But, I...can't have sex with anyone but you...!"

Yukino's hand asks for mine.

Our hand's overlap.

Our hands hold each other.

"...I hate you, hate, Hate you so much!"

Yukino moves her waist intensely while keeping her straight gaze at me.

"I think that Yukino's quite cute...!"

Since our bodies are connected...

I've let out my real feelings.

"...I know that!"

...Yukino

"You like only my appearance, don't you?"

That's right...I

I can't accept Yukino's heart.

"I also like only your sex! I hate you other than sex! So much...!"

My penis grows bigger inside Yukino.

"...Y-Yukino...I'm about to...!"

"No...I'm about to cum already! Wait for a bit longer...!"

"Sure, I'll wait...so hurry...!"

The connection further heats up from being rubbed.

"You intend to cum inside me don't you...?"

"Yeah, I'm going to blow it all inside Yukino...!"

We seem to have become a single machine.

Yes...just like the old machines running on steam.

The piston continues roughly while releasing violent heat and moisture.

We bounce each other's bodies...

"Sure...cum as you want...!"

Yukino looks at me...

"Do you want to make me pregnant?"

"Yeah...I'm going to make you pregnant...!"

Yukino's spine trembles.

"Is that so?...Then I'll get pregnant...!"

"Your most hated man would get you pregnant with a child...!"

"I don't mind...if it's you"

...Yukino

"Really...I might not hate you that much...!"

Yukino herself is surprised by the words that spilled from her mouth.
Yukino's surprised.

"T-That was a lie...what I said just now was a lie...!"

The emotions inside me rises up...!

"Y-Yukino...I...!!!"

I-I can't endure it anymore...!

"N-No! I don't want to get pregnant with your child...! Pull out! Pull it out!!!"

Yukino's heart bursts...!
Tears fall down from her beautiful eyes.

"...Nope...I-I'm cumming...I'm cumming, Yukino...!"

"No, No, noooooo...don't ejaculate inside me!"

...I'm already cumming!

"...Aaaaaah, uuuuuuuuu!!!"

...Dobyu!

I release my sperm like a fountain inside Yukino's womb!

"Hooooooooot! My uterus is burning!!!!"

Opening her eyes wide, Yukino tells me the heat of being impregnated...!

With the intense thrusting...Yukino finally...

"Aaaah...Cumming! I'm also cumiiiiiiiiiiiiinggg!!!"

As if squeezing my dick...Yukino's body twitch on top of me!!

"Yukino...I'm still cumming...more...Yukinooo...!!!"

"I-I'm cumming...it's blowing inside meeeee...I...I...!!!"

Yukino's young body shivers while sweating.

Yukino's hot tears drop into my chest.

"I'm getting impregnated...I'm cumming while being impregnated...!!!!"

Our hands...

Are clinging to each other strongly...

...One

We're completely one

Yukino's the machine to be impregnated and I'm the machine to impregnate...

We have united.

"...Aaaaah...aaaaaaahn...iyaaaaaa...!!!"

Yukino sings a cry of agony...

Then, Yukino's body falls into me...

"...Hiii, hiii, haa, haa, haa, haa..."

I can feel Yukino's breath with my face

The two of us are sweaty all over.

When I try to embrace Yukino and kiss her again.

"...I-I don't want a kiss"

Yukino said, but she can't refuse my kiss with her weak body...

Yukino and I kiss...and lick each other's tongues.

"It felt really good...Yukino"

I speak my impressions.

"Isn't that obvious...it's my body you know..."

Yukino answers while breathing roughly.

"...L-Lick my nape...my breasts"

"...What?"

Yukino begs me with her hot entranced eyes.

"The fire in my body doesn't settle down. Calm it down...it's your fault...!"

"Sure..."

I lick Yukino's nape while still inside her.

Her sweat is salty.

I massage her breasts...

Yukino's breasts remain tense from excitement.

I lick up her pointing nipples.

"Aah...I'm melting. I'm melting like ice..."

Yukino's body is pleased by the gentle afterplay.

The fire of pleasure inside Yukino's body hasn't disappeared yet...

"U-Uhm...I don't think it's timely to ask but;"

Kouzuki Kenshi asks from the audience.

"What?!"

Yukino replies as she raise her body from me.

It seems that her shame has flown away from the climax of sex.

"What kind of relationship you two have?"

...I see.

For Kouzuki Kenshi, I'm Misuzu's partner.

Yukino's a daughter of Shirasaka hose.

"Just sefure...!"

Yukino answered.

"...Sefure?"

"That's right, Sex Friend!"

Saying that, Yukino looks at my face again.

"Is that so...Yukino?"

When I asked, Yukino...

"No...it's different"

Yukino pats my face gently.

"We're not even friends..."

That's right...we are.

"Our relationship is...sex?...What's that?"

"I'm just the rapist and Yukino's the victim...isn't that how it is?"

I said while embracing her.

"That won't do...I already want to have sex with you..."

Yukino turns her hand on my back...

"Really, we don't understand..."

Yukino lightly bumps her forehead against mine.

...A gentle head-butt.

"Fufufufu...that's quite an interesting spectacle!"

Miss Cordelia stands up.

"Who are you two...even though you're still brats, you're enjoying such rich sex...!"

Miss Cordelia seems to be surprised by our intense sex
Well...we're still first year high school students.

She must be planning to laugh at us ridiculing, forcing us to have sex with threats, making us cry and scream.

That's how adults have sex...

"...You're the one who wanted to see a sex show"

I answered as I slowly raise my body

"You're right...looks like I've underestimated a man from a prostitution organization. I reflect on that"

No...that's wrong.

This expression...

Miss Cordelia is clearly puzzled.

This must be her first time having a man and woman do violent sex.

That's right, she is a person from the underground society, but...

Her work is unrelated to sex...!

"B-But, that was a wonderful sex show. I praise you for that...!"

Still, miss Cordelia tries to pretend composure.

That is this person's pride and complex.

She unconsciously put the handgun aside and clap at us.

...Oh

The white Viola who's aiming their guns at us have their guards lowered.

...That's when;

The[Opportunity]was made!

"...Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

In an instant...Michi emits a strong[Qi]

"...W-What!?"

The people in the theater unintentionally paid attention to Michi's[Qi]
Us, miss Cordelia, her subordinates...

They incidentally looked at Michi's eyes!

...At that moment

"...Shingetsu!"

Michi captures the[Qi]of everyone...!!!

Fierce Battle Arc／Miss Edie

Chapter 318. Edie (Part 1)

"...Shingetsu!"

Michi's hands grab the empty space and pulls it to herself!
Everyone who had their[Qi]captured moved matching with the movement of her hand!

...Uwa!

Including Yukino and me...we fall in front!
My whole body's strength falls out and I can't even exert effort on my hands.
My whole body's numb as if it's shocked electrically.
This is Michi's full power[Shingetsu]?

"...Ooh!"

"...noo!"

The white Viola drop their guns.
The guns fall under the stage of the spectators seat in the theater.

"...W-What's this?!"

Miss Cordelia tries to reach out for her gun in a hurry, but...
Her body's numb, unable to grab the gun.
The pistol struck by her numb falls into the spectator seats.

...Karakarakaran!

...As expected.

She must've watched Michi show the[Shingetsu]to Kudou-papa through the surveillance camera, but...

She doesn't know the actual state of the technique manipulating the[Qi]as she's not on the actual site.

Michi said before that she can't read the[Qi]through videos...

Therefore, I knew that miss Cordelia doesn't know the true horror of[Shingetsu] ...!

"We're escaping! Master!"

Michi shouts.

"...Yeah"

I put strength in my body.
I forcibly raise my numb body!

"Let's go, Yukino!"

I grabbed the clothes I took off and put aside.
At worst, I can take at least my underwear!
I grabbed the hand of the naked Yukino and jumped off the stage.

"H-hey...!"

Yukino's body is still staggering.

"If you don't want to die then come with me!"

I shouted

"Nei-onee-sama! Let's go!"

Michi tells Nei-san

"I-I..."

Nei-san's body seems to be numb.

"Onesama...please! Stand up!"

"Ah...Y-Yeah...Mi-chan!"

Nei-san summons her[elder sister]power, and stands up...!

"Wait...You can't escape!"

Miss Cordelia desperately tries to stand up...!

...Michi

"...Eiyaaaaaa!!!"

She throws[Shingetsu]to miss Cordelia once again...!

"Ugyaaa...!!!"

Miss Cordelia's a strong enemy.

If she was in battle mode from the start, she won't lose to Michi's[Qi]that easily
If she knew the technique's contents...and predict it in advance, she could've
endured it well.

She's able to completely erase her presence...then she'll surely be able to ward
off, block Michi's[Qi]

But, miss Cordelia right now is...

Her heart is shaken from our sex show.

Michi grasped the[gap]in her heart.

"This way!"

Michi points at the exit door...

When Seki-san was looking at the map of the hotel, Michi was watching from
the side and memorizing.

Of course...this floor and this small theater too...!

"Wait...stop right there...I'll kill you people!"

We rush out of the theater door as we listen to miss Cordelia's frustrated
voice.



"This door!"

Michi opens the door following the back passage for the employees.

"Please run...faster!"

"Yeah"

I hold Yukino...Michi holds Nei-san's hand as we run!

My other hand is carrying my clothes.

I'm not wearing any footwear...I don't have time to wear one.

Yukino and I run naked...!

"We'll turn this corner!"

Michi leads us without hesitation.

"There...!"

...Shuba!

Michi's red whip destroys the surveillance cameras near the ceiling.

...I see, this is the back aisle for the employees.

This hotel is built specifically for counterterrorism, so the inside's are filled with surveillance cameras.

But...that's only the main passageway from the outside which is open to the public.

Normally, when the enemy attacks and they put down the fire doors, making the inside a maze, it seems that the back passages are designed to be sealed.

But, compared to the public routes, the number of surveillance cameras are overwhelmingly small...the camera itself is not cleverly hidden on the walls and the ceiling as the public ones. They're exposed.

If there's a camera, then it's shown clearly.

The reason miss Cordelia was able to move freely in this hotel might be because they came through this back passages.

If there's a specific door on each floor on the front passage to the back passage and you have an access key to that door...then you can act elusively

"Michi...was the employee's passage map also in the data Seki-san was looking at?"

"Yes, there was. I completely remembered it!"

For him to disclose that far...

Chief Yazawa...

Of course, it should be chief Yazawa who led miss Cordelia in...

There's no doubt that miss Cordelia and chief Yazawa are doing some transaction

But...Seki-san has been shown the map with the back passages at the 2505 terminal...

Doesn't he intend to make us fight miss Cordelia?

Is he aiming for us to crush each other?

"Haaaa!!!"

Michi destroys the other camera again.

"...This way!"

A few more turns and camera's destroyed.

Then...Michi stopped in front of a fire alarm's red door.

"...Michi?"

"This fire alarm is genuine but the red door is a fake...!"

...A fake?

Michi opens the red door which is about a meter high from the floor.

Normally, there should be a fire hose or something, but...

Inside the door...is another door.

Furthermore, it has a ten key electronic lock and a hand print sensor.

"I'm Misuzu-sama's guard therefore I'm familiar with the location of VIP use emergency evacuation rooms on each floor of the hotel"

Michi pushes keys while speaking

"The basement room is dedicated for[Kakka] I wasn't informed of that room. Though it won't have that much defense as the basement...this will only be a temporary room"

Yeah...if it's Jii-chan's room then other people won't notice it, but...

If it's just a VIP evacuation room...chief Yazawa and miss Cordelia should know

it too

But...I want a place where I can take a break for now.

Taking in Michi's[Shingetsu]...I ran as if I'm struck by the lightning.

My body's tired.

Yukino and Nei-san are also exhausted...

"I'm sorry...I was aiming at miss Cordelia and her team when releasing my[Qi]but...in that occasion, everyone was forced to be involved"

Michi speaks, understanding what's in my mind.

"Don't mind it...we were surrounded by enemies. There's no other choice. Michi did well"

Yeah...

Instead of only one person, all of the opponents have guns at their hand.

Since she released her[Qi]at all directions...

Even we have taken in the[Shingetsu], and for our body to receive this much shock...

If Michi sends her full force[Shingetsu]on a one-on-one fight, the opponent may die of shock

This is what it's like having your mind and body robbed of control even for a moment.

Somehow...my whole body's blood flow is forcibly stopped, flowed backwards... such a violent impact echoes through my body...

"...Pipi!"

After entering the PIN, Michi puts her right hand on the sensor.

"...Approved!"

A machine voice responds...and the door is unlocked.

As Misuzu's guard...Michi's registration isn't removed.

Chief Yazawa's intention is getting even more vague.

"L-Let's hurry up and get in"

The naked Yukino speaks trembling.

...Then

"...Who's there?"

Michi turns to the[Qi]she felt

"Eh...no way, Kouzuki Kenshi?"

Yukino said

Sorry...Kouzuki Kenshi

We completely forgot your existence.

"Wrong...the[Qi]is different..."

The one revealing oneself from the corner of the corridor is...

A black combat clothes...?

Miss Cordelia's subordinate?

"Get behind me...!"

Michi goes in front.

She clench her red whip...

"Walking that steadily...could it be that[Shingetsu]didn't work?"

"There's no way that's the case...miss Cordelia's two subordinates dropped their guns. Their body function should be degraded for a while. It's unlikely they can follow us...!"

Miss Cordelia and her two subordinate.

The white, female Viola and Rosalind

...No

"There's another person under miss Cordelia..."

The fourth person in black combat clothes.

If I recall...miss Cordelia called her ED...

...Then

[ED]raised her right hand to us...

Then...she spoke

".....Good Evening ! ! ""

...Guddo ibuningu?

I don't think there's anything good that happened tonight.

...No, wait a moment?

Just now...

Wasn't it a woman's voice?

ED on her black combat clothes removed her goggles and black mask.

A spread out milky blonde bob cut hair.

And...brown skin.

Big...blue eyes.

The brown blonde girl smiled and speak to us.

"Hello...I'm[Edie]! Nice to meet you!"

...W-What?

From there...Neo-san who understands English speaks to us.

If I recall, Michi can talk English too?

"Somehow...She's saying[I'm not an enemy, I want to be friends], what to to, Yo-chan?

Nei-san asks me with a tired expression.

"Her[Qi]isn't hostile to us..."

Michi reads Edie's[Qi]

"Can we even believe her?"

But...she's miss Cordelia's subordinate. Look.

"This one is quite skilled. Besides, it seems that she wasn't affected by[Shingetsu]..."

...Does that mean?

"I'm not confident that I can protect everyone while fighting her...!"

Michi's expression is stiff.

"Err, you see, to summarize what this girl is saying..."

Nei-san tells us.

"Mi-chan's skill is the same as her grandmother's skill, she felt affinity with it. She thought that it's amazing for a girl the same age as her can do it...she's very impressed so she wants to make friends with Mi-chan...what to do?"

This girl's grandmother used[Shingetsu]?

Therefore, she had resistance to the technique?

When Michi first amass her[Qi]and gathered our attention...she closed her heart with with all her strength?

"[Qi]techniques are all over the world. Originally, humans are a group of creatures capable of spiritually linking with other individuals. That's what tuning of[qi]does...it is the same as training your spirit to reach a place just like martial arts and religious ceremonies...

Then there's techniques like[Shingetsu]even if it's not Kudou style

"Let's accept her...Michi"

"...Master"

Nei-san's fatigue is severe.

Nei-san is a person who usually hides her heart so...

The damage done by[Shingetsu]to her would be bigger than the others.

She ran at full power in that state.

There's no blood running on her lips.

Yukino's also a little less energetic.

"You're right, Yo-chan..."

Nei-san said.

"Besides, it's reassuring to have her as an ally"

True...it's an outstanding talent to endure[Shingetsu]

But, this girl was brought by miss Cordelia.

At this stage, I don't know what kind of secrets she has.

...But

"Anyway...let's get inside"



I bend my back and enter the small evacuation room's door.

It's a four tatami mat room.

There's only chairs and lockers for emergency supplies.

When everyone got in...Michi closed the thick door.

With this, it now looks like an ordinary fire alarm outside...

Since we destroyed the nearby cameras, they would know that we're hiding around this area, but...

They won't know where we are specifically for a while

...That's for miss Cordelia's case.

Chief Yazawa would probably notice but there's no choice but to bet on the subtleness of the relationship between him and miss Cordelia.

"Here, water"

I found a water bottle from the locker and handed it to Nei-san

"Thanks, Yo-chan..."

Nei-san looks like she doesn't have the strength to open the bottle lid so I do it instead.

Meanwhile, Michi looked for the cameras and microphones inside the room and destroyed them.

"This should be fine"

Yeah...it's helpful to be able to speak without worrying about being heard.

"Here, Michi"

I handed Michi a bottle too.

...Also

Miss Edie too

".....Thank You ! "

Miss Edie smiled then said something to Nei-san

"...What is it?"

"Err, she said. [Hurry up and get dressed, it's embarrassing]"

Oh right.

I completely got used to being naked in public.

It might be a bad development

"Hey you, what were you doing?!"

What...Yukino?

"You didn't take any of my clothes!"

Yukino also ran away naked after sex.
It seems that I only looked for the clothes I wore...
...Huh?
The only one's I brought are my shirt, underwear, trousers...and one sock
Yukino's clothes are completely forgotten

"...I thought to have at least my underwear on"

Yeah...that's why I got my own underwear which is close around.

"Why did you forget about my panties?!"

Yukino screams...Michi then replied with;

"...You should carry your own stuff. It's your fault for not taking any"

"I didn't have the time for that!"

Yukino tries to complain to Michi...

"We still don't have time even now. If you're going to make a noise then get out. Naked..."

"...Guh"

Yukino fell silent, losing to Michi's atmosphere.

"Err...anyway, I'll wear my briefs and pants. So, Yukino can wear my T-shirt.
Oh...do you want to wear the socks too?"

"I don't want to wear your socks! Furthermore, it's just one piece!"

Yukino. When it's me, she can just retort with all her mind.

"...I'll borrow you at least the shirt then"

And...I'm naked on my upper body and bare feet.
Somehow...I look like someone who was lost in Amazon's unexplored region
Yukino's...on naked and shirt only...

"But still...we just left Kouzuki Kenshi behind"

"It can't be helped. It's too late to go back and take him"

Yukino said coldy

"But...I wonder if he's okay"

Miss Cordelia should be angry that we ran away.

It's fine as long as his limbs aren't torn apart, but.

"He's fine. Didn't he say it from the start? He mentioned that he's unrelated to you people, that he's not your ally"

Yukino drinks the mineral water.

"You don't have any obligation to come back for him...and he doesn't have any information where we escaped"

That's certainly true, but.

"Then, won't he be the punching bag of miss Cordelia's anger and experience horrible things?"

"He'll make it barely alive I guess? That guy's a member of Kouzuki house after all. It was a good choice for him to name himself. He can't be used as hostage for you but he can be a good card for Kouzuki house, don't you think?"

"But...Kouzuki Kenshi's father betrayed the Kouzuki house"

"Idiot...the one who betrayed Kouzuki house made a deal with that girl, right?"

Oh right.

Kouzuki Kenshi's father...Kouzuki Noboru negotiated something with miss Cordelia.

"If he's the son of the contract partner then he won't be killed. Maybe"

Maybe, is all I can say but...miss Cordelia's cruel.

We can only pray for Kouzuki Kenshi's safety for now.

"Ahn...!"

The bottle slipped from Yukino's hand and water spilled.

"That girl's skill is too effective...my hands are still numb!"

Yukino opens and closes the palm of her hand.

"The shirt got wet"

Ah...her nipples are transparent

"Is there a towel or something?"

"Let me take a look"

I check inside the locker.

"There's a medical gauze"

"That'll do, gimme"

"Poi"

I hand over the gauze, Yukino wipes the shirt...

"This is no good at all..."

She bends her body while wearing only a T-shirt.

"Y-You, that posture, be careful...if you move a bit your ass would be exposed"

"I don't care about that anymore"

Even though she's been complaining about having nothing to wear.
When she got a piece of clothing, she got this composure.

"Rather...your stuff is dripping"

...What?

Looking at it, white semen drips from Yukino's thighs

"Geez...there's no helping it"

Yukino spread her legs and wiped the semen
Her arousal hasn't subsided yet...her slit remains open...
I can see the pink color inside

"Yukino, you, that..."

"What? I'm already used to this. I've seen this before a lot already"

Well, true...she's right.
But, having her slit peeping out from the bottom of her naked shirt...is quite fresh and sexy

"...I'll take off my underwear so please take a look at me too"

...M-Michi?

Michi comes in between us.

"I'm a bit jealous"

What...about what?

"Master...why are you so close with Shirasaka Yukino-sama?"

What, close?

Me and Yukino?

"I'll do anything...so please treat me closely like her"

Michi kneels in front of me.

"OH ! SAMURAI ! HAKIRI ? ! "

No, miss Edie.

It's not that Michi's going to seppuku.

"Michi, raise your head. You can't be more close by doing that"

"Then, what should I do?"

Michi looks up.

"Mi-chan...Yo-chan and Yukino-san are just not holding back at each other"

Nei-san smiles gently

"...Holding back?"

"Yo-chan's kind so he's caring about everyone you see? But, he doesn't have those feelings towards Yukino-san. Therefore, they look like they're getting along because they're not holding back but...I think that the bonds of the heart is better for Mi-chan"

"Is that so?"

Michi answers with a serious face.

"But...I'm frustrated. Uneasy. I feel sad"

"...Michi, come here"

I call Michi

"Yes... Master?"

Michi comes to me.

"Here, Michi...!"

I embrace Michi and pat her head.

"...Master"

"If you're sad then come at me anytime"

"Yes...please hold me tighter"

"Sure"

I embrace Michi tightly

"But, I think that it's a good thing that Michi speaks such things without putting up with it. You can depend on me more"

"...Is that okay?"

"Yeah, Michi doesn't need to hold back from me"

Michi looks up at me with her big eyes...

"Please have sex with me like the one from a while ago"

What...Michi wants to head-butt too?

"Do you not want it...?"

"No, I want to have sex with Michi but no head-butts"

"...Master?"

"I don't want to see a dent on Michi's cute forehead..."

I kiss Michi's forehead.

"It's okay to head-butt me...please release master's sexual desire on me"

"...Michi"

"I want to be an outlet of Master's libido. I want to be done violently...!"

This small body of a third year middle school girl stiffens in my arms...

"Sure. If I feel like it next time then I'll push Michi down..."

"Yes...I'll be waiting..."

Michi smiles.

Chapter 319. Edie (Part 2)

"...Err, I'll summarize what this girl is saying okay!"

Nei-san tells us.

Or rather...Michi can understand English so only me and Yukino needs an actual explanation

"This girl's name is Edie Sexton She was born in an underground society from near New Orleans"

Miss Edie smiles at us.

Milky blond hair and brown skin...beautiful big blue eyes.

".....The glove"

Miss Edie's plump lips whispers.

It seems that's the name of the organization.

"Glove means[手袋]in Japanese. They got the name from leaving no fingerprints when they kill a person. How should I say it...[The glove]is an organization that's like an assassination cult"

"...What's an assassination cult?"

I asked.

"...They're originally a dangerous religious association who assassinates those who are hostile to their religion. From there, various assassination methods were born, and the organization supplies assassins on the underground society"

Michi answered.

"America's got surprising amount of religious groups that has chaotic doctrines...generally, they exist on secret societies Furthermore, those kind of absurd organizations have been going on for hundreds of years..."

Nei-san said

"Anyway, Edie says that[The glove]is an[Assassin Guild] It's not precisely an assassination cult, it may be an assassin union but...I don't know the details

about it. Maru-chan may know a lot about it but...anyway, there's a community that trains assassin's in the outskirts of New Orleans, and she was born there it seems"

This cute girl was raised as an assassin?

"From her story...[The Glove]originally was a group of of slaves from the south America rebelled against the domination of the white people, forming an assassination group. Their roots are from the Africa's traditional martial arts but it seems that they've mixed with various martial arts after being brought to US. It seems that they were a devout Christians and thought that they're the religious knights in the US"

Michi explains miss Edie's story.

"But, that's the story of the organization's foundation...afterwards, they seem to have contracted assassinations from both the American public authority and the underground society of US. Since it's a special secret society, there's no thought of greatly expanding the organization, it seems that they're only thinking of the organization's existence that they responded to requests of unprincipled murders"

Nei-san said.

"Besides, the creed of the organization changes through age. Especially it seems that due to the influence of the post war counter culture, it seems that they adapted Orient-thoughts. That matter feels like America but...they change the organization, embracing the trend of each era"

"As for the technique using the[Qi], it would seem that it originally a traditional martial arts in Africa but, it's completely forgotten...her grandmother had succeeded in studying and recreating oriental martial arts"

Miss Edie nods.

She somehow understood what we're talking about it seems.

"Edie's grandmother was one of the leaders of [The glove]but she died at the beginning of this year. Then, the current boss of[The glove]hates Edie...so she was sold to Cesario Viola's organization

"Sold?"

"Yeah...she was bought with money. But, Edie herself doesn't care at all"

Edie talks to Nei-san and Michi happily in English

"Edie's grandmother sticks to the old fashioned thought of going to the enemy and killing them through hand-on-hand combat assassination techniques. However, the current boss of the organization thinks that approaching with a car and a machine gun is faster...in order to deny the traditional assassination technique, he drive out Edie who took over her grandmother's skills directly"

"Before her grandmother died, she was ordered to[Go and train on the outside world] Therefore[Even if the boss of the organization sold me and received money, that doesn't matter to me. In the first place, he has no right to sell me. I am free]she says"

I see...Miss Cordelia bought Edie using money so she treats her like a slave. But, mis Edie just follows the intended[training]and she thinks that she's free... But...an organization born in defiance of slavery selling a girl on the modern age...

The people who founded the organization would be crying under their graves.

"It seems that it's only last month she was taken under miss Cordelia. but, she seems to be dissatisfied with Edie all the time"

...Dissatisfied?

"She acknowledges miss Cordelia's physical ability but she's not training at all...she said. Or rather, there's nobody in the organization of Cesario Viola having qualities for her to train with"

Miss Edie happily tells Michi something

"...What?"

Michi hesitates to speak

"What's the matter?"

I asked, Nei-san...

"She looked at Mi-chan and thought...[I'm sure I can have a good training with her] Therefore she abandoned miss Cordelia and came to us. That's all"

...Does that mean?

《How old are you ?》

Miss Edie asks Michi

《Fifteen》

《...Really?》

She's surprised that Michi's 15 years old.

"[I'm 16 years old. Why is someone younger than me can use the same technique as my grandmother's?]She asks"

"I'm the successor of Kudou style ancient martial arts"

Michi and miss Edie gets excited talking about Kudou style ancient martial arts

"In the end...this girl's seeking assassination techniques"

Nei-san says while looking at miss Edie.

"She seems to be interested in only raising her assassination techniques"

Hmm...

If it's sports or martial arts then tht's fine, but...

Assassination techniques is just...

"NO, that's not it...it's like this"

Michi stands up and shows her martial art form to miss Edie

《OH! Excellent!》

Edie watches as if she got hooked,

"What... Aren't these girls similar?"

Yukino said

"In the end, that girl just wanted a friend, doesn't she?"

...Friend

For miss Edie who's only interested in improving her assassination techniques, Michi's probably the first person she studies that's on the same age.

That's the same for Michi.

Michi is also too special that she doesn't have friends.

Misuzu and I are her masters...

Mana and Ruriko of the same age are making walls.

I think that even Michi needs a close friend.

"Michi...do you think you can be friends with miss Edie?"

I asked.

"...Master?"

"I'm asking whether you two can practice together and improve each other"

Michi looks at my face sternly...

"If that's an order then I will do so...!"

"That's not it. I'm asking if it's fun to practice with miss Edie"

"...Fun?"

Michi shows a puzzled expression

"The training of Kudou style ancient martial arts is tough. I never felt it like being fun...!"

Michi still seeks her way.

"Yo-chan doesn't mean it like that. Try to have a bout with Edie for a bit. The room is small so be careful"

Nei-san tells Michi

She tells miss Edie something in English too

《...Off Course!》

Miss Edie smiles.

She stand up and face Michi.

"...Here I come"

Michi bows then takes a stance.

Miss Edie too.

Edie is the taller one...

"Haa, ha, ha, haa!"

Michi rushes with her fist.

"Hashu, shu, shushushu!"

Miss Edie skillfully handles Michi's fists.
Next, is the change of offence and defence.
Miss Edie attacks and Michi defends.
Yeah...the way they throw their fists are completely different.
Is this the difference between schools?

"I'm raising the gear!"

As soon as she switched to offence, Michi's movement changed.
Kudou style's peculiar...movement to bend the enemy[Qi]!

《woow ! ! ! 》

Though miss Edie's expression turned rugged...she matched with Michi's movement.

Another change of stance.

This time, miss Edie attacks Michi with an irregular rhythm.

"I think this is the traditional assassinations done by[the glove] It's a technique that always attacks from the opponent's blind spot!"

Nei-san said

Nei-san had been watching Kyouko-san and Margo-san's training all the time.
She's got some deep knowledge in martial arts.

"...lyahaa!"

At that moment...Michi's voice roars.

Going through the opponent's skill...

Michi's fist stops immediately before miss Edie's face.

"It seems that Mi-chan is ahead in the power of reading the[Qi]now"

Nei-san's words, Michi...

"No...she's more physically trained. I can't beat her with a blow"

Even if she pierces the gap in the[Qi]she won't be able to take down miss Edie in one shot...

In short...at present, it's 50-50.

《...Great!》

Miss Edie hugs Michi in delight.
She said something in English, fast

"Edie is very happy. She's saying[I might've been born to meet you!]!"

Nei-san translates.

"Our techniques are completely different. Therefore, if we train and absorb each other's skills...we can both become stronger I think"

Michi says while wiping her sweat with a handkerchief.

"It's not "I think"...Michi wants to do it, right?"

I ask Michi of her will

"If Master allows me then...by all means"

Michi seems to have liked miss Edie.
Miss Edie's expression shows enough.

"Then invite miss Edie... To our house..."

"...House?"

"Michi's house is mine. Isn't that right?...!"

...Michi

She happily answered.

"Yes. I won't leave your side!"

"Then...have miss Edie come to our house as Michi's practice companion. Miss Edie can stay if she wants...tell her that"

"Yeah. I'm the one going to ask Sensei. I think that Maru-chan and Katsun would welcome her!"

Nei-san said.

Michi talks to miss Edie in English

"She said...[I'd be happy to stay]"

Michi and miss Edie shakes hands.
They talk about something more.

"Edie...didn't suit with miss Cordelia at all. Miss Cordelia...is a lesbian"
"...What?"

"Therefore, miss Cordelia's subordinates are all women. Miss Cordelia bought Edie who's been sold by her organization...she liked this girl it seems"

Nei-san translates miss Edie's talk.
She talks more.

"Miss Cordelia seems to have made her candidate for the next generation of Viola"

The next generation...Viola

"At first it was only going to be a spare Rosalind but...since the combat capability, shouldn't we make her the new Viola? That's what miss Cordelia advised the organization's boss"

"As expected...there's many Cesario Viola and an organization manages it..."

Using the same name[Cesario Viola]...multiple people commits a number of crimes.

It's that kind of organization.

"That's how it is. It seems that miss Cordelia was going to slowly raise her over time. While at it, it seems that she's intending to turn her to a lesbian partner. That's why she brought Edie to her business trip in Japan. She's just a visitor...!"

Yeah...with this...

I now understand why miss Edie didn't participate when miss Cordelia attacked us.

Currently, miss Edie and miss Cordelia and her people aren't cooperating in the battle.

Or rather...she doesn't feel like entering under miss Cordelia's command from the beginning

Even if they take time training her, it's impossible to work together.

Well, she's a girl who grew up in an assassination organization...if you make ordinary orders like "care-taking" or "man the answer machine, she should obey as she was bought...

Therefore, miss Cordelia misunderstood her as a submissive girl.

But...miss Edie thought that she's free.

As for the most important battle...she doesn't feel like following miss Cordelia

at all.

So, she left miss Cordelia, and came to us to become friends with Michi...

...Haa

This girl's a troublesome one.

There's no doubt that she's an outstanding talent.

"Above all, she doesn't like miss Cordelia calling him[ED]"

Michi said.

Right. Why did miss Cordelia call her[ED]?

Michi blushed from what miss Edie said

"...Err, that"

"Miss Cordelia seems to be ridiculing Edie's name being the same as ED That's why she's calling her[ED]"

Nei-san explains instead of the mumbling Michi

"ED? Why is she being made fun with that?"

"Well you see...ED means"

Looking at the embarrassed Michi...miss Edie says;

《.....Erectile Dysfunction》

"Erekutorikku paredo?"

Miss Edie bursts out laughing from my reply.

"That's not it, Yo-chan...《Erectile Dysfunction》is 《Impotenz》"

"Eh...What's[important]?"

"...[Important]?"

"I know that much English at least. It's 《important》, isn't it?"

"Wrong, Yo-chan...it's《Impotenz》!"

"...Import?"

"Even more wrong! 《Impotenz》you see is inpo, inpo! It means that your penis won't get erect!"

"Eh, 《important》 has that meaning?"

"That's not it, not《important》we're talking about《Impotenz》!"

I don't know what's what anymore.

"What are you talking about?"miss Edie looks at us with that face...Michi

explains embarrassed in English

Miss Edie laughs out loud.

"You're an idiot beyond saving"

Yukino looks at me with an amazed expression.

I've got no objection to that but...I don't want to be told by that by Yukino.

"Miss Edie shows interest in Yo-chan"

...What?

"She was talking about what you did with Yukino-san earlier..."

...Err

What I did with Yukino...wasn't that only sex?

Wait...no way?

Nei-san asks further.

"Hmm. It seems that this girl doesn't know anything about sex"

Miss Edie is smiling as usual.

"The organization[The glove], where she stayed with, seems to have many religious precepts. The male and female living quarters are completely separated. They're not allowed to talk to men on their own until they're married...you can only marry someone that's been instructed by the organization. They seem to be fundamentalist"

Speaking of which, this girl hasn't talked to me directly until now.

Well, the bigger reason is me unable to understand English

"Is she still bound by that precept?"

Nei-san asks my question in English

"You see...Edie is no longer bound by those precepts. When she's sold by[The glove], it seems she's treated as a[heretic]from the organization. Therefore, she can't come back to New Orleans again. Instead, she doesn't need to follow their precepts, but..."

Miss Edie says something further.

"Sorry...it's not that she's not abiding the precepts...she can't. It seems that in

the organization, the religious superior oversees the subordinate's on everything in their daily life. It seems that they have to always the words of the superiors, that's the basis of the precepts"

I see...they're ordered until they marry.

"...If you go outside the organization, you have to decide everything yourself. To decide anything by will is against the precepts but...she has to live alone with no superiors around"

I see...I understood why it's supposed to be[heresy]to leave the organization at that stage.

"In Edie's case...it seems that her grandmother was her supervisor since then. Then, it seems that the grandmother who died has a higher position religiously than the current boss., So...Edie doesn't have the duty to obey the boss' order"

Hating the existence that remains in the organization...

The boss sold off miss Edie.

Then, she was taken over by the lesbian, Miss Cordelia...

There's no way she can learn about sexual love between men and women.

"For her, the bond with her grandmother is more important than belonging to the organization. The last instruction of her grandmother, her[supervisor]was to[go outside of the organization]..."

Therefore, miss Edie seeks the way of assassination, but...

Yeah, I feel I understand this child.

No she said that she's 16 years old so she's the same age as me and Yukino

It's rude to say[this child]

"What do you think, Yo-cha...do you believe Edie?"

Nei-san asks me again

"Eh, isn't that obvious? Miss Edie has a really open personality"

Yeah...she's the opposite of Michi
She's always smiling and filled with emotions.
All of the emotions appear on her face.

"What does Mi-chan think?"

"She's not lying...she's trustworthy No. I trust her"

Michi said

For Michi, she might be the first friend.

"What does Yukino think?"

"What, me?"

Yukino's surprised when Nei-san asked for her opinion.

"Yeah, I want to ask Yukino-san's opinion"

Nei-san said clearly

Yukino...

"This girl doesn't do tricks. It's the so-called muscle-brain. She doesn't think that deeply"

Nei-san looks at miss Edie once again...

"If the three sensors evaluate as[safe]then it's okay to trust her"

I see, Nei-san is still...

Thinking of the possibility that miss Cordelia sent her as a spy.

"I can't think of any connection of this girl with Yazawa-san...if she's sent as a spy then her setting is too special. Besides, she didn't have any evil intend when she was having a bout with Mi-chan"

She was checking miss Edie's true intend by making her have a bout with Michi.

"Yeah...in that case, it's okay to contact Maru-chan now"

Nei-san seems to have waited until we can determine if miss Edie is on our side.

...But

"The communication device is bugged by miss Cordelia"

Miss Cordelia has the same device as ours.

"I know. But, there's no other choice. Maru-chan thinks that we're captured and heads to the theater earlier

Right.

They would be ambushed by miss Cordelia if this continues.

"The communication machine passes through the repeaters of the wall doesn't it? Therefore, if we communicate in this room...I think that the[Headquarters]where Yazawa-san is will find where we are. But, I think that Yazawa-san won't tell miss Cordelia..."

Thinking about the subtle relationship of miss Cordelia and Chief Yazawa... It seems that Nei-san intends to gamble on this.

"Eh, eh, eh, uhm...that's!?"

Michi who's been talking to miss Edie suddenly makes a loud voice.

"What's wrong...Michi?"

"U-Uhm...Master"

Michi looks at me with a confused face.

"I was talking about I have awakened[Shingetsu]thanks to Master embracing me...!"

"Why did you talk about that now/>"

"That's because I also want Edie-san to know Master's wonderfulness..."

No...Michi

I'm not a wonderful person at all

"Then...she"

Miss Edie shows an innocent smile as usual

"She says she want to do it too"

Want to do it too?...

Sex with me?!

Chapter 320. Slow Oriro

Michi speaks to miss Edie with a serious face.
I don't understand since it's english.

"[Sex is something that must be done by men and women who truly trust and love each other]She's saying...!"

Nei-san translates Michi's words.
Miss Edie looks at me with a surprised face.
Then, she asked Michi.
I can tell it even with my poor English ability
In short...she's asking《Is he your husband?》

《NO.....He is my Master ! 》

Masuta?...Oh[Master]
They continue to talk in fluent English

"Mi-chan says[He's the person I have decided to dedicate my life to serve.
Master has accepted me like that]"

The smile from miss Edie's face disappears due to Michi's serious attitude.

《sorry...》

Miss Edie apologized to Michi

"[I'm sorry for making a selfish offer even though I don't know your
relationship]the girl's apologizing"

What...miss Edie?
Is [Master]and[Serve with whole life]a problem for her?
Well, she's a girl who grew up from a mysterious assassination cult so her
common sense is different from us, but.
Miss Edie asks Nei-san this time.

"You see...she's asking my relationship with Mi-chan"

The milky blonde hair and brown skinned[assassin]beauty...

She came to us interested only with Michi.

Now that she's promised to be friends with Michi...she's gotten interested and Nei-san and I too.

"《We are[Family]》...Or rather, it's different in this case. It might be easier to say it's《sisterhood》"

"What's[Sister hood]?"

I asked unintentionally

"If you translate it directly, it would mean[sister group]...but for Christian with a spirit of fraternity, as soon as you reach a close relationship, you call each other[Brothers] [Hey, brother]or something like that"

Oh, I've seen those in movies.

"Then you see, the organization that has[everyone treats each other like brothers even though there's no blood relation]is called[Brotherhood] The females version would be[sisterhood]"

Yeah, that's how our Kuromori family feels like.

We're not a [family]connected by blood but we trust each other and unite.

"Or rather...Nei-san made the group named[sister's association]before, didn't you?"

"Yeah. That's actually referring to the[sisterhood]from the foreign countries. Ah, the[sister's association]is still alive. Mi-chan, join in too"

"...What is it?"

Michi turns to Nei-san.

"There's a[sister's association]of women who love Yo-chan. The members are, Katsun, Nagisa-san, me, Mii-chan, Megu-chan and Mana-chan. The enrollment condition is that you love Yo-chan. There's no annual fee so don't worry..."

"If Misuzu-sama is a member then I will join in as well"

Michi replies immediately

"Okay!"

Miss Edie looks at Michi and Nei-san and asks something like[what are you talking about]?

Nei-san answered...[We're a sisterhood]

I somehow figured that out.

Miss Edie asks Nei-san[Are you her sister?]

"Mi-chan...I can be Mi-chan's oneesan?"

Michi look at me who's her master.

"Nei-san is my Oneesan. Therefore, Michi should think of Nei-san as her own sister too"

"Yes...Master"

Michi looks at Nei-san once again...

"I may be an inexperienced[sister]but please guide me...!"

With this, Michi officially becomes Nei-san's[little sister]...

Yeah, these two's relationship is subtle so I hope they get along after this.

Miss Edie speaks to Michi again

...She's looking at Yukino?

"What's up?"

"You see...she's asking if Yukino-san is also a sister? Mi-chan denied it. Then, she asked[What kind of relationship they have?]Mi-chan answered[I don't know well]"

True...Yukino's not in[family]nor[sister's association]

Far from her relationship with Nei-san and Michi...

Even her relationship with me is unknown.

"[But, isn't she very intimate with your《Master》?]Edie said,[But, I don't know what I don't know]Mi-chan answered[That's a bit worrying then]Edie comforts her..."

Hmm...Somehow, I'm sorry for a lot of things.

Even I don't know what kind of judgement should I make for Yukino...it's hopeless as of present.

What's an[腐れ縁]...in English?

"Edie's asking Mi-chan if she can call her[Sister]too"

...What?

"Since she's going to be a practice companion...she would like to call her sister by all means. Well, I think she's just expressing her affection"

"Master...?"

"If Michi's fine with it I don't mind?"

Michi smiles...

[Got it, I will be calling you sister Michi from now on. You can call me Sister Edie too]is what they're saying...I think

Miss Edie looks at me and Nei-san

"[If you're my sister's elder sister, then you're my elder sister too]but...she's saying that Yo-chan won't be her master"

Nei-san explains

Well...even if she's Michi's sister, it's not that she's entered our[family]

In the first place...I'd be troubled if a girl I just met calls me[Master]

"[But, since you are sister Michi's master I pay you the utmost respect]she said...!"

"What does she mean by that...?"

Nei-san talks to miss Edie.

"She promised to protect us from miss Cordelia's pursuit"

Oh...inside miss Edie's head...

Becoming friends with Michi and and saving all of us with Michi from a crisis is a different thing until now...

Michi has the same power as herself so she thinks that she can naturally survive miss Cordelia's attack.

Whatever happens to us who are with her...is something she's not particularly interested in.

"Perhaps...the word sisterhood moved Edie's heart"

Nei-san tells me.

"I think that the idea of[brotherhood]also existed in the assassination cult she belonged to. I can't say that everyone in the organization must help each other's[brother]but; Yo-chan and I are special existence to her new sister Mi-chan...Edie thinks of us as people to protect"

Well, that's thankful but...

What about Yukino then?

From what Michi has shown to Edie...it has become clear that she doesn't think anything about Yukino...

"Michi...tell her to help Yukino too"

"...Master"

Michi looks a bit unpleasant.

Yukino stares at me.

"Won't it leave bad taste in your mouth if only Yukino dies?"

"...Yes"

Michi tells miss Edie something

《OK...I see.》

Miss Edie's convinced.

"What did you say?"

"She's an important livestock of master so we don't want her to die..."

"Hey, what livestock!"

Yukino rejects.

"Please realize that right now, you're living right now because Master is fond of you...!"

Michi said coldly.

"You could've been left with Kouzuki Kenshi-san in that place. Realize that...!"

Seriously...why is all my[women]so harsh with Yukino?

Well...I can understand their feelings however.

"Anyway...you're livestock. Lower than a pet. If you aren't quiet then you'll be punished by a whip in your big ass...do you understand!!"

Michi who's calm on everything, hates to expose her emotions...doesn't hide her expression of anger against Yukino.

Miss Edie laughs as she look at Michi.

She really thinks of Michi as her friend.

With the small bout earlier...miss Edie also knows that Michi is a reliable partner.

She's completely opening up her heart.

Or rather, this girl doesn't feel any guilt about betraying miss Cordelia...

She's completely resolute.

This way of thinking must be truly American.

"With that done...we should have Edie meet up with Maru-chan and Seki-san sooner"

Nei-san said

"It's unknown how far does Edie know about miss Cordelia's plan but she's supposed to have received some instructions"

I see...we can understand the[enemy]movements

"I won't understand it even if I ask but...Maru-chan and Seki-san would discover some hints even if Edie talks only a little"

Wait...what about Reika?

Thinking about it...

Reika's a pure combat person...

Only Margo-san and Seki-san can take troop commands and strategy planning

"Sink or swim...we've got to make the call"

Nei-san and Michi takes out their communication devices.

Mine's...left on the stage along with my jacket

...But

Looking at this...I think it was a big mistake of miss Cordelia to not take away the communication device and Michi's weapon from us.

She underestimated us...or rather, she thought that she has the absolute superiority that she had the composure...

But, this communication device's conversation is definitely intercepted.

What does Nei-san intend to do?



"Master, here"

Michi beckons me.
She huddles with me so we can both listen on one earphone.

"Please come closer"

...I mean, Michi's small so;
I embraced her.

"Ah..."

"Do you not like it, Michi?"

"No...rather I'm glad"

Michi said blushing, miss Edie said something with a smile

"What?"

"She's making fun of us"

Michi said embarrassed

"Well then, let's go!"

Nei-san puts on spirit and pressed the switch of the communication device.

"Checkmate King 2, Checkmate King 2...This is white rook. Please respond...!"

A reply comes immediately

[...There's no checkmate king 2. Over]

Margo-san's voice...!

"Yeah, I was lying...we don't have white rook either, Over"

Nei-san replies.

"This is an ace of hearts blackjack. The old maid is secretly hidden...Over!"

That's right...we have decided this before leaving the underground room.
We had completely forgotten bit due to the slapstick on the upper floor...
Margo-san is[Spades], Seki-san is[Diamond], Michi is[Heart]Nei-san is[Ace],
I'm[Joker]and Yukino's the[Old maid]
In short, Nei-san and Michi is[Ace of Hearts]and the[joker]me is the 21 Black Jack
In addition, the[old main]...Yukino's safety is transmitted.

[Huh...What about the [Bonus]sweets? Over]
"We've left the[bonus]somewhere. It's possible that it's picked up by someone else...Over"

Nei-san tells Margo-san that Kouzuki Kenshi's separated from us.

[Is that so, too bad. We've dealt the first card. There's nothing played yet... Over]

In short, there was no one pursued Margo-san afterwards.

[But, we still have[ace of diamonds][Clover 10]and [2 of spades]at hand... you've got to draw a card. Over]

Wait...what's this about now?

"One ace and [10]card, and[2]card", it means [23]or[13] In this case, [13]is impossible so she's ordering Margo-oneesama to go to the 23rd floor"

Michi explains

"We've got the black jack for good and bad...Over"

Nei-san said.

In short...us black jack are in the 21st floor.

[What about Tiger Lily? Over]

"Yeah, we managed to come out of the tiger's nest hole. But, they're still trying to get us. I think they're chasing our footprints...over!"

[But I'm glad that you escaped Tiger Lily. Over]

"Well, I feel sorry for the extra being left but...I hope the tiger hasn't eaten it. Over"

She's indirectly telling that we escaped from miss Corderlia's hands.

[It can't be helped, the other party is a savage tiger...I just think that we're lucky to be able to communicate like this. Over]

"Right...by the way, tiger lily has removed her mask and her makeup was so thick. Isn't it a pain to coat it all? Over"

[Don't say that. Her skin's got a lot of bends so isn't she worried about lots of things? Over]

"Speaking of which, I feel like her tits are sagging... Over"

Knowing that miss Cordelia is intercepting...both of them are provoking her saying everything they want.

"From south[Futon room]...wc-2123...Over"

Michi enters the conversation

[Roger...Over]

Seki-san replied

Michi looks at me.

"[Futon room]is the secret word for Kouzuki security service, referring to the escape room for the VIPs. Miss Cordelia probably doesn't know the word[Futon Room]..."

Yeah...a genuine American won't know the[Futon room]

"What's south, and the number after that though?"

"It's all fakes. There's only one VIP shelter on this floor. And this room is on the east side of the floor"

I see...those were remarks to confuse the enemy.

Sasuga Michi.

[Does ace of hearts have experience in evac training? Over]

Seki-san asks Michi

"I've read the books, Over."

[Do you know how to use the emergency slow descent machine, Over?]

"Of course, Over"

[Slow descent machine]...must be that

It's often placed at the corner of the hallways like schools or department stores so you can get off from a high place while evacuating.

[Oriro]or[Surodan]"

But...this is the 21st floor

Isn't it le to get off ground from this height?

[I feel bad since we got blackjack but could you draw another card? Over]

Seki-san said.

[If ace and Joker are black jack, you can still draw cards can't you? Don't go down but instead increase your stakes. Over]

"I'll draw another...Over"

Michi confirms

[Yes, please try it...Over]

Seki-san said

[Okay, let's end the talk here. Let's contact each other regularly every 30 minutes...good? Over]

Margo-san's voice.

"Roger...Over"

Lastly, Nei-san ended the conversation.



"They didn't decide to interrupt the conversation like before..."

I said, Nei-san;

"She's ashamed...Yazawa-san is also listening to the talk"

I see, she doesn't want to tell chief Yazawa that we were able to escape from her.

"Of course, chief Yazawa already knows that we escaped but still...her pride won't allow her to publicize it herself"

...I see.

"By the way...why didn't you tell Margo-san and others about miss Edie?"

"It's connected to miss Cordelia...that person only thinks that miss Edie escaped"

Nei-san said

"She doesn't think that she was excited to see Michan's technique and came to be friends with Michan..."

Yeah...that's true

Even we are surprised.

"Edie just happened to see the chance to escape from miss Cordelia so she did...that's all she thinks"

Miss Cordelia doesn't understand miss Edie at all.

"Therefore, let's hide the fact that this girl is with us for a bit longer"

...True

"By the way, what was Michan talking with Seki-san?"

I also want to know

"Yes...I've received instructions where to meet"

...Meet?

"It's on the 22nd floor..."

"What do you mean, Michi?"

"In black jack state...she ordered me to draw one more card. In short, $21+1=22$ nd floor"

"But, how do we go up?"

If we go out...miss Cordelia will find us.

In order to get out of the maze-like hotel through the upper floor...we definitely have to go through surveillance cameras.

"This VIP room is on the same position on each floor"

What...Michi?

"And...there's a secret hatch that connects the top and bottom of each floor."

...It's connected?

"Though we can evacuate the VIPs into this room...it's troublesome to stay in the same room. "Unlike the emergency evacuation room dedicated to[Kakka]in the basement, the food and clothing here aren't stockpiled enough. Therefore, there's a system that can move from this room above or under. Of course, even among Kouzuki security service, only full time guards of the VIPs knows it"

Michi is Misuzu's guard so she knows.

"Seki-sama said [Don't go down but instead increase the stakes] In short, don't go down but move on the upper floor instead

From the 21st floor evacuation shelter...to the evacuation shelter of the 22nd floor.

"And, the equipment to move from the upper and lower floor is..."

Michi moves the stockpiled lockers and shows the box placed behind the pillar.

"It's a slow descent machine...!"

The box has[Slow Oriro]written on it

Chapter 321. Pull Up!

"Yes...that panel over there. Master"

I'm the tallest man in the room right now so I stand on the chair and put my hand on the ceiling.

The ceiling's all separated by the same white frame but...indeed, the panel Michi pointed out moves.

"Push it up then slide it sideways"

...Hmm

AH, the panel moved and slipped into the ceiling...

On top of that is a metallic hatch.

Somehow, this looks like a submarine.

"Since it's locked, please adjust the dial number"

I see, it looks like there's a big dial from a big old safe.

"If it's powered electrically then you can't use it in case of power outage... therefore it's a mechanical dial"

I see...but still, it's dark, I can't see anything

The dial's numbers are small...

"Can you see it now?"

While I'm squirming...Michi lights up my hand with an LED light from below.
As expected of Kudou-papa's daughter
She also has those kind of things carried around

"Yeah, I can see it"

Yeah, I can clearly see the numbers and alphabets carved in the dial.

"Then, what's the combination?"

"The number's 6700 (Six Seven O O)《WAO》"

"...Got it"

I put in the numbers and open the lever of the hatch...

...Kacha

The hatch opened.

Inside the hatch...is a chimney-shaped cylinder with a the width of one person able to climb up.

But...there's no ladder?

The inside of the cylinder is slippery...

How do you get up on this?

"Thank you very much. Master...please switch with me"

Michi said.

"Just in case, I will confirm the state of the shelter on the upper floor..."

Miss Cordelia might know that there's a shelter liked to the upper floor, but... Chief Yazawa should know it.

There might be a top elite under chief Yazawa hidden in advance.

"But...it's dangerous to go alone, Michi"

I'm worried.

But, Michi...

"Only one person can go through at a time...and I'm the only one who can use the device to pull you up to the upper floor"

Saying that, Michi looks at the[Slow Oriro]box

"This evacuation equipment is usually lifting people from top downwards in a safe speed, but...this machine can also pull from bottom top. This machine is located on all VIP shelters on each floors of the hotel..."

In short...Michi will go to the upper room, use the[Slow Oriro]above and pull us up with a rope.

"On each floor, the position of the hatch leading to the upper floor is slippery. Therefore, you can't move several floors at once from a certain room. It's a bit troublesome but...it would be troublesome if the enemy uses it when the structure is too simple"

I see...if the position of the hatch is a straightline, it would be troublesome if used by a large number of enemy.

It doesn't matter if it takes down but each floor is a system that moves with a different[slow oriro]

Then, if the enemy is aware of this emergency passage...it's possible to stop mid-floor.

"When the hotel is on fire...or when a hotel crashes on the upper floor, then won't it be troublesome that you have to get on top in a hurry?"

Yukino said ironically.

"In that case, this VIP shelter won't be used in the first place. Just escape through the normal evacuation route. This room is a counterterrorism room"

Yeah...in case of terrorists.

Running into this shelter...furthermore, expecting that it'll take time to solve the case...

You should go down to the first floor even if it's a bit troublesome.

Or rather...this is a hotel that's thoroughly biased towards counterterrorism.

"Anyway, I will be going...please leave this to me"

Saying that, Michi takes off her shoes and socks.

"Master, please piggyback me"

With Michi's height...she can't reach the hatch through the chair

"Y-Yeah, sure..."

I get off the chair and squat in front of Michi

"...Excuse me"

Michi rolls up her skirt and comes up on me.

Michi's raw legs wraps my cheeks.

"...Please, Master"

I stand up with Michi on my shoulders.

"...Mihi!"

"Y-Yes...What is it?"

"You're light"

This fifteen year old girl's petite body is surprisingly light.

"...I-I'm sorry"

"No...I'm praising you"

Yukino snorts.

"...Either way I'm the heavy one"

No...I don't hate Yukino's weight.

I remembered the sex where she's on top.

Of course...now's not the time to talk about that so I won't say it.

"...Please don't move for a while"

Michi clings to the hatch.

Putting her feet on my shoulder, into the hatch...

"Michan...take care"

Nei-san looks up at Michi worriedly

Miss Edie's face is excited.

It seems that she's helplessly looking forward to what's going to happen after this.

"...I'm going"

Michi pushes both hands and barefoot legs into the hatch.

I see...she's going to crawl up in this without the ladder.

This is certainly impossible unless with someone with physical ability like Michi's

"You...it's visible"

Yukino tells Michi

...Yeah

Because she's spreading her legs on the hatch...Michi's skirt is completely open.

Her cute panty covering her crotch too...

"It's fine...it's for Master to look at...!"

Michi said embarrassed.

The underdeveloped thighs and butt of this third year middle school girl too...

A stretched barefoot legs.

Oh...it's pleasing

"Then, please wait for a while"

Then...she rise up the narrow cylinder with her cute feet...
I was worried that she might slip but...Michi's rising up further.
I look up at Michi with worry, but...

"Pervert, do you want to look at her panties that much?"

Yukino asks me.

"What I'm worried about is the inside rather than the panty"

The LED light shines above the tube.
It looks like Michi has reached the hatch of the upper floor.
It's around three meters above from inside the tube.
There's also a dial lock in there too.
Michi holds her body by sticking her legs in the cylinder then turns the dial.

...Gacha

The upper floor hatch opens.
Michi slowly crawls upstairs.
We're also nervous
After a while, the lights on the upper floor turns on

"It's okay...there's nobody in the room"

Michi's voice echoes from the upper room.
I feel relieved...

"Please wait...I'll prepare a rope to raise everyone"

...Then
Miss Edie tells me something while smiling

"I'm going up too so gimme a piggyback, she said"

Nei-san translates it.

"No, but...if we wait for a while then Michi would raise us with a rope, wouldn't she?"

I answered, but.
Miss Edie's not convinced.

"She wants to go up on her own like Michan...!"

Nei-san said

"This girl's childish"

Miss Edie begs me to hurry up.

...It can't be helped

I squat before Edie

《...Thank You!》

Miss Edie rides me...

H-Heavy...

This isn't miss Edie's body weight.

There's a lot of things inside her black combat clothes.

Supporters and protectors and such.

Perhaps...weapons too

"There we go...!"

Though I stagger, I somehow stood up with her on my shoulders...

I can feel miss Edie's muscular body.

Her whole body's like a spring.

Well...she's trained like Margo-san

But still...she's thin.

There's no body fat at all

《...Wawoo!》

Miss Edie hangs on the hatch and then she moved up smoothly

...She's used to this.

Unlike Michi, she's wearing combat boots, and yet...

"That girl's received this kind of training it seems..."

Nei-san said.

That's right, miss Edie is a girl who grew up from an assassination cult.

She must be doing some sneak training as usual.

Miss Edie arrives on the upper floor...

"...Master!"

Along with Michi's voice...I can see the arm of the[slow oriro]on the hatch.

...Wiiiiiiin

From the tip of the arm...the rope slowly comes down.

"Since the bottom of the rope is a loop...please hang one of your foot on that loop. Also, please use this"

Michi throws down a pack from the top.

"It's a safety belt harness. Please firmly fix the harness through your armpit. Then, please connect with the carabiner in the middle of the rope"

Opening the plastic bag...there's indeed a vest with a metal fixture.

"Yukino-san, go ahead"

Nei-san tells Yukino

"...You sure?"

"Yes"

Nei-san gives Yukino the harness.

Yukino's only wearing my T-shirt...

When you tighten up her upper body with the harness...it's strangely lewd.

"Now...put your feet there. Though the harness is fixed to the rope, please hold onto the rope firmly on your own. I think it would be very painful if your feet slide off and you're hung only with just by the harness"

Nei-san tells Yukino.

"Michan...it's okay, get it up"

"...Roger"

I hear Michi's voice from above.

...Vuiiiiiiin!

Then, the rope's raised.

"Uwawawawawa...!"

As soon as her feet's away from the floor, Yukino's body shakes the rope.

"Hey, that's dangerous..."

I hold down Yukino's body

"Hey, where are you toughing!"

Yukino speaks angrily but her face is nervous.

After a while, Yukino's body fit the hatch...I let go of her body.

"D-Don't look...!"

Ah...Yukino-san's a no-pan, right.

Both her anus and slit are completely visible

"I'll look...I'm taking a good look, Yukino!"

"Geez...Pervert!"

I've already embraced this body multiple times

Just how many times did I ejaculate inside this body.

Even now...Yukino's pussy is packed with my semen.

Somehow...it feels strange.

I was thinking of such as I watch Yukino's body being pulled on the upper floor.

"...Yo-chan"

As soon as Yukino's body enters the barrel...Nei-san kisses me.

"...Nei-san?"

"Hold me"

Yes, right now

We're the only one's in the room.

This room isn't monitored by anyone.

There's nobody else looking at us.

I embraced Nei-san with all my might.

"...Nei-san. Nei-san. Nei-san"

"...Yo-chan"

I also ask for Nei-san's kisses.

Nei-san answered with her tongue.

I embraced Nei-san with all my power.

"...Thank you. I can't be broken because Yo-chan's by my side"

"...Nei-san"

"That's right. I, Nei...am Yo-chan's oneesan...!"

Natou Nei...is a personality Najima Yasuko made to protect her own heart.
Miss Cordelia called her Yasuko, Nei-san's heart shook.

If she faced Cesario Viola afterwards, she would be shaken more.

The weak and timid girl...Najima Yasuko collapses.

If she's not the Natou Nei...the always bright, energetic and confident girl.

"Nei-san...Nei-san...My Nei-san"

I pat Nei-san's hair gently as I hug her.

"Yeah...I'm here"

The two personalities are on the brink right now

"Master, please have the next one!"

It seems that Yukino's done going up.

Michi lowers the rope again.

"Now, it's Nei-san's turn next..."

I can't let Nei-san be the last.

I'll let her go on the upper floor before me.

"Yeah...sorry, Yo-chan"

Letting go of her body...Nei-san apologizes to me.

"About what?"

"Look, I'm wearing pants suit today so I can't show you anything"

...I

"Well...there's next time"

...Nei-san

"Right...I can show myself naked or in underwear anytime"

Nei-san has to overcome her complex towards Cesario Viola this evening
By defeating Cesario Viola...

Nei-san will become free.

Tonight...!

"I'll do anything for Nei-san's sake"

"Thank you, Yo-chan"

We embrace each other firmly once again
We confirm each other's heart, and heat...



Pulling up Nei-san safely...

Lastly, it's my turn.

Oops, I remember to take Michi's shoes and socks she removed.

Err, the other sock...

But, both her shoes and socks are small and cute.

"What are you doing...Master"

On the other side of the open ceiling...

Michi looks down on me from the upper floor.

"No, Michi's socks you see..."

"...Please don't sniff it"

...What?

"No...it's okay to do it. I am Master's...so you can do anything you want"

No, I don't have that kind of hobby.

"Thank you that you're interested in me that far..."

H-hey...wait

"Uhm...I just want to deliver the shoes and socks to you..."

"...Ah"

I can tell the small face beyond the hatch blushed.

"...I'm sorry"

Michi said embarrassed.

"Okay...pull me up"

"...Yes"

..Wiiiiiiin

The rope pulled up my body...
Reaching the hatch on the ceiling...on the cylindrical passage.
It's actually wider than looking up from below.
Well, if it's not this wide...a VIP old man won't get in.
I can see how the winch of the machine pulls up and down.
It's impossible for an old man's strength to rise up with a ladder...
If someone ascends at the same time and let go in the middle...all the people
under the ladder would be injured as well.
As expected, it's best to move one-by-one with a machine

"...Okay, thank you for waiting. Master"

When I got up to the upper floor...Michi greeted me with a serious face.
Nei-san is smiling.
Yukino's sulking...she's been like that recently
Miss Edie is smiling

"I'm closing the hatch"

Michi closes the hatch.
At the same time, there's a sound coming from the lower floor.

"When you close the upper floor hatch, the hatch on the lower floor will be
closed in conjunction. The dial number will automatically be random"

Michi explains.

"The sliding panel on the ceiling also automatically returns. There will be no
evidence left of our escape to the upper floor"

Really, it's well done.
This hotel is.

"If ever the enemy noticed that the evacuation shelter is connected up and
down...I brought the box of the[slow oriro]machine to the 21st floor, the enemy
should think we escaped on the lower floor. If you don't have this special
machinery, the function of lifting the rope won't work"

Yeah...the usual evacuation equipment has a slow descent function.
Even if they think we run down...they won't think that we got on the upper
floor.

"Besides, if someone touches the lower floor's hatch, we can respond as soon as we see it immediately"

I see, the upper and lower hatches are mechanically linked.

"I'll change the dial number to open this hatch. Even if it happens, that'll gain time"

Michi puts her hand on the hatch

...Fuu

We can take a breath with this.

Until a while ago, we're on the same floor as miss Cordelia...

Even if we're in the VIP shelter, we can't feel relieved.

Just being on a different floor it feels very different.

"What's left is to wait for Maru-chan and others to pick us up"

Nei-san said

"Seki-san knows the secret entrances to the back aisle for the employees on the hallway...I think she'll be coming soon"

Michi said

"I hope that Yazawa or his people won't come and catch us"

Yukino said

"Does Yazawa-san know that we're here?"

"Perhaps...I think it's caught in the[headquarters]at the moment I turned on the lights of this room"

...Right.

"I've already destroyed the hidden cameras and microphones in this room... please don't worry talking here"

But...breaking the surveillance system will make it definite that we're here.

The only think Tanizawa-san don't know that is miss Edie is with us.

Miss Edie's joining us is unknown to anyone.

Not Chief Yazawa, not Margo-san...not miss Cordelia.

...However.

It's still not definite if miss Edie is really our ally or not.

Right now...she's friends with Michi.

Then that means, if she fight with Michi...she might become the enemy again.

It's too undetectable what this girl's behavior is.

...Then

...Bubububububu

Michi and Nei-san's communication device ringed in vibrate.

Did something happen with Margo-san?

Chapter 322. A I Shi Teru!

"...This is ace of hearts and joker! Over!"

Nei-san takes out the device.

I listen on Michi's earphone as well.

No, this time, Yukino's also putting her ears close too.

Miss Edie's staring blankly but she's smiling.

[...We're moving as planned. What about your side? Over?]

I can hear Margo-san's voice.

"We're going as planned...no problems!"

[Okay...we're coming soon]

Then that means that they're approaching the VIP room on 22nd floor.

[There's been no engagement afterwards...the enemy presence has completely disappeared]

It seems that chief Yazawa's subordinates didn't pursue Margo-san.

[It's been 20 minutes since we parted from Tiger Lily. It's possible that they're coming your way so be careful. Over...!]

Nei-san said.

Yeah...if miss Cordelia has the ability to take action, she'd go one floor higher and re-attack Margo-san.

Of course...that's in case they gave up on tracking us.

[Roger. The next signal would be[Ikkyu-san]so remember it. Over]

What...Margo-san?

"Roger...Over"

Nei-san disconnects the call...

"Nei-san, what's[Ikkyu-san]?"

"Eh, Yo-chan doesn't know about[Ikkyu-san]?"

"No, uhm...if I recall, he's a monk? I've read it in Japanese history"

In the textbook at middle high school...I remember the culture page on Muromachi era.

If I recall, there were portraits too.

My classmate said that he resembled[Akira Emoto]...

The PC guy is called[Isaku-san]

Speaking of which...who's[Isaku-san]?

"I see, Yo-chan doesn't know the anime[Ikkysan]?"

...Anime?

That old man faced monk has an anime?

"As soon as we came back here...Maru-chan watched a lot of Japanese anime to study Japanese language. Together with me. I've gotten vague with Japanese terms already. Then, Maru-chan came to love[Ikkysan]"

...Oh

"I liked[Gamba and friends]and[The adventures of Tom Sawyer]"

"Eh, that's not a Japanese work isn't it?"

Tom Sawyer...is american isn't it? If I recall.

"Therefore...the Japanese people animates it in Japan! It's Japanese! That's how it is!"

Oh...so that's how it is?

"Are you an idiot?"

Yukino's amazed.

"Sorry...I haven't watched that much TV since I was a child"

"Were your parents strict?"

Michi asks.

"I hear that houses that are education enthusiastic, they ban entertainment such as television?"

I see...Michi doesn't know it yet?

"It's the opposite...Yo-chan's abused by his parents"

Nei-san answers calmly

"No, it's not abuse...I wasn't beaten or kicked"

"It's worse...having one's existence ignored all the time...!"

Nei-san is angry for me.

"Uhm...I had to be like the[air]in the house. I mustn't talk, I mustn't make requests...I mustn't show up myself in front of my mother as far as possible"

"...What does that mean?"

Michi's surprised.

"Therefore... He was abused"

"But, during the three years on middle school, I was living in a dorm for a boys' school in the mountains...it didn't feel that harsh. Well, TV and radios were banned...phones can be brought if you applied to the school, but my phone is only for emergency uses, it can't connect to the internet nor contact my parents...really, it only had the function to call. But still...my friends at dormitory lent me some manga and magazines. Yeah, I've read everything back in those days. I've read from car magazines, fishing, shogi. I've never done fishing since I don't have the tools, but..."

Anyway...I read what I could.

"Therefore, I've read some works in manga but I don't know any anime. I've only seen the photos on my friend's anime magazines, but I don't know how the photos move. There's an amazing guy in the same dormitory who loves anime...when he goes home on a vacation, he watches all the recorded anime he had in one go. [I managed to catch up this season]he said. But...I couldn't go home even during the vacation period..."

Spring break, summer vacation, winter vacation...I've stayed in the dorm all time.

"Therefore...this spring, after graduating from middle school, I finally came home but...I don't have the habit of turning on the television. Besides, they'd get angry when I do..."

"Uh...who will?"

Michi asks.

"No...They'd get angry saying[it's a waste of electricity]"

Actually...there's nobody that would scold me from that house.
My mother has returned to her parents without permission.
My father's missing.
But still...I can't turn on the TV because I feel like someone would scold me.
No...even the lights in the house.

"Yo-chan...!"

Nei-san hugs me.

"Forget all about the past! Yo-chan's already a child of Kuromori house.
My[little brother]...!"

Her soft and toned chest envelops my cheek...

"Let's watch a lot of things together...we'll watch the whole story of[Ikkyu-san] With everyone"

"...Okay"

"...It's 296 Episodes"

"...Really?!"

"Michan, you're watching with us too!"

"O-Okay...!"

That foul looking monk has 296 episodes?
What kind of story is that?
As expected, is it about performing Indian sutras?
I've gotten interested in a different meaning

"Hm...What's wrong, Yukino?"

Yukino looks a bit unenergetic

"No...nothing"

"No, you look gloomy though...?"

"It's nothing! There's no way I'm interested in you!?"

Yukino speaks strongly
I wonder what she's saying...I know that even if she doesn't tell me.
Yukino doesn't want to know anything about me.

...Konkon!

Suddenly...the door of the room is knocked.
It's a thick door made of steel so the knock is dull.

"...Wait"

Nei-san tells us then she takes out the communication device.
After a cough...
Nei-san sang at the microphone...

"...Suki suki suki suki suki suki! A I Shi Teru♪!"

...Tonkatonton!

The door's beaten with a rhythmic sound...

"...It's Maru-chan!"

Nei-san opens the door lock in a hurry...!

"...Are you okay?"

Behind the opened door, Margo-san, Seki-san and Reika can be seen.
All of them have a relieved look in their faces.
...But.

Seki-san's eyes caught miss Edie who's inside the room.

Miss Edie...

Is wearing the same black combat clothing just like Cesario Viola's army

"...Enemy?!"

Seki-san spoke unintentionally...
The reflexive vigilance of the top elite of Kouzuki security service...
Ignites miss Edie's fighting spirit!



"...Enemy?!"

At that moment...miss Edie dashes like the wind!

《YEERAAA!!》

I don't know where she had it but she attacked Seki-san with a knife at hand.

"...Kuh"

...Kin!

A sharp metallic clashing sounds.

As expected of Seki-san...she received the knife with the pistol.

Okay...the first shot was negated.

But, ,at this close range, the knife is more advantageous than a gun.

《WOOOOO》

Before miss Edie could make a two-hit attack...Reika shoves her cane.

Miss Edie takes distance on the last minute.

Margo-san then tries to intercept her with a kick

《...SEAAE!!》

Miss Edie roll around the corridor...taking distance from the three.

Bad, it has become a full battle

《No! Edie!!》

Michi rushed into the hallway and shouted at Edie with a loud voice but...she can't suppress the blood thirst released momentarily

"Maru-chan...that girl's not an enemy!"

Nei-san shotued...once again, miss Edie jumped at the three of them!

"...Shaaaaaaa!!!"

The target is Seki-san once again.

Knife at both hands...

Yet, Seki-san has put her gun in the holster...?

"...Toaaaaaaaaa!!!"

She intercepts miss Edie's knife with her gloved hand?!

Both left and right.

She's holding the blade of the knife on each hand?????!!!

"...This is an anti-blade glove"

Seki-san's also a high skilled person.

We've seen her ability in the theater.

Since she's not confident in power match, she devotes herself in gun support,

but...

Her speed and accurate movements is outstanding.

"If it's this girl's power then even I can stop it...!"

Saying that, Seki-san grips the blade of the knife which she's caught.

《...OH!》

Miss Edie releases the knife on both hands...!

Miss Edie rolls to take distance.

When she stood up...she's got a new knife at her hands already

This time, it's bigger than the knife earlier...a huge combat knife.

Holding up two knives, she ran towards Reika.

She's fast like a beast.

《...SEYEAAA!》

...Kakin!

...Kin!

Reika receives the knives with her cane!

"Reika-oneesan..."

Margo-san shouts.

"...I know!"

...What?

Something flashed in the air?!

"...A steel wire?"

Michi mutters.

There's two thin metal lines stretching out from miss Edie's combat knives.

"The big knife is a misdirection...in fact, it's a technique to cut off the opponent's neck with a thin steel wire..."

Reika...entwines her cane to the steel wire.

《...WOO!》

Miss Edie draws the knives with both hands.

The steel wire rubbed into the cane and smoke rises.

"This cane won't be cut by such a wire...!"

《...HAWOO!》

Miss Edie turns the knife's blade to Reika...

...Bashu! Bashu!

The knife's edge is shot at a tremendous speed!

"...Here! Haiiiiiiiii!!"

Reika brushed off the two blades with a slight time difference.

This time, miss Edie is already holding her next knife.

There's no end to this.

"Hmm...Geez!"

Nei-san pulls the hem of Yukino's shirt.

Yukino's naked under only my shirt, so...

Her ass and pussy are exposed.

...To me.

"Kyaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

Yukino screams like silk's been torn.

Even though it's always shown to me...

It seems she's embarrassed showing it so suddenly.

..... ! ! !

Everyone paid attention to Yukino.

At that moment...!

"...Shingetsu!"

Michi releases her Qi

《WOO...!》

"Aah!"

"Eeh!"

"Uuu!"

Everyone who were fighting stopped moving.



《why Sister Michi ? 》

Miss Edie's surprised.

She's already friends with Michi so...

She didn't think that she would release[Shingetsu]on her.

Michi speaks in English too.

"[These people are my[Family] You're misunderstanding]She said"

Nei-san translates.

"What's going on?"

Margo-san asks Nei-san.

Seki-san and Reika as well...there's hardly any damage on their body.

The[Shingetsu]Michi used isn't on full power just like when she used it to stop Miss Cordelia from moving.

It seems that she just used the skill to stop the fighting people from moving, surprising them.

"You see, Maru-chan. Seki-san, Reika-oneesan too, listen to this"

Nei-san explains the history of miss Edie.

Miss Edie is an from an assassination cult in the Southern America.

That her grandmother was one of the leaders of the cult but she was sold by the boss to Cesario Viola's organization.

That miss Cordelia made her a subordinate but they didn't match at all.

That when she saw Michi, she wanted to be practice companions so she came to us.

"Anyway...She's a girl who only learned about assassination techniques and only thinks of becoming stronger. This girl's simple, she doesn't think about anything else"

Nei-san said.

"I see, I get it"

Margo-san said.

"This girl came from an assassination cult to miss Cordelia's subordinate..."

then she's the first on-site job?"

"Yeah. I think she said that"

"Sorry, since I've recognized the clothing as an enemy...she got into battle mode immediately"

Seki-san reflects.

"No, it's not Seki-san's fault. We didn't tell you about miss Edie being with us..."

We don't want miss Cordelia to know yet.

"Yeah, the surveillance cameras in the hallways have been destroyed so we're okay for the time being"

Margo-san said as she confirm the smashed cameras on the ceiling.

"A girl who's that skilled...I don't want her to be an enemy"

Reika said.

"Yeah. She's physically strong. She's truly trained that she's too specialized in being an assassin, but"

"What do you mean by that...Margo-san"

"...You see"

Before Margo-san explains...

Michi and Miss Edie's voices are getting louder...

"Whew...what's wrong?"

Everyone goes to the two.

The problem is this.

Michi speaks about Margo-san, Seki-san and Reika is her family.

Miss Edie's not convinced with it.

But...when Michi said"The three ladies are my seniors and stronger than me"miss Edie rejects it fiercely.

In short..."The three of them aren't that strong"

When Michi said again"No, they're strong enough"...

"They're not that much during the fight just now"

Since miss Edie said"I'm completely stronger"...

Michi answers[That's just being conceited]...

Miss Edie seems to have exploded.

"Err...What do you mean?"

"She thinks that she's stronger because the fight just now, even it's 3-on-1, it was a tie"

Margo-san smiles wryly.

"Michan is physically weaker than herself but she's accepted because she can use[Qi]techniques even though she's younger than herself. But, Maru-chan's already an adult, and yet they're not stronger than herself, she doesn't want to accept them, she says"

Nei-san explains to me.

She acknowledges Michi only on the[Qi]part.

Rather, she thinks that other parts are on lower level than herself.

Miss Edie likes Michi...so she came to be a practice companion.

If they're physically equivalent...she might come to defeat her as a rival.

That's her character.

"But, she's really strong. This girl's always alone, to be honest, I might've lost"

Seki-san said.

"I think so too. As expected, she's an expert only in assassination techniques, she's good at making up her mind...I think that we would be picked if we let our guards down a bit"

Reika said.

"You two are overestimating... She's still a small chick"

Margo-san said.

"We're a[team]so...it was three to one right now, or one-on-one has nothing to do with it. We cover each other, cooperate...and make sure we win. This girl doesn't even know anything about fighting..."

Then, she tells miss Edie something in English.

"H-Hey...Maru-chan!?"

Nei-san's surprised.

"There's no choice but to make this girl accept by force...!"

Margo-san grins.

"I've got to make her aware of her own weakness clearly...!"

"Yes. I think so too...!"

Michi answers with a serious face.

"What is Margo-san saying?"

I ask Nei-san.

"[Then, have a one-on-one match with me] [However, there's no weapons. It's a bout with bare hands. I'll beat you black and blue]she said...!"

Margo-san and miss Edie's fight.

"But, that would take time..."

Seki-san advises, but...

"Sorry but, give us five minutes...I'll finish it by then. Anyway, I've got to refresh her head or else we won't be able to walk together..."

True...if miss Edie keeps making fool of Margo-san and the two, it won't be good.

But...

This girl moves amazingly.

In the fight earlier...Margo-san was hardly moving...

I believe that Margo-san would win but...

If both of them suffer any damage from the fight...it won't be good.

"Don't make that face...I'll be fine. Leave this to me"

Margo-san tells me as I make a worried face.

"Then...stay a bit away"

Margo-san and miss Edie confronts each other.

Miss Edie shows a fearless smile...

She told Margo-san something

Perhaps, some insulting words.

On the other hand, Margo-san tells miss Edie something

With a cool face...

Miss Edie's face turns red in anger...!

《...WAWOOOO!!!》

...Miss Edie becomes the wind.

Chapter 323. Edie (Part 3)

Margo-san promised that it would be done in five minutes, but...
The match with miss Edie didn't even take a minute.

《...WRYYYY!!!》
"...Haa!"
《...HASHOOO!!》
"...Toa!!"

Miss Edie and Margo-san exchanges attacks, but...
Margo-san's not hit at all.
Both the fists and kicks were seen through.

《...WESHZZZ!》
At the same time she avoids miss Edie's feet...
Margo-san's low kick bows down her pivot legs!
Miss Edie fell down.
She tries to get away by rolling on the floor...
Margo-san has already moved to the destination.
As if she has read miss Edie's next action.
Riding on top of miss Edie who's on the floor...she pins down with one hand.
The other arm's fist heads to miss Edie's face.
If she takes Margo-san's punch in that distance...it's a huge damage.

"...Ha!"
...Eh?!!!
Margo-san stopped her fist in front of miss Edie's face.
Then...she said something in a low voice.

"...[You have died five times in the fight just now]she said"
Nei-san translates.
Miss Edie who's lying on the floor looks up at Margo-san with an angry face.
"Edie is angry, asking[Why did you go easy]?"

...Go easy?

Even though when miss Edie was fighting with the three of them, it looked even...

When she was fighting with Margo-san one-on-one, there's much difference...?

"[You're still growing. I don't intend to reap a growing bud]...she said"

...Margo-san

"[Above all...you're Michi-chan's friend aren't you? Then, you're as good as my[Little sister]]"

Miss Edie looks up at Michi from the floor.

"[Is this person sister Michi's teacher?]She asked"

Michi answered"No"

"[She is one of my[elder sisters]but she's not my teacher]"

Thanks to Nei-san's translation, I can understand it.

Miss Edie looks up at Margo-san again.

"[Why did you hide your ability earlier? You didn't move at all when it was the three of you]...she said"

Margo-san answered showing a wry smile.

"[Well, I've been observing your fighting power... A real strong person won't show their full power from the start]she said"

I see...Margo-san

She's judging miss Edie's ability by observing her fight with Seki-san and Reika

"[Your body is well trained. You might be physically stronger than us. But, your experience is too short. This is your first time in a real battlefield, isn't it?] ...she said"

Miss Edie's expression changed.

"...[How can you tell]"

Seki-san is surprised

"I didn't notice that at all. Rather, she was a tough opponent because she's

always aiming precisely at the blind spot"

"That[always accurate]is a bad habit...!"

Margo-san answered Seki-san in Japanese...then returned to English

"...[You're aiming to the vital points too precisely. It's an assassination technique so you want to kill your opponent as fast as possible but...such an easy to understand attack can only beat amateurs. A combat professional can easily read your next action. You must not make simple attacks that can make the other party anticipate your next move]"

Nei-san translates the English conversation fast.

"...[That wasn't my top speed. If your speed is up to your opponent's expectations, you can do anything]"

Miss Edie seems to argue.

Margo-san answers in a low voice.

"[What's important isn't the speed...it's the rhythm of the fight. Your attack rhythm is always the same. It's very monotonous. There's no variation in rhythm. I think this is perhaps because you've always trained with the same opponent all this time. No matter how fast you attack, you can defend if the rhythm is the same. You'll lose if the opponent predicts your attack]"

...I see

If you know the rhythm then you can deal with it.

If they only come to attack the vital points...then, even more easier.

"[Rather, by always making a bout with close friends, your bad habits are attached to the movement of your body. As I deliberately attack you to break your rhythm, you stopped moving immediately. You can never win against me at this moment]"

Yeah...Margo-san is able to completely hold down miss Edie's attack.

"[How can I win against you?]"

Miss Edie asks Margo-san...exposing her fighting spirit.

Margo-san smiles...

"[There's no meaning if you win against one. We're fighting as a team...]"

《...Team?》

Miss Edie shows a curious look.

"[Yes. It looks like that I've won against you one-on-one, but...that's not actually the case. In the fight earlier...because I saw you fight the other two people, I was able to find your weak point. We're a team. Therefore, we just have to win as a team...!]"

...Margo-san

"[If ever I was defeated by you earlier...the other two would be aware of how you fight. Whatever happens, those two will definitely defeat you. You had no chance of winning from the start]"

"[...Like hell I'll be defeated. Even now, I can turn the tables]"

Miss Edie's fighting spirit doesn't go away.
She's really a girl who hates to lose.

"[No, you won't win]"

Michi tells miss Edie.

"[...Why, sister?]"

Miss Edie seems to be moved by what Michi said

"[You're an assassin so you're only taught to infiltrate enemy grounds alone and kill the target, right? There's only two choices, whether you kill or get killed. It's different from us]"

"[Different?...Michi?]"

"[Our fight is to protect. Even if one person is defeated, the remaining people will take over the will and fight. We can't afford to lose. We are only allowed to have the future of protecting...!]"

"[What are you protecting]"

Michi answers.

"[...Our《family》]"

《Family》...[家族]

"[I don't have a family. My grandmother has passed away. The cult has

abandoned me]"

Miss Edie's face gets cloudy.

"[The only thing I can do now is to refine my assassination techniques grandmother has taught me. This is the only bond that connects me and my grandmother...]"

Miss Edie said...to which, Michi replied;

"[There was a time I thought about it that way But ...that's no longer the case]"

《...Sister?》

Miss Edie looks at Michi.

"[A skill is a skill...in the end it's meant to be used. You don't aim to polish your skill. I have inherited my technique from grandfather and father...I will use this technique for my family's sake. Because of that, I become more diligent. I will teach this technique on my children as well. My children will protect their families...]"

"[Michi's child? Sister Michi intends to bear a child?]"

"[Yes, I will]"

Miss Edie shows a dark face...

"[I don't want to bear a child. I don't want to make my own child an assassin like me...]"

Margo-san laughs.

"[If you don't want it to be an assassin then don't raise it as such]"

"[But...I've only been educated to be an assassin]"

"[How old are you right now?]"

"[Sixteen]"

"[Then, you still have a lot of time. You can learn something than being an assassin from now on]"

Miss Edie glares at Margo-san

"[Are you saying to drop the skills I inherited from grandmother...!]"

"[Nobody's saying that...you should just create a new martial art that does

something other than assassination from the techniques handed down by your grandmother]"

...Another martial art.

"[My Kudou style ancient martial arts is originally a technique to murder in the battlefield. But, may successors succeeded in various attempt on improvements so they can have the power not only on killing people]"

Michi looks at me.

"[I...tonight, am using Kudou style for the first time for love's sake]"

The enlightenment of[Shingetsu]through sex.

"[...Love?]"

"[Yes. Sister Edie. I'm sure that your skills can be used to things other than assassination]"

Miss Edie looks down...

"[I don't know about that. I don't know anything other than assassination]"
"[Therefore...your grandmother thought that you should go outside of the cult and study...!]"

...Michi?!

"[Meet various people...know various techniques. There's still a lot of things you don't know about the world. I think that you shouldn't say that you can't, you don't know if you don't know the world yet...!]"

Margo-san smiles.

"[Miss Edie...I can't lose to you so I can't teach you how to win against me but...I can teach you how to be stronger than you are now]"

Miss Edie's surprised.

"[Are you saying you're going to teach me?]"

"[Yeah, you're Michi-chan's friend, aren't you? Then I think of you as my[protegee]]"

Margo-san smiles gently

"[That's what that woman said a while ago...]"

Miss Edie looks at Nei-san

"[Isn't that obvious?...Maru-chan and I are members of the same《Family》Michan too. Therefore, everyone welcomes Edie!]"

Nei-san answers.

"[Or rather...Edie, join in our family!]"

"[Me...?]"

Miss Edie's surprised.

"[Yes. That's for the best. Become our member... !]"

Nei-san said...miss Edie looks at Michi

"[Let's become real sisters. Does sister Edie hate becoming my sister?]"

"[...That's not the case, but]"

"[Then that's decided!]"

Nei-san said laughing.

"[...Is it okay? I'm an assassin? I'm from a cult?]"

Miss Edie's uneasy.

"Is what she's saying...what do you think, Yo-chan?"

Nei-san looks at me.

"Say that it doesn't matter"

I said.

"[That doesn't matter. Yo-chan is saying that Edie's welcome...!]"

"[...I'll ask the opinion of others. What about Margo-san?]"

Michi asks Margo-san

"[I of course welcome you]"

"[What do you think, Reika-oneesan?]"

"...Me?"

Reika's surprised.

"[Yes, you're family as well so please answer]"

Michi said...Reika answers in English.
She's a top elite of Kouzuki security service so she's fluent in English too it seems.

"[I warmly welcome more sisters]"

Reika said shyly.

"[This lady is also just watching...if she goes serious, she's far stronger than you sister Edie]"

Michi said.

"[No, I...]"

Reika tries to deny it but, miss Edie...

"[No, I know that you have a body that's more trained than me...!]"

With the[family]becoming her companions...Miss Edie seems to be able to see the other party calmly

When she was a[lone assassin]...it seems that she denies all[enemy]
Except for Michi who's the only one who can use the same skill as her grandmother...

"[I was the same as you miss Edie before]"

Reika said.

"[I tried to be aloof...stubbornly sticking to my own style. And, I've gotten confident that I was the strongest. Even though the situation of a one-on-one duel isn't a real battlefield]"

...Reika

"[I realized various things by having a family. The limits of what I can do alone...the futility to trying to be aloof. I am now an elder sister for many little sisters. Everyone helps and encourages me. I will fight for my family until my life is exhausted...I've taken the chance to learn for my family. I hope that miss Edie takes the same opportunity]"

...Edie

"[...Please call me Sister Edie. Oneesama]"

She accepts Reika's words.

"[The Oneesama word...pierces my heart]"

Then...looking at Margo-san, Seki-san, and Michi.

"[My sisters are all stronger than me. ...I just understand it now]"

The death of her grandfather, expelled from the homeland...her relationship with miss Cordelia

Miss Edie has kept her heart closed all the time.

Only the assassination techniques she learned from her grandmother has been the support from her loneliness.

Therefore, she denies other people's skills...and only look at her own assassination technique.

...Then

She met Michi...felt nostalgic by seeing the same technique as her grandmother's, she opened her heart...

Lost to Margo-san...

Invited to join our[family]...

Miss Edie's frozen heart is melting...

This girl's usual smile is all a fake.

Instead of killing her emotions...she forces a smile.

"Reika-oneesan says okay...what about Seki-san?"

Nei-san purposely spoke to Seki-san in Japanese.

"No, uhm...I'm not yet in your family..."

Seki-san answers in Japanese.

"That doesn't matter...as a senior on fighting, tell Edie something. If Seki-san doesn't say something then this atmosphere won't break!"

True...they fought 3-on-1 earlier so...

If Seki-san says"I'm a bit different"this late...then miss Edie would get confused

"...R-Right"

Seki-san speaks in fluent english

"[Surely, you are still immature. But, you're very natural, and your training

until now won't go to waste. I'm sure that you'll be stronger...if you continue to study hard]"

"Seki-san nobody cares about that kind of advice!"

Nei-san gazes at her.

"Just say whether you accept Edie as an ally or not!"

Once again, Seki-san looks at Edie...

"[...I accept you as well Let's be friends from now on...miss Edie]"

Miss Edie smiles.

《All Right...Sister!》

Once again, Michi speaks to miss Edie...

"[Sister Edie, we have people to protect. Our family...Sister Nei, and my Master. Also, this lady which is Master's livestock. Let's protect them together]"

Yukino's sulking.

"She said that I'm a livestock again..."

"It's better than being ignored. If we say that Yukino's not our[family]then miss Edie would happily kill you off

Yeah...I can imagine it

Yukino should thank Michi

《...I do》

Miss Edie answers.

"[Sister Michi's family is my family...sister Michi's defended people are my defended people]"

It seems she made an oath.

Then...thinking for a bit, she speaks again.

"[I see...it's different than fighting alone. It feels completely different when there are people you have to protect]"

Mis Edie's new training begins.



Now then, we talk briefly on what happened after we got caught by miss Cordelia.

Margo-san also talked about what happened to them after they parted with us...this floor has no indication of ambushes just as told in the calls.

Following, Margo-san and Seki-san asked miss Edie.

But, miss Cordelia hardly told anything about the operation as she's a newcomer.

Well...miss Edie isn't attached to miss Cordelia at all...

She listened to orders however, since she's essentially rebellious...it can't be helped.

"I want to know the current situation of the hotel"

Seki-san says, but...

"This is the VIP refuge, right? Can't we draw the information from the building?"

Nei-san asks.

"There's a connector to link it with the surveillance system but...there's no terminal to use for monitoring. When a VIP evacuates here, there's always a Kouzuki security service escort with them"

I see...the guard in charge would be carrying a dedicated terminal. Well, you can't just leave an opportunity to multiple confidential information in a room.

"If I knew this would've happened, we could've brought the terminal from room 2505"

Margo-san said.

"If we had such a big machine then it would be destroyed during miss Cordelia's first attack"

Seki-san said.

"True. That's why I left it. Seriously...Tony-san got us. He purposely made us take the biggest terminal"

Margo-san smiles wryly

When we got out of room 2505, we're going to have trouble carrying it so he purposely lent us a big machine.

"If we get off to the 20th floor, there will be a security office. We can view some of the surveillance cameras in there"

Seki-san said as she recalls.

"Yeah...let's go there for the time being"

Margo-san decides

"It's about time I think...the enemy won't be bothered by us"

"What do you mean...?"

Reika asks Margo-san

"It's about time that Kudou-san makes an all-out attack on Cesario Viola. In that case, miss Cordelia would be heading to support Viola. Chief Yazawa-san will be taking priority on watching over the site too..."

Going this far...

It's still expected that there's a connection between miss Cordelia and chief Yazawa, but...

I can't feel anything connecting Cesario Viola and chief Yazawa however. It remains on the conflict state.

"No matter how you think about it, it's impossible for Viola and his men to go higher than 21st floor..."

Kudou-apa and the free guards would intercept...and their numbers would be cut down.

When they lack in people, they would scout as they go...

The speed of their invasion would be extremely slow.,

"I think so too..."

Seki-san said...

"Perhaps, the deciding battlefield would be around the 19th floor...!"

Fierce Battle Arc／Decisive Battle

Chapter 324. Friend, why?

Now then, we get back to our formation.

At the front is Reika with Seki-san as her support, Michi, Nei-san, Yukino and I are in the middle, and Margo-san's at the rear.

It's the same as before.

And behind Margo-san...is sister Edie chasing after us ten meters behind.

(As the person herself asked to be affectionately called[Sister Edie])

For the time being, the area around the VIP shelter is at the rear corridor for hotel employees, so there are hardly any hidden cameras and microphones, almost none.

Michi destroyed all of them on the 21st floor, and it seems that the monitoring system of the rear corridor on the 22nd floor has been destroyed by Margo-san. Therefore, neither chief Yazawa nor miss Cordelia should know that sister Edie has joined us.

However, all of the routes from the rear corridor to the lower floors are blocked off.

We have no choice but to head to the public hallway again to go downstairs.

The monitoring systems in the hallways are a lot more thorough when compared to here...and they're cleverly hidden.

It's hard to break all the monitoring equipment one by one.

In that case...sister Edie has to keep a distance.

"[Come with us, pretending that you're following]"

I think that's what Margo-san told sister Edie in English...

That way, it looks like sister Edie has been pursuing us since we ran away from the theatre.

That's how it should look like to miss Cordelia, who's looking at the cameras.

That's a very sister Edie-like way of moving...

At the very least, they won't think that she's our ally

"[Be careful of only Kozuki security service guards]"

"[I'm fine...]"

Sister Edie has the skills of an assassin.

She seems to be good at erasing her presence.

With that said...we, the original seven, and sister Edie, who's a bit further away, depart.

"...We'll be moving to the hallway from now"

What's there is a commercial elevator hall that collects and carries the sheets to be washed.

Seki-san opens the large metal door on the side of the elevator.

That's the border between the public area and the backside?

...Gacha, gii

The door's thicker than I thought.

I see, even a bomb couldn't open this up.

First...

Michi searches for[Qi]outside.

"It's okay, there's no presence around"

But still, Reika first jumps out and explores the area.

Seki-san holds her gun and prepares for an unexpected attack.

Earlier, we were attacked by miss Cordelia because Michi wasn't able to capture their[Qi]

Therefore, we're just making sure.

"...There's no abnormalities in front, including the ceiling"

Reika said

"There's no abnormality to the rear"

Seki-san confirms.

Having recieved the report from the two...Michi, Nei-san, Yukino, and I, who are in the middle group, move through the thick metal door.

That's when Margo-san says...

"I can't see the enemy right now, but they might be hiding around here. If the

enemy attacks from ahead, then we'll escape through this door to the back corridor. Therefore, we'll leave the door as is..."

Margo-san informs the hidden microphone as if she's talking to us. It's actually to not lock the door again for sister Edie. That's why we're leaving the door open.

"Fujimiya-san, head right...there's a staircase down on the second corner"

Seki-san's memory is perfect.

"...Roger"

We walk with Reika ahead.

We then follow Seki-san's instructions going forward.

Michi keeps looking for[qi]

In addition to that, Reika and the others concentrate so they can cope with sudden attacks at any time.

I'm worried whether sister Edie is following us from behind properly.

Of course, we're not allowed to turn around to confirm.

We should assume that all of our actions in this corridor are monitored.

I can't do any martial arts, but it'd be strange for me to feel the presence of the assassin, sister Edie.

"It's okay...she's following us"

Michi whispered to me.

Michi's[Qi]sensor is tracking sister Edie properly

"It's not good for us to be nervous...Yo-chan"

Nei-san smiles

"Calm down...let's go naturally! Breathe"

Even if you tell me that...

"True, it's just a waste to go worrying. Either way, you can't do anything"

Yukino makes a fool out of me.

"Please be dignified. I will definitely protect Master. Please believe in me...!"

I'm very grateful that Michi said that.



Then...we reach the 21st floor.

Seki-san's already been told that miss Cordelia had been waiting for us in the small theater[between the stars]

Therefore, Seki-san selected the route to go down a floor furthest from[between the stars]

Reversing the route, we reached the business elevator hall on the 22nd floor from before.

After all, this hotel is a maze and is divided here and there.

We pass through the floor while being wary...to the stairs to the lower floor.

For the time being, there's no ambush here.

From here, we go down the 20th floor.

"Did miss Cordelia stay on the 21st floor?"

I ask Margo-san in the back.

"Perhaps...there's various changes in the situation"

We safely arrived at the security service on the 20th floor.

...Then

"...Yes, this is the Nanamagari Shosou Saichi Gakari!!"1

Kudou papa's talking on the extension phone?

Neko-san's here too.

"Idiot! Do something about that yourself. I left the enemies on the 6th floor G4 to you. If you find it troublesome then hide yourself in a room if you want. The Russian thugs don't know anything worthwhile. It's useless to interrogate them"

Kudou-papa cuts off the call.

"Oh, what's up?"

He noticed and called out to us.

Then, we look inside the entrance of the room...

Sister Edie seems to be hiding her figure in the back

"What are you doing here?"

I ask on behalf of everyone

"It's as you can see. I'm taking command. It's about time to go after all"

Kudou-papa points at the numerous monitors in the room.

The video feeds of the hotel's surveillance cameras are displayed one after another.

"It's possible that the radio is being intercepted. I'm using the hotel's extension phone to contact my allies"

Eh...how?

Neko-san shows Kudou-papa a monitor.

"The red falcon team has entered zone B6 on the 8th floor"

Looking at the monitor, it's a team of free guards. There are five people dressed in flashy clothes walking down the corridor.

"What's the closest extension to them?"

"08603"

Neko-san looks at the extension list on each floor and responds immediately
Kudou-papa uses the extension phone right away.

Looking at the screen...The extension phone installed in the hotel aisle rings.
The man in green picks up the phone.

"It's me...is this Green Saika? Give the phone to red"

Answering the phone, the person in red is the team leader.

"You guys have 20 russians in front of you in area B7. Kick their asses. Beat them up and tie them down, that'll do"

[...Okay]

The red guy replies, then hangs up the extension phone.

[Let's go!]

[Oh!]

The five super beast warriors raise a cry.

"It's originally a team of three, but we added two of our deceased ally's brothers to the team. Well, they're reliable on their own"

Kudou-papa says while looking at the monitor.

"All of the Russian forces, aside from Viola's main force, have been driven down. This will come to end soon"

He checks their positions with the surveillance cameras and sends instructions to the nearest extension phone on the direction to travel.

"I see. You've thought of a good move...extensions are wired so it's a bit of hassle, but there's no need to worry about being bugged outside"

Margo-san tells Kudou-papa

"Right? It was my idea"

Kudou-papa said happily

"Besides...if the conversations on the extension line, then chief Yazawa can check everything in the[headquarters]right? That saves me the trouble of reporting"

...What?

"Oh, unlike the half-hearted security guard stuff here, Yazawa pops' room is the center of the surveillance system. If we talk to each other on the extension line, Norma-kun can gather and make a situation report together"

Margo-san is gauging the relationship between chief Yazawa and Kudou-papa...

Kudou-papa seems not to have thought of the possibility of chief Yazawa's betrayal at all

"Yazawa pops can also contact the room's extension phone if he needs to tell me something"

"Did Yazawa-san tell you anything?"

"Nothing...he just left this to me. What about you?"

"The executives are evacuated on the upper floors. The origin of the information leak has been found as well"

Seki-san expresses that there's a[traitor]among the executives.

"I see, well, that's out of my jurisdiction. I'll leave it to[Kakka]or Yazawa pops"

Kudou-papa doesn't know that Jii-chan is missing.
Chief Yazawa hasn't conveyed any important information to Kudou-papa.

"By the way, Kudou-san...are you able to monitor[between the stars]on the 21st floor?"

Margo-san asks

"[Between the stars]?...Can you, Neko?"

"It's impossible...it's a confidential area, so it's impossible to do from this room"

...Confidential area?

That's just a small theater though?

"What about it?"

"For example...I thought of the four missing people from the first invaders"

Margo-san lies.

Miss Cordelia's attack wasn't on the 21st floor.

"I wonder? I haven't noticed such a thing since I've been here...hey, Neko"

"Yes"

I now understand...

Chief Yazawa didn't allow Kudou-papa to see us being attacked by miss Cordelia or shot at by the top elites of Kouzuki security service.

"Since it's only a moment...perhaps, you may have overlooked them. Anyway, it seems that those four enemies have run away to[between the stars]..."

"Sure...Neko, tell Yazawa pops"

"Okay..."

Neko-san makes an extension call.

"Well, Yazawa pops should be monitoring all the confidential areas, so they'll deal with it soon"

Kudou-papa's trust in chief Yazawa is big...

"Ah, hello, Tony-kun? Is Yazawa-san there?...What, away?"

Chief Tnaizawa's not in the[headquarters]?

"Is that so? Then tell him this. Margo-chan and the others have encountered

an enemy in the confidential area on the 21st floor...[between the stars] Ah, can Yazawa-san's men send out a search force? That would help, we're almost at the climax. Then, please. Call us if something happens. Kudou-chan and I will be staying here for a while longer"

Neko-san ends the call

"What about Yazawa pops"

"Hm...it seems he went to the toilet"

...That's a lie

Something else is happening at the same time.

...I'm sure of that.

"Well fine. We're about to take over all the units aside from Viola's main force. This will be settled soon. Well, they're all just a bunch of Russian thugs..."

Kudou-papa speaks as he changes the video on the surveillance cameras again.

"What about Viola's main group?"

Seki-san asks.

Old man Dai Grepher shaved the 30 man troop down to 20.

Afterwards, they're supposed to join up with the Russian troops ahead, trying to replenish their numbers...

"it's gotten bad in several ways"

...What?

"Though we've succeeded in reducing the number of people...more than 20 people were absorbed by Viola's troops. They're around 50 people now"

That's quite a number protecting Cesario Viola

"Then...the executives of the troops removed their armbands"

...That's.

The army of Viola's which invaded the hotel all have the same black combat clothes, goggles, and black masks.

You can hardly see the difference in their appearances.

Cesario Viola's executives, Lorenzaccio Bandini, Giuliano Jenka, and Romeo

Motague, are the only ones with colored armbands...so we were able to somehow identify the person.

Once they remove their armbands, they'll be confused with the other combatants.

"Furthermore...they split up"

...Split up?

"One group is invading the upper floors, and two groups are heading to the lower floors...three groups acting independently. The number of each is around 20 people"

They're going up and down at the same time?

"...Margo-san, what do you think?"

Seki-san asks for Margo-san's opinion.

"Cesario Viola's the one who originally brought them here...Lorenzaccio Bandini decided to withdraw after judging the situation to be disadvantageous"

"Then, the men going up are Viola's, and the other groups are going down?"

I asked, and Margo-san smiles wryly

"It's not that simple. Remember that there are only 30 people who were brought by Viola from America"

Yeah...there were 150 enemies who entered this hotel.

Only those 30 people are the original subordinates of Viola.

The remaining 120 are just Russian thugs from a crumbling mafia.

"If you cut those 30 people to 20...there's no choice but to join up with the Russians who are ahead. But...would these Russians really move according to Viola's directions?"

"...I think it's impossible. There's no one among the Russians who understand English, and not many of them have military experience either. They're just a criminal reserve military of young men...I don't think they'd follow orders from an American who they don't know that well"

Michi answered.

"I think so too. Therefore, Viola has no choice but to split the combatants he

gathered together.

The 20 Americans will unify and start withdrawing to the lower floors.
The 30 Russians will go both up and down?

"The troops heading to the upper floor are decoys. They're a throwaway unit to prevent the withdrawing group from being pursued"

I see...

"I think Viola himself is also in the retreating group. From the point when Lorenzaccio Bandini decided to withdraw, Viola has no choice but to ignore his will. He doesn't have the courage to head on the upper floor with the Russians alone"

Margo-san smiles.

"I think that only the Russians are leading the two groups heading down. This is also being used as Viola's shield. But, I think that some of the Russians are mixed up with Americans. If it's only Russian thugs, then they'll be broken immediately"

Viola's organized combatants are built as reinforcements...

"If you think about it rationally, that's how it will be"

Kudou-papa supports Margo-san's opinion

"But...I have a question"

"What is it, Kudou-san?"

Seki-san asks.

"No...somehow, it feels a bit too fragile"

...Fragile?

"Those guys haven't done their homework at all, you see? They look like they just plunged in, not knowing anything about this hotel, Kouzuki security service, our guys, *etc.* On the contrary, it feels like they just thought[it's an easy victory if we just rush in with 150 combat men]..."

Kudou-papa thinks deeply.

"Is it possible that Cesario Viola's organization didn't investigate anything?"

As[Kakka]made this hotel the decisive battleground, there was enough time to investigate...I would definitely have investigated it"

No...Viola was supposed to have done a preliminary survey.
Therefore, miss Cordelia was able to invade the hotel easily...
In the first place, miss Cordelia and chief Yazawa are connected, and were part of the preliminary activities of the operation

...Hmm

...Wait

...Could it be that.

Chief Yazawa might have not betrayed Jii-chan...

And miss Cordelia is betraying Viola...

"...Margo-san"

"...Yeah"

Margo-san has noticed the possibility as well.
Miss Cordelia should have information on the hotel and Kouzuki's security service.

That's absolute.

And yet...for her to give false information to Cesario Viola...

The hotel is an ordinary building. The security isn't a big deal.
Kouzuki Security service has no good people, so don't mind them.
If she made a report like that...and Viola executed the assault tonight...

"I can't understand this"

Kudou-papa seems to be uneasy.
I'm also uneasy.

"Haven't I been telling you since earlier?"

Neko-san tells Kudou-papa

"The four people who disappeared first were the real assassination unit, and the 150 people who came later are all decoys"

"But...would Cesario Viola make himself a decoy? Furthermore, this is a terrible predicament..."

"I don't know about that but...while we're at a mess, the four assassin unit can

do whatever they want"

Neko-san's intuition is sharp.

Miss Corderlia might be the key to the enemy

"I don't know...that's under Yazawa pops' jurisdiction. Besides,[Kakka]has two monster guards, Ootoku and Choumoto. I've got no choice but to leave him to them"

Those two aren't on Jii-chan's side.

"Let's concentrate on the work given to us"

Kudou-papa said.

But...I

I know that Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan are missing.

Chief Yazawa's also suspicious.

...Dammit

In the end, as long as I don't know what's the deal between chief Yazawa and miss Cordelia...

The truth doesn't come...

"Father...Mama-uesama was fired from Kouzuki security service"

Michi changes the topic

"Etsuko...what happened?"

Kudou-papa's surprised.

"Yazawa-san fired her due to violating orders and abandoning her duties..."

Seki-san supplements.

"Abandoning duties and violating orders?...She's not that kind of woman though?"

"Mama-uesama...prioritized a man over her work"

Michi said...Kudou-papa's speechless

"...I see"

Then, he took a deep breath...

"Let's stop that talk for now...Neko, bring together the allied teams. Defeat

the three divisions of Viola's troops...!"

"Right...let's concentrate on what's in front of us"

Neko-san checks the location of each team...

"The earlier group who went down...I think most of them are Russians, but they'll soon catch up with the Banbarubie 3"

"Perfect...let's have Barbie and the other two scout ahead"

Kudou-papa takes the extension phone.

Chapter 325. Queen Bee Dynamite!

[...But still, Ruby-chan,...4!]

[What is it...nee-san? 5!]

[I know I'm the one who said it, but...6!]

[...Do you regret it? 7!]

[Yeah...a bit. 8!]

[I'm prepared for it...now that it's come to this. 9!]

[Right...Doubt!]

Banbarubie 3 is on the screen.

This is the elevator hall.

It's a slightly wider entrance...marble statues and benches are placed around the place.

It's a perfect space for a melee while hiding oneself.

No, it's this kind of hotel, so those places are scattered throughout on purpose. Sitting down on the marble floor...are the two ladies, Barbie-san and Ruby-san, playing cards.

[It's no fun playing doubt with only two players because we know what the other party has]

[Right...the other party definitely has the cards you don't have]

What are those two doing?

[How about playing another game? How about Indian poker?]

Banba-san, the only one standing with her flail, shouts in a crying voice.

[Please let me join too! It's fun with three people. The infinite possibilities will spread...!]

Barbie-san looks at Banba-san...

[No. Banba-chan is on watch]

[Yeah. You're ten years too early to join us playing cards]

Ruby-san also dismisses Banba-san from participating the game...

No...what are you girls doing in the middle of a fight?

Or rather, Banba-san's the only one fighting...I've never seen Barbie-san do a decent job in this hotel.

Ruby-san sometimes shoots for aid though

[But still, Nee-san...are you hungry?]

[Yeah. Should we order Kudou pops some pizza?]

[I want some Ramen. What do you want, Banba-chan?]

[Me? Uhm...]

[I think you're already aware but it'll be delivered. There's no sashimi set meals this late at night]

No...Barbie-san

There's no shop that would deliver to this hotel-turned-battlefield.

[No, I'm on a diet, so I'll refrain from snacks. I've already eaten three lunch boxes from what Kudou-san brought a while ago]

Well, they handed out lunch boxes on the first floor.

[Banba-chan...I would be troubled if you went on a diet!]

Barbie-san glares at her.

[Eh, what is it? I'm managing my physical condition properly. I'm also doing my best in training so my muscles don't disappear...]

[Nee-san isn't talking about that!]

Ruby-san scolds Banba-san.

[Err... then what is it?]

Banba-san shows a blank face.
She's completely puzzled.

[Banba-chan, do you know the law of conservation of mass?]

Barbie-san said.

[Yes, I do know about it]

[Ruby-chan and I have been dieting without Banba-chan knowing...!]

[Eh, is that so?]

[Yes. That's why...the meat we don't need is being taken by Banba-chan's body]

[...What?]

What what?

[Like I said, the law of conservation of mass! The meat decreased from our body must be given to someone else's body, or else the entropy of the universe will collapse!]

...Was the law of conservation of mass like that?

[Eh...do I have to get fat so Barbie-san can get thin?]

[It's the opposite! We' can lose as much weight as you gain!]

[Whaaaat...????!!]

[Therefore, eat as much as you want and get fatter! When someone looks from the outside, we only become slimmer...!]

[Yeah yeah, mass conservation...mass conservation]

Ruby-san laughs at Barbie-san's absurd theory.

[With that said, Banba-chan will be eating tonkotsu ramen from now on. Eat at least three cups. Become a thicc and garlily-smelling woman that people can smell coming from a hundred meters away!]

[No way...I don't want that!]

Then...the elevator's extension phone rings.
Barbie-san takes the handset.

[Yes? Thank you for calling. This is the preacher of love...Barbie-chan!]

The other side of the call is, of course, Kudou-papa, who's in the same room

as us.

"...Ken-chan Ramen, the new release."

[My, that's just perfect. I want to eat some ramen. But, Ken-chan ramen is a bit small]

"The enemy's heading your way"

Kudou-papa got straight to the point.

[Then, that means that they have started to withdraw?]

"That's how it is. They're going with a siege out of desperation...!"

[Roger...I'll make up and greet them wan!]

Barbie-san throws out the playing cards at hand.

"I think that the ones on there way here would be mainly the Russian thugs anyway..."

[I know. If they're retreating, then they're going to use their ace, right?]

"That's how it is...be careful"

[Who do you think I am? Even if Banba-chan dies, Ruby-chan and I will survive!

[Barbie-saaan, I'm I going to die? Is that decided already...!?!]

...Err

"The game's over...they're here"

Kudou-papa changes the images on the monitors.

Ahead of the corridor, men in black combat clothes appear, heading towards Barbie-san

There are around 20 people.

They're terribly disorganized...they're not maintaining any formation.

Even I can see that they're not trained in team fighting.

This guys are Viola's advance withdrawal team?!

[My my. Well then, Barbie-san. You're going to kick them away...!]

Barbie-san holds onto her prided flail...

[Banba-chan, take a break...]

Barbie-san said.

[Eh, why?]

[It's not good to not understand the enemy's ability at first glance...Banba-chan.
There's around 5 professionals mixed in with those amateurs...!]

Ruby-san also takes out her rubber bullet shotgun...
Then she took an automatic rifle which was hidden nearby.

[Ruby-san, that AK is loaded with live ammo?]

Banba-san's surprised.

[Yes. We're not going to survive unless we try to kill them seriously...!]

The black enemy troop comes closer to Barbie-san and the two.

[Ruby-chan, take my weapon]

Barbie-san reaches her hand out to Ruby-san while staring at the[enemy]

[Wood or iron?]

Ruby-san opens the golf bag.

Barbie-san...are you going to fight these people with golf equipment?

[Isn't that obvious?...Black Shaft!]

[Here, Nee-san!]

Ruby-san hands Barbie-san a long black rod.

...Jaki!

In an instant, it stretched out to become the height of Barbie-san's back...

...It's a fishing rod.

[Hmm, hmm, hmm...!]

Barbie-san receives and swings around the black fishing rod.

The black rod's axis stirs up a gale around Barbie-san...

[Good, good...I'm going to fish you out, boys...!]

Ruby-san peels off the cover sticking to her nipples.

[As expected, if I don't expose my nipples, then I can't sense the enemy...!]

Making a clicking sound, she checked the rifle again...

[Barbie-san, what should I do...?]

Banba-chan's confused at the two completely motivated people

[Banba-chan...you can make a report on the film [lake of illusions] over there]
[...Whaaaat?!]

[The theme would be the relationship between the space shuttle and the warring states era]

[That's impossible! I never understood the meaning of that movie at all...!]

[Then, briefly summarize the plot with the space shuttle, tango, and champagne and Takeda Shuhei as the axis of the television drama [I want to be loved for love]]

[That's impossibleeee! That drama's story development is so messed up!!!!]

[Why is it that Japan's live action story on space shuttles always turns into [brainstorming flower garden]...]

Ruby-san said quietly
The enemy's approach stopped.
All the men in black combat clothes have a pistol.

[Banba-chan...watch out for stray bullets. Think about your own survival for now...!]

...Dadaaaan!!!

The Banbarubie 3 ladies jump into the shadows along with the first gunshot!!

[Barbie-san!]
[Banba-chan, don't go out!]
[But...!]

[The enemy's different from before...even if you get close, they won't stop shooting out of fear of friendly fire. They're fine with shooting their allies!]

Oh...if Viola's men are among the Russian people then...
They'll shoot Barbie-san and others together with the Russians.

[That's how it is!]

...Zudadadadada!

Ruby-san fires her automatic rifle...!
The enemy takes cover in the shadows in panic

[Here...]

Barbie-san swings her fishing rod!

...Shuba!

Something glitters in the air...?!

[Guwa!]

An enemy combatant hiding behind a big marble statue screams!

[Enjoy Fishing!!!]

Barbie-san...you're fishing enemies?

[By the way, this isn't a normal hook. When it pierces, it has a mechanism of squirting out a fast acting and deadly poison...!]

There's poison in the fishing hook?

[It's useless to hide! Barbie-san's [Queen Bee Dynamite Needle] will pierce to your heart! Shalala!]

Barbie-san swings her fishing rod!

At the tip of the rod is a thin and robust thread...and the poison needle draws an arc, jumping into the figure of the enemy!

[Akaga...!]

If the needle sticks to anywhere in your body, you're out.

What a frightening weapon

[..... ! !]

Barbie-san raises the fishing rod to return the needle...one of the enemy tries to grab the thread.

[...Sorry for you!]

Barbie-san pulls the reel!

Shujujuju...!

The palm of the man who's wearing black gloves raised a smoke as it rubs with the thread...!

[Gua!]

The man let go of the thread from the pain of his hand being torn.

[Okay then...!]

That's when Barbie-san throws over the poisonous needle!
That man got hit by the needle and fell down in agony.

[It's made of special thread and needles. It won't be cut easily, and, even if you try to grab it without gloves, your fingers will be cut. Because the needle is a special alloy, it can easily penetrate combat clothes...!]

Ruby-san holds them back with the rifle...
Barbie-san hits them with a needle poison from the blind spot.
The battle continues for a while...

...Zudadadada!
...Bibyun!
...Zuba!
...[Ugaaa!]

[Hey, it's about time Banba-chan sees it too]

Barbie-san said

[There's five mixed into the crowd who are moving together]

Those five people are Viola's subordinates?

[They're going to come at us soon]

At the moment Barbie-san said...
One of the enemies throws something at Ruby-san
No way...a grenade?!

[They wouldn't throw hand grenades in an indoor location like this...!]

Despite saying that, Ruby-san jumps into cover with her rifle...!

...Juwa!

It's smoke grenade.
White gas spews out!
While Ruby-san is thrown off her position...
Several enemies rush towards Barbie-san...!

[You can use this rod like this too!!!]

Barbie-san turns the pole to a whip inside the white smoke and slaps each enemy...!

...Bishu! Bishu!!

...Bibibibishushu!!

The air is being split...!

[The speed of the tip of the rod exceeds the speed of the sound!!]

The masks of the enemy in black combat clothes are broken...each of them are taken down.

[By the way, there's also poison on the tip of the rod!]

What a poisonous rod...!

[It's an old saying...sexy ladies are poisonous]

No...I don't think so,

But, I can see that Barbie-san's a poisonous woman

[By the way...Hey...it's only the five of you...come out!]

Barbie-san waves the rod to provoke the enemy

[Barbie-san, even if you say that in Japanese...!]

Banba-san retorts

[My, I wonder...]

Then, Barbie-san said something in fluent English...

[Barbie-san, that's just cruel, too cruel. It's so cruel that you'd definitely lose if you're sued by the US. That's a horrible taunt...]

Banba-san says from the shadows...

Somehow, she said some slang or something absurd...

...Then

The hidden enemies reveal themselves...

1, 2, 3, 4...5 people

All of them removed their goggles and masks...

All of them are blonde, white men.

"Romeo Montague..."

Nei-san mutters looking at one man's face.

Viola seems to have sent one of his executive with the withdrawal team.

The remaining four...should be subordinates of Romeo Montague.

Perhaps, the cooperation of the five is perfect.

[My...all of them are blonde men!]

Barbie-san smiles.

[I loved Albert's [candy candy] when I was child you see. Therefore, one day, I told my mom... [Mama, when I become an adult, I'm going to marry Albert... then, mom said...]

The black fishing rod trembles.

[...[Don't marry a part-timer, at least marry someone who has regular work], she said. Mama in heaven, sorry. Your Barbie is doing more inconsistent jobs than a part-timer...!]

[Well, we're complete outlaws, far from inconsistent jobs]

Ruby-san smiles wryly

Of the five men, two take out knives and three take out guns.

[...It's a two top three follow-up]

Romeo Montague is of course in the middle of the follow-up group...!

《.....GO ! 》

Romeo Montague ordered and the five men all moved at once...!

The two men with knives go around between Barbie-san and Ruby-san.

Now, Ruby-san can't shoot to hold them back...!

[Ha!...What a textbook act...!]

Chapter 326. Barbie girls

"But still, those enemies aren't afraid of friendly fire at all..."

Michi says as she look at the monitor.

"I wonder..."

Kudou-papa mutters...

...Dadan!

The five men surrounding Barbie-san shoot their guns calmly, not caring about their allies at all.

[...Oops!]

At the moment the muzzle faced her, Barbie-san moved her body...!
The two knife-wielding enemies rush towards her!
Barbie-san mows down the knives with the black shaft...
Again, she has a pistol aimed at her.

...Dogan!

...Zuzuun!!

This time, two fire at the same time.
But still...Barbie-san lightly dodges.

"Amazing...Those are some great reflexes"

Reika's impressed.

"That's not all...Barbie-chan is fully aware of the movements of all five of the people attacking her. She foresees the next actions of the other party, so she can make her moves at the last minute"

Neko-san explains.

"But, why are those guys shooting so much?"

I asked.

They're not minding that the stray bullets will hit their allies, but...

"Those five people are quite trained. Since they know each other's position in the formation, they can shoot without worrying"

Margo-san said.

"The male Cesario Viola has a poor image, but his subordinates all have first class skill.... Their power is what maintains Viola's organization. Romeo Montague is a big name executor among them. Your life is forfeit if you underestimate them"

I see... that's why
Barbie-san had Banba-san back down.

"Up until now, they've only been half-amateur Russian thugs...it's like playing baseball with kindergarten children, then suddenly a major league fastball ace comes out. If you get used to fighting those Russians, you'll gbe killed by Romeo Montague. Of course, that's one of the enemy's tactics though..."

"In short...Banba-san, who's been fighting the Russian thugs brought in by Viola, wouldn't be able to follow with her eyes or bodies when Romeo Montague's team appeared suddenly?"

I asked, and Margo-san smiles wryly...

"It's not just speed and combination. First class professionals' blood thirst is completely different. If you're inexperienced in the battlefield, you'd be intimidated by those professional teams..."

"I see...that's why Barbie-san hasn't been participating in the fights until now...! They leave the low-rank Russian enemies to Banba-san so they can deal with a high level enemy immediately when it appears...!"

So they don't get used to the low enemy levels...

"Nope, that's not the case. It's just the simple age difference. Those girls' hips hurt after they've fought for a long time..."

Kudou-papa pokes fun.

"But, this situation is just bad. If it takes too much time, then it would be worse even for Barbie-cha..."

Neko-san says anxiously.

"Besides, she can't keep that speed up...even her"

On the screen, Barbie-san continues to dodge sharp knives and bullets. She's been keeping that speed up for five minutes without stopping.

"Don't be ridiculous...if the enemy's a first class executioner then Barbie-san is a first class guard. That's how she is. She's already thinking of her next move...!"

Kudou-papa believes that Barbie-san will counterattack...

[Ahaha...you guys are good! I praise your combination and concentration. It seems like you're trained with five people...but!]

Barbie-san's eyes shine.

[What is she thinking in this kind of situation...?]

The man with a knife slashes at Barbie-san again!
Barbie-san dodges at the last second.

Then, a shot!

...She avoided this as well.

...Then

The first man, holding the knife, suddenly fell.

Looking at it...Barbie-san's fishing rod hit the man's foot.

She hooked the needle on the man while dodging...

[Look...the combo collapsed]

Barbie-san pokes the stick into the neck of the fallen man!
The man faints in agony.

[Okay, one less person!!]

Romeo Montague says something in English...!
One man with a handgun throws his gun to Romeo Montague.
Then, he pulled a combat knife out from his waist.
Two knives and two pistols...Romeo Montague has two handguns.
Their formation shifts into four people immediately...!

[I see, they're also trained for when there's a missing member...!]

Barbie-san smiles wryly and attacks the enemy again.
Her physical strength is getting exhausted...

She's sweating severely...breathing heavily.

[Uhiii...we're gonna be in a bad spot if this continues]

[Barbie-san, I'll cover you!]

Banba-chan says, but...

[Don't be joking! Your movement is so bad that even a two man team could take us down!]

Barbie-san shouts.

True...swinging her long and heavy flail won't be able to match the speed of the enemy

[You just watch from over there! Okay!]

[But, Barbie-san!]

[Do as Nee-san says...Banbaaa!]

Ruby-san shouts.

[If Nee-san tells you to watch then just watch!]

Ruby-san replaces the rifle's magazine...

She can't shoot because of the possibility of stray bullet right now but...

She believes that there's a chance to reverse the situation.

[...But]

Then...in the end, Barbie-san's legs get tangled and she's about to fall!

[...Uwa!]

[B-Barbie-san?!]

[...But that's just a prank!]

Barbie-san rotates before hitting the floor and throws something at the knife wielding man approaching!

[...Ugaaa!]

Is that the poison needle at the end of the black rod?!

The man with the knife falls in agony

[Okay...that's one less person]

Three people remaining.

Barbie-san smiles but...she's already dizzy.

Romeo Montague orders his men to do something again...

The two with pistol holster their weapons.

Then...they pull out knives.

[It's about time they had less bullets, so everyone's taking out knives...!]

Barbie-san says while breathing roughly...

[Isn't that better? If there's no guns then it'll help us...!]

Barbie-san throws the black rod and raises her fist.

[If there's no pistols, then I'm going too...!]

Then, Banba-san jumps out of the shadow, flail in hand...

At that moment...!

Romeo Montague and the three guys with knives retreat...

At the same time, two men who shouldn't be there jump in, armed with machine guns...

This is bad...!!!

Barbie-san and Banba-san will be shot!

At the moment I thought so...!

Bika!! Bomu! Bomu!!

An intense flash and an explosive sound come from the feet of the machine gun men!

[There you go]

Dougagagagaga...!!

With her automatic rifle, Ruby-san mows down the men with machine guns who had stopped moving after the sudden dazzling light!

At the same time, Barbie-san kicked Romeo Montague's head...

[...Uguaaaaa!!!]

Following that, the remaining two receive a fist to their vitals while their eyes are dazzled.

...F-Fast!

Her movements are faster than a while ago.

[...Yessir!]

Barbie-san throws shuriken down at the two machine gun wielders who'd collapsed!

[...Uga!]

[...Ugee!!]

The men faint in agony

This reaction...are the Shurikens also coated with fast acting poison?

"Haa, haa, haa..."

Barbie-san confirms that all of the enemies are silenced...and then gets on all fours on the floor.

[...Ruby-chan, good job]

[Barbie-saaan!!]

Banba-san jumps out.

Ruby-san stands up slowly, holding her gun.

[Either way, I know that it's body armor or a bullet proof vest...it's the right answer to make it a rubber bullet with strong striking force]

I see, since the enemy can't be beaten with live ammunition...

Ruby-san prioritized knocking down the opponent...so she changed the magazine to rubber bullets?

Also, Barbie-san noticed it, therefore...

She threw poison shuriken at the machine gun guys who'd fallen down.

[Yeah. Thanks to Ruby-chan chan knocking them down...I'm saved]

Barbie-san's not standing up yet.

[Uhm...why did the floor suddenly flare up?]

Banba-san asks Ruby-san.

[Oh? We knew that there was going to be an ambush, so I set up a wireless flash mine]

[Eh...when?]

Ruby-san smiles wryly.

[Secretly, so Banba-chan wouldn't notice...]

[Eh, why didn't you tell me?!]

[Because...if we tell Banba-chan, you'd just say[let's use the landmine over there]even in front of enemies...!]

[Muu...I wouldn't do that!]

[...Hmm, really?]

Ruby-san stares at Banba-san.

[Err...I might. Yeah...]

Banba-san's face turned red.

[But...how did you know the enemy would form an ambush?]

[Well, of course...I'm a pro]

Barbie-san said.

[Those guys are professional executioners, and yet they came at us directly you see? Well, they might have been underestimating us, but...that's an unworthy action for a genuine professional]

[Banba-chan, remember this...on the battlefield, only amateurs pick a sink or swim fight. A genuine professional tries to make a situation where they're at an overwhelming advantage, by all means. Even if it's cowardly...even if you're just crushing an ant, you take out a tank. Overkill is acceptable, but never try to take a position you could lose...]

[At first...the professionals hid themselves among the amateur Russians...that was to get our guard down. That's how they think. Showing their pistols, trying to convince us that they don't have a more powerful weapon. Then, they put away the gun because they're out of bullets. Therefore, Banba-chan earlier believed that[there's no more shooting now]and jumped out without thinking. That's when...the ambush with the machine gun jumps in...It's a very cowardly but well planned move...]

I-I see...

The first team of five were a decoy.

[However, with this strategy...they have to put out a useful guy in advance. Everyone who fought directly had combat abilities, but the two machine gun guys were inexperienced fighters. Therefore, they got caught by the flash mine

and I took them down with the poison shuriken]

[If the enemy had arranged a skilled person for the ambush...Banba-chan would've been full of holes when she jumped out!]

[Noo...please don't say scary things, Ruby-san!]

[Well, the other side is short of people. The commander was the type who wants to go out]

Barbie-san said.

[Anyway...Banba-chan's still half-baked. Listen, you can't graduate from us until you become qualified on your own!]

[Yes...please teach me from now on! Barbie-san. Ruby-san!]

The straightforward Banba-san lowers her head to the two ladies.

"Saying that much...even though you don't intend to let her go"

Neko-san says as she look at Banbarubie 3 on the monitor.

"...Is that so?"

"That's right. Barbie and Ruby love to raise honest girls like Banba-chan But, they don't want them to be independent They meet a good man, retire... always. Banba-chan is still young, so she'll be staying with the team for a couple of years more"

"What about the girl before Banba-chan? If I recall...Gan-chan, was it?"

Kudou-papa asks Neko-san.

"Yes. They were[Ganbaruby-3]back then Gan-chan is now the wife of a grape farmer. I got their new year's card..."

"I see"

"Before Gan-chan, they didn't have a code name like now; they were just a[female group]team"

"Wasn't it[three musketeers]?"

"That's way before"

"Even though they're[three musketeers]it was four people"

"Yeah...they got two newbies back then"

"In the first place, Barbie-san and Ruby-san were originally a two woman team, right?"

"Yeah, at first, they were[Rinrin]and[Ranran] Speaking of which..."

"Then, a newcomer came in..."

"Yeah, she was[Kankan]chan"

...Rin rin, ran ran, kan kan.

"There was a girl who didn't get along with Ruby and quit immediately, right?"

"There's a lot of them. [Feifei]and[Tonton] There's also a child called[Yuuyuu]"

"Since when did she call herself[Barbie]?"

"From[three musketeers] [Barbie, Ruby, and Great Muta]was the combination back then"

"Yeah, they've got a history...!"

"...Yes"

Reika shows a gloomy face.

"I was invited to the team by Barbie-san, but..."

"Oh, isn't that because they thought you were a straightforward worth teasing?"

Neko-san said laughing.

"...Am I worth teasing?"

"Oh well, Barbie-chan only picks girls who have good character...I think that you should be proud that you were recognized by that person"

"...Haa"

Reika's expression is complex.

Her character is recognized...Reika herself is a top elite of Kouzuki security service...

She's already a full fledged guard.

"I look like a half-person to Barbie-san"

If it was the old Reika, she would've opposed violently, but...

Reika right now admits her immaturity obediently.

Reika's also changing.

"With this...Cesario Viola's main troop has decreased by 7, making it 13"

Kudou-papa calculates.

"With that said, Cesario Viola himself and Lorenzaccio Bandini don't have much fighting ability...there's only eleven people we need to be careful of"
"Kudou-chan...but there's still Giuliano Jenka, a big figure...I think that they're hiding trained executor teams like Romeo Montague"

Neko-san says.

"Well, I guess...the enemy's that famous criminal organization in Los Angeles. It's possible that they'll throw out some absurd[hidden ball]...!"

Really...as far as I can see, the male Cesario Viola is an idiot and a vulgar, perverted old man, and yet...
Viola's organization's men...miss Cordelia, Romeo Montague and his team...are all first class executioners.

What's with this gap...?

"...What's wrong?"

Margo-san asks me.

"No...I wonder why these guys are putting up a small time villain like Viola on top of the organization"

Margo-san...

"As expected, the male Viola's just a pretext boss"

...Yeah

"Even when fighting with Dai Grepher san...the orders came from Lorenzaccio Bandini"

Nobody's following the male Viola.
And yet, why did everyone come to Japan...?
Didn't the male Viola come to Japan because of his personal grudge against Nei-san...?

"Anyway...Barbie's got to rest"

Kudou-papa said...not caring about the swirling suspicion in my mind.
On the screen, Barbie-san is still down.

"It's been a while since she's kept her top speed up for that long, it can't be

helped"

"It's the age...AGE!"

Kudou-papa laughs.

"But, it can't be helped now that it has come to this. I've got to go down and directly command the decisive battle with Viola's main troops. I'll leave this room to Neko..."

The rest is only two units.

The decoy troops are heading upstairs...

And Viola's main troops head to the lower floors.

"Now then...it's the climax!"

Chapter 327. Transformation

How many people are available right now?"

Kudou-papa asks Neko-san.

"Right...we have two teams taking a break. [Couples]and[Carnabies] Also, since the eighth floor control is over, we can move Jim Button, Ema's Combination, Takeshi Hunter, Takashima Takehide, and the Middle Aged Tantric Detectives. The team[friends]of Michelle and Paul are available too...!"

Neko-san checked the situation of all members and gave a quick answer.

"Remove Takeshi Hunter He's only good with close quarters. Are there any members of[Cups]that have fallen off?"

"Ko-chan and Dave are alive. Ma-chan and Mamoru seem to have escaped halfway"

"What about Mickey and Kenneth?"

"They're in the rest room, I think they'd come when called"

"Then call them. Those guys are skilled so I'd be troubled if they lose their motivation immediately. Instead of Mamoeu, throw in Motchin from[Carnabies]"

"Roger"

"Those on the 8th floor go to the 7-14 route. Gather those on the 10th floor at D7"

"Viola's main troops can't enter from that route"

"Contact Yazawa pops and tell him to not open only firewall D7"

"I see...then, it'll be a shortcut"

The two make such conversation while studying the maze-like interior map.

"If you raise a fire wall badly...the four infiltrators might join Viola, but..."

Seki-san presents her advice.

True, though it's a harsh situation, it's highly likely that miss Cordelia would come to rescue Viola and others.

"Hey hey, if we gather ten people together, even if they're skilled, it won't be

easy for them you know? Besides, it's enough to open the fire wall D7 only when we're passing through. Once we get through, just close it again. If Yazawa pops is in the[headquarters]then he can freely control that...!"

Kudou-papa said.

"Anyway, I'll head to the scene. I'll leave talking with Yazawa pops to you, Neko"

"Yes, I wonder if Yazawa-san's back from the restroom"

Right...

When they contacted the[headquarters] earlier...chief Yazawa had left his seat.

"...Should we go too?"

Margo-san makes an offer.

"We've got a connection with Cesario Viola. If possible, I want to beat him with my own hands..."

"Right, should we come too? Even if it's a little power, the more the better"

Seki-san also helps Margo-san...

...But

"Hey hey, don't go joking on me. I'd gladly borrow the foreigner lady, Seki-kun, Fujimiya-kun's power but...those ladies over there and this boy would be coming along too right?"

Kuou-papa looks at me, Nei-san and Yukino.

"I will protect these people... !"

Michi said, but...

"Don't underestimate the battlefield...! The other party's a group of genuine killers. There's no way you can bring someone with no fighting power!"

"...Father"

Kudou-papa speaks to Seki-san and Margo-san...

"Either way...it's our work to repel them away. We're not Kouzuki security service, free guards have their honor too. If we borrow your power then it'll just hurt my reputation. Sorry, but please back down for now...!"

Margo-san's not a free guard.
She's carrying the name of the criminal organization called[Kuromori]
Seki-san and Reika are from Kouzuki security service.
If he borrows guards at the last minute...I can tell that the free guards which
Kudou-papa gathered will have their honor dirtied.
It's possible that their evaluation might be that[the free guys are useless]

"I'm the one who should say sorry. I said something selfish..."

Margo-san apologizes to Kudou-papa

"It's fine. You've got a lot of troubles I don't know. I understand the feeling
that you want to take him down with your own hands. But...as you can see, the
situation is in our favour, but it's the fear of combat that might reverse things
on the site. Sorry, but I can't take outsiders. Please understand"

"...Okay"

"Watch Cesario Viola's troops get annihilated from this room. That would be
the safest"

Yeah...here, we can watch the fight of Kudou-papa and Viola

"However...if the worst happens and we get done...!"

Kudou-papa smiles

"At that time, Yazawa-pops will officially call out his top elites. When that
happens, Seki-kun, Fujimiya-kun...my best regards!"

First, Kudou-papa and the free guards head for the battle.
Since he took the trouble to call the free people, he has to trust them up to the
last minute.
At this stage, if Kouzuki security service men comes out...the free people's
reputation would be crushed.
If that happens...the free guards would be refused work requests from Kouzuki
security service.
It's quite hard for a company to hire a skilled contractor.
Then...unfortunately, only in a situation where the free guards can't control it
anymore...
The top elites of Kouzuki security service would head to the rescue...
Us...[Kuromori]can never head to the battlefield...

That's obvious.

A surface company like Kouzuki security service can't afford to rely on an underground organization like[Kuromori]

"Well then, let's go!"

"Father...fortunes of war!"

Michi tells her father.

"You too. Watch your father do cool things from here!"

"...Certainly"

Then...Kudou-papa jumps out of the room.

"Let's go! Let's go! Let's goooo!!!! DODONGAGON! My courage is at max!"

He fires out strange voices...

"Really, your father's an amusing man"

Neko-san tells Michi

"...Father is my pride"

Michi answered.

"...If possible, I want to crush Viola in front of Nei though"

Margo-san tells Nei-san, feeling disappointed...5

"I think that's the best way to get rid of Nei's trauma..."

Nei-san's parents were killed by Cesario Viola...

Her brother, Kei-san, also died before Nei-san's eyes.

Including her imprisoned life for several years...

Viola's made a nest in Nei-san's heart...as a fundamental fear.

"...Maru-chan"

"But, it can't be helped. Let's watch from here"

Margo-san presents her hand to Nei-san

"...Yeah"

Nei-san holds that hand.

"That's right. There's enough people like us who will be fighting on the field.

There's no need to force you to jump into danger"

Neko-san said

"Now then...I've got to contact Yazawa-san"

Neko-san picks up the phone.

"Hello, Tony-kun? Did Yazawa-san come back?"

We listen carefully.

Since we left[headquarters]...We haven't talked to chief Yazawa.

I would like to hear Neko-san's conversation to understand chief Yazawa's true intentions.

I know that chief Yazawa is connected to miss Cordelia.

"Eh? He's not back yet?"

Chief Yazawa remains away from the headquarters...

"You see, yeah...I think you've been watching over the monitor, but I'm organizing the decisive battle. They're gathering at D7 on the 10th floor, so we want you to open the fire wall for just a moment. Yes, our boss went over there"

While Neko-san is talking...Margo-san looks at the images from the cameras on each floor.

Seki-san looks at the computer monitor.

It seems she's checking how many troops are deployed and on which floors...

"What, it's impossible without Yazawa-san's permission? Then hurry up and look for Yazawa-san. We're in a hurry too. Norma-chan's there, right?"

Seki-san noticed something.

"...Margo-san"

"Yeah, I noticed it too"

The two look at each other.

...Then

...Pipipipipi!

An alarm sounds in the room.

No, it's not just in this room.

The whole hotel makes a warning sound

"W-What...?!"

...Jijijijiji

Looking at it...the fire walls descend from the ceiling of the corridor outside the room!

It's not just one.

The opposite corner beyond the corridor too...

The firewalls are all coming down together!

《...Sister!》

Michi shouts...and sister Edie comes running like a puppy.

She hides herself behind the door in the entrance of the room in a way Neko-san won't notice.

She completely erased her presence.

As expected of an assassin

...Jijijijiji, gachin!

The fire walls completely went down...

...We're trapped in here?

"It's not only this floor..."

Margo-san checks the surveillance monitors.

The abnormality of each floor is shown on the surveillance monitors.

All floors have fire walls descending one after another.

Up until now, only specific fire walls had closed, making the hotel corridors a labyrinth.

Now...all of them are closed indiscriminately

...Jijijijijiji, gachin!

...Jijijijijiji, gachin!

...Jijijijijiji, gachin!

"Hey! Tony-kun, what are you doing! What?...the headquarters didn't do anything?"

...Then that means

"Chief Yazawa is remotely controlling it from somewhere...?"

...Bururururu!

The building telephone rings.

"Yes, what's it?"

Reika picks up the handset, instead of Neko-san calling Tony-san

[What's going on with this! We got trapped between the firewalls...!]

Kudou-papa's shout can even be heard by us.

"...They got us"

Margo-san mutters

"All the people in the halls... the enemy teams and the free guards are all trapped individually. They got trapped completely with this"

Margo-san switches the cameras one after another...

All of the screens are trapped between walls.

Even Viola's unit...

The free guards who are wearing flashy costumes...

"No...there's only one unit that's moving without being trapped"

Seki-san says as she look at the display

"Which team?"

Black?...Or the flashy one?

"It's Cesario Viola's main unit...furthermore, the one's moving upwards..."

Margo-san quickly switches the camera...

...True

There's a group of men in black combat clothes walking through the corridor.
Only the movement of this unit isn't interrupted by the fire wall...

"Then that means...Kudou-san's expectation is wrong?"

Margo-san grunts.

"Viola himself and the executives, like Lorenzaccio Bandini, weren't heading downwards but heading upwards?"

I asked, Margo-san...

"That's how it is. This is quite bad. Really bad"

...Margo-san

"In this situation, Lorenzaccio Bandini didn't issue a[withdrawal]but a further[invasion] They've made some kind of deal beforehand..."

The Russian units were annihilated one after another...
There ere only a few fighters brought from from the US.
Kudou-papa thought that the unit heading upstairs was a decoy and that Viola and the others were withdrawing.

"What happened to the troops heading down?"

Margo-san flips and presses the switches.
The camera's image appears on the monitor.

"Yeah, they're confined as expected"

This is definite now...
The unit moving upwards is Viola's main unit.
...Then
Chief Yazawa's betrayal is also assured.

"Anyway! Get Yazawa-san and check the situation! We can't do anything in this situation!"

Neko-san shouts at Tony-san!

"What, you guys are trapped in the headquarters too? The door's locked from the outside?"

The[headquarters]name is a lie.
Somewhere in this hotel, there's a room where you can freely control the house's system
Chief Yazawa's in there

[You look surprised guys]

Chief Yazawa's voice comes from the ceiling's speaker
Yeah, he can see the state of this room from the real control room

"Well of course...What do you intend to do, Yazawa-san!"

Margo-san said in a loud voice.

[[Kuromori]people...you have to head to the 19th floor]

...19th floor?

[Cesario Viola will be facing you there]

Was that the plan from the start?!

[Seki-kun, Fujimiya-kun...take everyone with you]

The boss orders, Seki-san...

"...I refuse"

[You're not following the orders of the chief, me?]

"I can't judge whether the current chief Yazawa is ordering me to execute a legitimate task for Kouzuki security service"

Seki-san said clearly

"In addition, the content of your orders is to take a civilian, including a minor, to a dangerous place. I don't think that's a business order for a legitimate organization"

[You can't say that the people of Kuromori are civilians, you know? They're residents of the underground society]

"No, these are normal children. That's what I know!"

...Seki-san

"In the first place, I'm[Kakka's]personal guard. I am not chief Yazawa's subordinate...!"

[Then, I'll order my subordinate. ...Fujimiya-kun, bring them in]

...Reika

"I-I am chief Yazawa's subordinate. However, I've received a direct order from[Kakka]to protect them!!"

Reika replied with dignity

[I see...then the Kuromori house has to go by themselves]

...What do you mean?

[Kuromori Minaho is on the 19th floor as well]

...Minaho-neesan?

Minaho-neesan disappeared with Jii-chan, but...why?

"Minaho's with you? She must be safe...!"

Margo-san's expression stiffens.

[You can check her safety with your own eyes...!]

Chief Yazawa seems to be inviting us to the 19th floor by all means...

"We've got no choice but to go"

I tell everyone

"Yeah, let's go...Maru-chan"

Nei-san also readies herself...

"It can't be helped..."

Seki-san checks her pistol.

Reika also holds her cane of death.

Michi puts her hand on the whip under her skirt.

[You seem prepared. Then, I'll open a route from there to the 19th floor]

...Wiiiiiin

Of the firewalls that just closed...one side was opened.

From the floor to a half-meter high...

The height was fixed to where you can get through if you lower your head.

"Dammit! Don't give me that bullshit! I'm going too. It's dangerous with only you people!"

Neko-san says so, but...

"Neko-san, please stay in here. You've got to contact the free guards who were trapped, right? Besides, if the firewall opens, Neko-san has to make instructions"

I said.

This is the only room where the surveillance cameras and in-line calls can be made.

Neko-san has to stay in this room.

"You're right. Since we've been called...we'll be doing it from here. Neko-san, please support the free people...okay?"

Margo-san said.

...Also

"...Yukino, stay here"

Chapter 328. Encounter

"...Me?"

Yukino's speechless.

"Right...those who can't fight shouldn't go"

Neko-san said

"Since I know that you're from a prostitution organization...I've been ignoring her looking like that all this time, but..."

Yukino's wearing only my T-shirt and nothing underneath...
You can only think that something happened to her.

"I'm not interested in what kind of relationship you have with Kuromori house before coming it, I won't ask it either. But...just imagine what kind of eyes would you encounter looking like that if you're heading down!"

Yukino shivers.
There's still ten more enemies left...

"That's right. That's why you have to stay here"

I said, Neko-san then;

"You too, boy...!"

...What?

"I don't know why you're naked on your upper half, and not wearing any footwear but, it's just absurd to go on the battlefield exposing an untrained body. Don't you know that there's a homo among the enemy?"

O-Oh right.
The male Cesario Viola's a homo, right.

"It's okay! Viola's only interested in cute boys. I don't think that Yo-chan's his type"

Nei-san said, but...

"Though you say that...you should also stay here. You're not a combat staff, aren't you?!"

Neko-san's pursuit is harsh.

"Kuromori's...Margo-chan, right? If you say that it's your job from now on... then leave the children and go with only the professionals. Even if Michi-chan's skilled, she's still a middle school girl. You shouldn't bring them along knowing that it's a trap...!"

Yukino, me, Nei-san...Michi

"Even if I look like this...I'm a mother of one child. I can't allow children to be involved with adult circumstances. No, even Margo-chan is still a child in my eyes but you're already a professional guard"

"Yes...I'm a pro"

Margo-san answers

"If so...then don't take these young non-combat people, who you should guard, to the battlefield...I'll take care of these children. I'll never hand him to Yazawa-san. I'll protect them with my life...!"

Neko-san says.

...But

"I have to go!"

Nei-san smiles

"Cesario Viola's aim is me after all"

Margo-san immediately follows up Nei-san.

"No, it's not just Nei. The people who have hindered Cesario Viola three years ago in Los Angeles...and those people involved with the death of Viola's sister, Rosalind Orlando are targetted"

"But...it doesn't change that I'm the center, you know?"

Nei-san sighs.

"If I don't go...Viola and miss Cordelia won't be convinced." Surely"

...I

"If Nei-san's going then I'm going too"

I'm already prepared for it

"If I'm a drag then let me die...I'll be Nei-san's shield...!"

"...Yo-chan"

"If Master's going then I will accompany him"

Michi responds immediately

"If something happens to Master...then I must die on the same place at the same time. Misuzu-sama won't allow me to take my own life, but... But still, we can't chose to[not fight]here"

Then, she looked at Neko-san...

"We're very glad that you are worried but...we're a team. We will confront the enemy as a team"

Michi bows to Margo-san, Seki-san, and Reika.

"Margo-oneesama, Seki-sama, Reika-oneesama...please take care of us"

Seki-san smiles...

"Right. We're already a team. I'll blow them away...!"

...What? Blow away?

"No matter who it is...they shouldn't underestimate a professional guard's work"

"Yes...we've got our pride as a guard. I can't allow this to go this way"

Reika also speaks

"I'll make Chief Yazawa regret making fool of women...!"

The two have already decided to stand against chief Yazawa even if they get fired from Kouzuki security service afterwards...!

"Okay. I won't say anything then"

Neko-san tells us.

"Do your best so you won't regret anything. If you survive...then I'll take care of everything for the free guards' work..."

"Yes, thank you very much!"

Seki-san answered Neko-san on behalf of everyone

"Then, Neko-san, please take care of Yukino"

When I say so...Yukino

"Hey...wait a minute!"

...What?

"I'm going with you too"

Y-Yukino?

"I'm also a member of the team right? Didn't you say that you need my eyes...!"

True...I definitely said that when we're forming the members down the basement

"Yukino-san. I'm sorry to say but we're not at that stage anymore..."

Margo-san said...

"The place we're going only has enemies. Your eyes that distinguish who are suspicious are no longer needed"

...That's right.

"But, I want to go! I think it's better for me to go with you people than stay here! I'll definitely come! I'll follow even if I die!!"

...Yukino

"Are you that worried being away from Yo-chan?"

Nei-san asks Yukino.

"T-That's not it! I just think that it's safer to be with you people!"

Yukino denies.

"We're going to have our hands full from now on. I don't think that we can protect even Yukino-san"

Margo-san answered.

"Who cares! Anyway, just bring me with you!"

Shirasaka Yukino is a person that would spark her emotion at the moment instead of thinking logically.

"Neko-san...we're bringing her"

Margo-san said as she look at Yukino.

"What do you mean?"

"This girl has a strong independence on him. I think that she'll show panic symptoms if we leave her here. It's dangerous for her to be away from him now..."

"I'm not dependent on this man!"

Yukino shouts loudly

"Even if you say that...Yukino-san He's the only one you can trust in this place right now...am I wrong?!"

Margo-san said...Yukino looked at me.

"No...not only in this place. Yukino-san's family has already abandoned her. There's even a request to kill you. You have nowhere in your school. That was broadcasted in front of all students. Besides...even your real sister is treating you as evil...right now, the only one who is making company with you decently is only him, wrong?"

"That's not...true"

Yukino said.

"I still have my Papa"

For Yukino...the man named Shirasaka Sousuke seems to be an absolute existence.

"Hmm...would your father come to save you? Or rather...you already know in your head that Shirasaka Sousuke is the source of all this?"

Margo-san pierces Yukino's heart.

"I-I..."

"Enough. Even if Yukino-san doesn't know it with her head...you need him in

your heart. Therefore, when you separate with him, you'd feel tremendous fear..."

"I-I don't need him in my heart! Body... just body! My body feels good with him! That's all!"

Yukino desperately denies what Margo-san says, that her[heart depends on me]

"Anyway...if you're coming then you're welcome. However, don't leave his side so you won't become a drag"

"I-I get it..."

"Michi-chan. I'll leave guarding him, Yukino-san and Nei to you"

"Leave this to me, Margo-oneesama. We'll be heading with the same position as before...!"

"Yeah, let's go as the usual team..."



"Neko-san, please take care of the rest"

Seki-san tells Neko-san as we head out to the corridor.

"Don't mind it...Sorry, I can't support you with anything"

"No...we're grateful for your concern"

Margo-san said

Once again...we take a formation and depart.

After the first corner...I asked Margo-san.

"...What do you mean by concern?"

"Oh, you see..."

Margo-san approach my ears so she can whisper in my ears so it won't be heard by the hidden microphone.

"Neko-san noticed sister Edie"

...What?

"No...don't turn around. It's okay, she's following us"

Oh...if I look behind carelessly, they'd see it as suspicious when they look at the monitors.

"No, sister Edie completely erased her presence so Neko-san didn't notice her at first. But, when the fire walls closed suddenly, Michi-chan called her, didn't she? That was exposed. But...Neko-san pretended not to notice until the end. Even now, she didn't come to see us off the door...!"

True...she stayed in the room and didn't try to go outside.

"Sister Edie's presence is an important last resort in this kind of situation..."

...Yeah

Miss Cordelia and chief Tanziawa too.

They don't know that sister Edie became our ally in such short time...

"But, will she be okay alone...?"

We've been talking with Neko-san for very long.

She's alone...furthermore, we've been talking in Japanese which she doesn't understand.

Her concentration isn't down, is it?

"I don't think that there's a problem. Since she's educated as an assassin... she's been trained to aim for an opportunity to take down an opponent for hours"

...I see.

An assassin like sister Edie has to stay focused on the target until the opportunity comes.

"It hasn't been an hour since we parted from sister Edie, right? That's not enough time to break her concentration yet"

Margo-san smiles.

"Don't walk with that person...come over here!"

Yukino calls me.

"Well...go"

Margo-san pushes my back

"Yes"

I go to Yukino.

Yukino clings to my body.

"What's wrong...are you scared Yukino? You're trembling!"

"I-I'm not scared! I-It's just cold! I'm only wearing a shirt so it's so chilly!"

Yukino said then she glued herself to me.

Her breasts under her shirt sticks to me.

"Oh, nice...I'm cold too! Yo-chaaan~!"

Nei-san clings to me too.

Two girls take my sides.

Nei-san's also trembling.

These two are bad at exposing their true feelings.

The hotel's temperature is sustained.

Even me who has the upper body naked, I don't feel cold.

"Here, here. it's not cold...it's not cold...!"

I rub the back of the two with my best...

That's all I can do for now.

"Uwaa, that's warm...Yo-chan, thanks!"

Nei-san kisses my cheeks.

Yukino saw that and she snorted her nose looking sullen...

"If you don't take down at least one of Cesario Viola's executives...your reputation won't be able to stand"

Seki-san who's walking on second row tells Reika who's ahead.

"Well, I'll take them down...but, if chief Yazawa becomes hostile, what would you do, Seki-san?"

Reika shows a dark face.

Reika who has promise in high school Kendo was scouted by chief Yazawa of Kouzuki security service.

She must have some various complex thoughts regarding chief Yazawa's betrayal.

"I am a guard. I'll take away all the sparks flying on the people I protect...I will go with that simple idea"

"You're strong...Seki-san"

"I'm a guard before an employee of Kouzuki security service. That's all. What about Fujimiya-kun...you can easily make clear distinction, can't you?"

"...Me?"

Seki-san smiles at Reika.

"You're already family with these children, aren't you? As an[Oneesan]isn't it natural for you to protect your[little sister]and[little brother]?"

"...Seki-san"

"Fujimiya-san...I think that you're more suited as an[oneesan]than a guard"

"Do you think that I don't have the talent as a professional guard?"

"I didn't say that. Your striking and rushing power is outstanding. I think that you're the best as a team's vanguard. You're under a competent commander after all...you're not good at analyzing the situation and planning strategies"

"Sorry...I'm dull at those"

"Stop belittling yourself. People have things they're suited and not. It's better than Fujimiya-san than when you were so conceited about your combat ability, but..."

"I've caused various troubles"

"It's fine...I was also bumping into your recklessness. We're the same. Sorry. I also apologize..."

"No...it's all my fault"

"That's not true...I was at fault too"

Were these the two who were so bad with each other?

People...change. They change steadily.

People, and people's relationships...

"Let's return to the topic...you can combine being the first class guard and everyone's[oneesan] What I want to say is...Fujimiya-san who played as a lone wolf, dressed as a guy until now wasn't that good. I think that the[cute oneesan]character you're doing right now as a guard is suited for you"

"I wonder...I still don't know yet"

Reika answered bashfully.

"But now, I will cherish what Seki-san said...the feeling of protecting the

younger siblings as an[elder sister] Right...we can't lose this fight"

"Yes...we'll win. Definitely"

...Seki-san

That wasn't the top elite guard of Kouzuki security service...

She's becoming our ally from the bottom of her heart...

"I'm dull so I'll follow Seki-san and Margo imouto's instructions. I will turn this body to a sword and charge to dangerous places...!"

Reika said



Before long...we arrive at the staircase leading to 19th floor...

"...Watch your feet"

Margo-san's worried at Nei-san and Yukino who are trembling and called them out from behind

"It's okay! I'm clinging to Yo-chan!"

Nei-san, me, and Yukino descends the stairs sticking to each other.

This is a high-rise hotel so the stairs between each floor is long.

Even so...we arrived at 19th floor.

The stairs heading downstairs are closed with fire walls.

"...I'm opening it"

Reika opens the iron door leading to the 19th floor.

...Gacha

"...What?"

The 19th floor's state is completely different from the other floors.

"What's this...it's different from the floor map I remember...?!"

Seki-san is at loss.

There's nothing on the 19th floor.

Only thick concrete pillars and walls...

The ceiling's pipes are exposed...

You can see the opposite wall several hundred meters away.

All the four walls are gray concrete...no windows.

This is more like a parking lot in a basement more than a luxury hotel.

It's dim except for the lights on the wall.

"Yo...you guys are late"

The strong light illuminates the floor.

There's a large round white table around 20 meters away from us.

There's two people sitting there.

Chief Yazawa and miss Cordelia.

Chief Yazawa's on a three-piece black suit.

Miss Cordelia changed her dress into a pure white pants suit.

A black and white woman.

Both of them are our enemy

"...Where's Minaho?"

Margo-san shouts at chief Yazawa from the iron door on the stairway.

She inserts a cardboard that had fallen under the door...

She's trying to keep the door open

"What are you doing there?"

"Isn't that obvious? In this kind of location, one must secure an escape in advance"

Margo-san answered.

"It's useless...once you jump into the stairs, we can just drop the walls at the upper floor. I can do that in this terminal you see...!"

Chief Yazawa points at the terminal on the white table.

"Is that so? But, I've been taught to do anything that would increase my survival chances. Kyouko-san did...!"

Margo-san's real reason to leave this door open is...

For sister Edie's sake.

If ever the door can be locked remotely...sister Edie can't jump into this floor.

"Yeah, this looks good"

Margo-san confirms that the door is fixed...

"Let me ask once again...where is Minaho?!"

Our ranks are already prepared for battle.

Reika's holding her cane of death...prepared to jump over chief Yazawa.

Seki-san also pulls out her pistol, ready for support.

Michi's standing in front of us.

She's hiding the red whip in her back...

"Reika-oneesan...don't narrow down the target yet. We don't know where miss Cordelia's subordinates are hiding"

"...Roger!"

Margo-san instructs...Reika doesn't charge towards chief Yazawa but change her stance to be able to step in any direction.

"Well trained...! To think that you could make a team play with Fujimiya-kun"

Chief Yazawa's impressed.

"Nei, check the perimeter...they should have erased their presence. There's no other way but to search with your eyes"

Right...Miss Cordelia and the two attacked with Michi unaware of their[QI]
There's no choice but to look up with one's eyes to find the white Viola

"Yukino...look for them!"

"R-Raja!"

Yukino bit her tongue. Perhaps, she was trying to say "Roger" I think.

"There's no need to rush...just say when you feel[something's strange]or[this feels bad]...!"

Margo-san said

"My...I wonder if you can find them easily. My cute kittens love hide and seek...!"

Miss Cordelia smiles suspiciously as she sit on the white table.

"Reika-oneesan, you don't need to search...leave it to Nei and others...!"

Reika might unconsciously look for the enemy without thinking from what miss Cordelia said.

"Reika-oneesan...follow my instructions, concentrate so you can move at the max acceleration anytime. You don't need to think of anything else!"

"O-Okay..."

Reika cuts off her thoughts.

"...Mr. Yazawa knows where they're hidden, but"

Miss Cordelia speaks to chief Yazawa who's sitting on the next seat.

"What happened to Kuromori Minaho? I want to see her soon...!"

Chief Tanziawa...

"My men are taking her in right now...she'll be coming soon"

"Don't forget that she's also included in our contract..."

...Contract

"I know...Kuromori Minaho, Margo Starkweather, Natou Nei, your condition is to hand them over"

"That's right. I don't really care about the other children coming as a bonus but...if you don't hand over Kuromori Minaho, then I can't fulfil the contract on my side"

"Don't say that...she'll be here soon. Believe me"

Chief Yazawa promised to hand over Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, and Nei-san to miss Cordelia?

"Rather than that...aren't you people a bit late?"

"They're already here..."

...Then

On the right wall from where we are...

The door that's about 15 meters apart opened suddenly

...Giiii

《...Hurry up!!》

Miss Cordelia shouts towards the door.

...Then

From the other side of the door, men in black combat clothes come in

1、2、3、4.....。

I count with my eyes...

11、12.....13.

...There's 13 men in black combat clothes.

Cesario Viola's main team...

"...Reika-oneesan, Seki-san!"

Margo-san changes the team's position from the sudden appearance of the enemy

"Nei and others, jump back to the stairs when I tell you...! You can hide from the bullets with that..."

On this floor with only pillars and walls... there's no shield against guns.
...But

Viola's main troops are also confused?

They look around the strange floor.

"Listen. I'm calling you...Cesario Viola!"

Miss Cordelia laughs

"...What the hell is going on!"

One of the men in black combat clothes screams in Japanese.
This thick accent...Cesario Viola.

Nei-san's enemy

"Sorry but I want you men disarmed..."

Chief Tanziawa pushed a switch as he says so

...Bika! Bika bika!

The dark floor's filled with dazzling light

...Gacha!

...Gachagacha!

From the doors around the floor's wall...
Men in black suit comes in one after another.
All of them have big machine guns at hand.

The number's approximately 100 people

"That's the information members of Kouzuki security service"

Reika mutters

"If the security department, the uniformed team under director Yamaoka is the surface of Kouzuki security service then...the[information department]is in charge of the underground"

Seki-san said, I...

"That information department is also the top...?"

"Yes...they're under chief Yazawa"

These 100 black suit men with machine guns head to us and Viola's troops. Then...

...Gacha!

There's another 20 black suits people appear from another door... Who are these guys?

There are giants, petite people, and even women...

Their[qi]is completely different from those of information department.

They have a heavy atmosphere

"...Even this?!"

Reika's speechless

"Could it be that they're Seki-san's colleagues?"

Margo-san smiles wryly

"Yes...they're all from the top elites"

"To think that everyone that's supposed to be guarding other houses would come!"

Chief Yazawa's subordinates...the strongest guard group... All of the members have been gathered.

100 machine gun people...and 20 top elites.
On the side are Cesario Viola's main troops, 13 people.
Furthermore, the hidden white Viola.

In front...miss Cordelia and Chief Yazawa.

We've got nowhere to run to...!

Chapter 329. Lorenzaccio Bandini

"...Tell them to discard all their weapons"

Chief Yazawa tells miss Cordelia.

Miss Cordelia stare at chief Yazawa...

"Oh, I'm not a person who responds well to unilateral disarming"

Kouzuki security service information staff has more than 100 machine guns...
Even with 100 guns pointed at Cesario Viola and the 13 men, their combat position doesn't break.,
All of them are holding pistols at hand...

"This isn't disarming...either way, they've got some weapons hidden right? I'm not telling them to take those out. For the time being...just hand over the weapons they have at hand"

Chief Yazawa said.

"If this continues, I can't talk calmly..."

"Sure...got it"

She smiled...then miss Cordelia told the men in black clothes in English
But...the 13 men in black combat clothes doesn't move.

"What? Those guys aren't listening to your orders"

This time, chief Yazawa laughs at miss Cordelia

"Seems like it... Well, these guys are Lorenzaccio Bandini's men. They won't move unless their boss gives orders I think"

...What?

It's not Cesario Viola...

But instead, the boss is Lorenzaccio Bandini...?

"As expected. Then, no other choice"

Chief Yazawa speaks to the 13 enemies.

"Which one is Lorenzaccio Bandini? Raise your hand. I want to talk to you...!"

What?...Why are you speaking Japanese?!

Wasn't Cesario Viola the only one who understands Japanese in this unit...?!

"I know that you can speak Japanese. I've investigated properly. I've identified that you lived in US military quarters in Okinawa 30 years ago. My[information department]is very efficient...!"

...Wait a minute.

Wasn't it Cesario Viola who lived on Okinawa with American Soldiers when he was a child?

Is Lorenzaccio Bandini the same?

"That's a very interesting report...!"

Chief Yazawa speaks while smiling.

"Thirty years ago...two American boys got to know each other at Okinawa base. One is a son of Marine corps officer. The other one was a child of a collapsing hippie working at a laundry at the base. Wandering around the world, washed up in Okinawa...as an American, he lived as a good-for-nothing parasite at the base...!"

Cesario Viola and Lorenzaccio Bandini...

Both of them spent childhood in Okinawa...and are acquainted?!

"Fifteen years later...the two people grown ups met again in the slums of Los Angeles. Their standpoint completely reversed from when they were children..."

Chief Yazawa continues his story...

The 13 black combat clothes men...just stay still holding their gun.

"The good for nothing son before is now a member of the underground society in Los Angeles...he rose to be one of the bosses. But..."

Chief Yazawa's mouth distorts.

"The son of the former officer on the other hand, his dream to become a Hollywood star broke, became a small villain, spending everyday doing small crimes..."

The hidden story comes to light.

"Lorenzaccio Bandini...that's an interesting name [Lorenzaccio]...it's a drama

by Alfred de Musset Lorenzino de Medici is nicknamed[Medici's hamlet] The assassin of Florence, the best friend of Alessandro de Medici. Aren't they all names a hippie father give their child?"

Viola was the son of the soldier...
Bandini was the son of the hippie?

"In order to rise up in the underground, you made your hands dirty. But, after going up to a certain extent, the dirty work can be left to trustworthy subordinates. If a person tries to raise their name as a murderer even when getting old...such a human can't be a big name in the underground society. Especially it responds to the relationship with the celebrity who requests a big work.

The wealthy socialites in Los Angeles are looking for people willing to commit murder and dangerous work on a daily basis...

Just being a murderer won't make you a friend of theirs.

They don't want to shake hands with stinky red blood, a hand that might have killed someone a while ago...

As long as you're a killer, you'll be looked down by the celebrities.

If you're skilled...then work from the celebrities won't be interrupted...

Only a small person would want to be used..."

Chief Yazawa happily talks.

"But...Lorenzaccio Bandini is a man who loved the scene of murder. Furthermore, he doesn't trust others. He doesn't trust his subordinates from the bottom of his heart. He's a man who always thinks of standing on site and confirming the progress of the work.

Now then, what to do...?

The work is fun but...he'll end up as a small guy if this continues.

There's a possibility for the wealthy socialites to throw him away anytime...

Not wanting to be looked down on forever...the existence has to be equal, no, it has to be beyond that.

...Then, what would he do?

The young Lorenzaccio Bandini came up with one system to establish his position in the underground society...!"

...and that is?

"That is the[Cesario Viola]
Giving birth to the fictional criminal named[Cesario Viola]and making it known
that all his crimes were done by Viola...
Then, using the name[Cesario Viola]he dyed his hands on all kinds of crime...
selling the name in the underground society of Los Angeles. It was sold.
Then...he decided to make himself the manager of[Cesario Viola]
[Please contact me when you want to request a crime to Cesario Viola...!]or
something like that...!
I see...as a manager, he's not the criminal himself.
The impression of the wealthy socialites won't be too bad.
Besides, in order to request for a crime...you're in the position where you
directly interview the wealthy socialites.
If you receive jobs several times, you'll become familiar to them.
The trust can be gathered as a connection to the underground.
Then, Lorenzaccio Bandini has established a firm position in Los Angeles as the
manager of a nonexistent[Cesario Viola]
That's what it's all about!"

...Then
One of the black combat clothes men shouts sharply

"That's wrong!"

I heard this voice on the communication device.

"I'm Cesario Viola! Cesario Viola is here"

The man strikes his chest...
Then....

"Oh right. You're one of the Cesario Viola's existing..."

Miss Cordelia said clearly

"Lorenzaccio Bandini doesn't hold his protégé's subordinates at hand.
Depending on the work...he has to hire a contractor. But, in the site where
contractors are called, Viola must exist in addition to Lorenzaccio Bandini. If
not...it'll be exposed that Cesario Viola[actually doesn't exist]...!"

Miss Cordelia said, the male Viola...!

"...Wrong! I'm Viola! Cesario Viola! The legendary underground criminal in Los Angeles! The worst criminal! The organization's boss! Cesario Viola!"

Viola shouts...

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"Try saying that in English. Everyone would laugh out loud. The last men remaining here know your true identity and they're subordinates of Bandini who's a veteran...!"

Starting with those Russian thugs...

Old man Dai Grepher took ten people down.

With the exception of the seven that was taken down by Banbarubie3

The remaining 13 people are the core members with Lorenzaccio Bandini as center.

In short...they're Bandini's subordinates since old days.

They're all people who knows about the other side of the[Cesario Viola]system...

"When Lorenzaccio Bandini came up with the[Cesario Viola]system, he just happen to see you again. That's why Bandini decided to use you. If it's with you...he can speak Japanese where the other subordinates can't understand. That's why you became the first[Cesario Viola]actor"

Miss Cordelia said.

"...I-I'm not an actor. I'm Viola!"

Still, the male Viola refuses, but...

"What is the useless guy saying? You can threaten a weak person or kill a helpless man but...when the senior armed group doing a kill job, aren't you useless? Therefore Lorenzaccio Bandini made you a[Cheap and dirty work Viola]and prepared a different one for a[Viola for big works]...!"

True...The male Viola's behavior is too cheap...

It's not fit for Cesario Viola's legend.

"Wasn't there a talk about firing you and making another[Viola]is there? However...your sister, the first generation[Rosalind Orlando]has been quite useful Without her connection with you...you should've been fired already!"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"On the contrary...there was a discussion that it's better to have more than one[Cesario Viola] After all, it's really a fictional existence. It's a problem if the world discovers the real image of Cesario Viola. A man who see Viola as a vulgar, crude, and a talkative foolish man like you...and another man witness Viola as a cunning and reticent man. By spreading the loose images, [Cesario Viola's]legend is born..."

That's why the Viola's a number of people.
The male Viola spits...

"...I can't do this. They always tell me to get disguised when going on site...! Furthermore, they're saying to[make-up so your true face isn't shown] I do a different disguise everyday!"

Viola's disguised as a movie character every time he does his work. Lorenzaccio Bandini would call out the Viola on location and...Viola would be recognized as the[Cesario Viola — the boss of the criminal organization] In other words, the male Viola won't become[Viola]unless Bandini recognizes him

"And the instructions on the site are only to act...Actually, Bandini or Giuliano will take command. I wasn't even allowed to speak directly to the underlings at the scene...!"

The male Viola shouts.

"When I'm not working...I'm almost trapped in the mansion. They're monitoring me for 24 hours...!"

The male Viola's trapped?
No...with this character.
If he gets out, you don't know what he would say.
So that's why...

"Your long standing frustration...created the crack in the[Cesario Viola]system"

Chief Yazawa said

"Lorenzaccio Bandini allowed you to have boys to play with to vent out your stress. Since childhood, when you were in Japan...you liked to rape Japanese young men. You play as a representative of a Japanese company...looking for prey. Of course...While still being monitored..."

"My little sister is always watching me! That bitch's a faithful dog to Bandini..."

That's the role of the dead Rosalind Orlando...

"Then, you have taken Najima Keito and Najima Yasuko...!"

Nei-san trembles.

"Yeah...Kei was the best. He did everything for me in order to protect Yasuko. His face was beautiful, his skin was good...he also tasted the best. I was able to take everything from him"

I embrace the trembling Nei-san tightly

"However...Rosalind Orlando felt uneasy that you got devoted to Natou Keito. You neglected your work since the boy came in"

Chief Yazawa asks, the male Viola.

"That doesn't matter anyway! Either way, even if I'm not there, Bandini could do the job himself. I wasn't needed! If he's making me go out of my way, then he's just tormenting a shadow!"

"You think like that so there's no contractors when it's not an important job. Even with the role of[Cesario Viola]is absent, it's a scene without a problem..."

Chief Yazawa lets miss Cordelia take over.

"But, Lorenzaccio Bandini got angry with that attitude of yours. Rosalind Orlando felt uneasiness seeing that...if you continue to be addicted to Najima Keito, Lorenzaccio Bandini might dispose of you. In that case...it's not only you but her position as a sister would be at stake"

Miss Cordelia smiles

"That's right...that's why she tried to sell Kei and Yasuko secretly"

And the buyer back then was Shirasaka Sousuke.

Then, Minaho-neesan, Kyouo-san, and Margo-san saved Kei-san and Nei-san.

"That was the start of the worst. At that time[Cesario Viola]was working in Tijuana Mexico. You noticed that Rosalind's about to sell your precious pet, so you slipped through Bandini's eyes and returned from Tijuana to Los Angeles alone.

Lorenzaccio Bandini never thought that a small guy like you would do that, he was in quite a panic"

"The usual monitor, Rosalind wasn't there with me. I had the chance to escape...!"

"Bandini didn't notice that you were obsessed with that boy so much...that's why it's a fatal mistake"

Then...the male Viola returned to Los Angeles...
He fought Kyouko-san in the city...

"Bandini himself can't get away from Tijuana's scene...if he can't fulfil his work in Mexico, it would be a problem of trust. Meanwhile, you made a sudden trip to Los Angeles...using your name as[Cesario Viola]you gathered up small thugs and made a fuss. The people underground were watching you fooling around. Rosalind tried to stop you from behind the scenes but on contrary...she was killed by Kuromori people"

Kei-san killed Rosalind.
Kei-san shot back and both of them died...

"To make it worse...Najima Yasuko escaped. When Lorenzaccio Bandini returned from Tijuana somehow, everything's too late. The legend of[Cesario Viola]he has accumulated for many years was blown off. Especially Rosalind, her death was big. Three years since then...the reputation of[Cesario Viola]hasn't returned yet. Even now, the only job requests are only second rate...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs out loud.
So that thing happened?

"That's right, that's why I came here in Japan. I will pay back my debt by coming to Japan! I will kill Yasuko and those who helped her!!! If I show that Cesario Viola could show absolute revenge...the trust of the underground society will return as well. Even you people came to Japan to confirm that,

right?!"

Viola shouts at miss Cordelia

To confirm...?

Miss Cordelia's not a member of Viola's organization...?!

"That's right. I've been dispatched by the[council]to audit..."

...[Council]?!

"In this past three years...there's a lot of opinions in the[council]to stop investing on[Cesario Viola]due to the decline. That's why we're trying to reverse this...and yet, you keep on hindering us! Wasn't it the[council's]directive to cooperate with us?! Why are you people..."

Miss Cordelia stops Viola from speaking

"...It's completely different, you idiot."

Then, she snapped her fingers.

Immediately after...the door on a wall opens...

And the white female Viola and Rosalind appears.

The two of them are wearing white suit, same as miss Cordelia.

"...Let me introduce to you; The new[Cesario Viola]and[Rosalind Orlando]"

The two white beauties stand up behind miss Cordelia who's sitting on the round table.

The male Viola smiles

"...W-What do you mean?!"

"Let me tell you the[council's]decision. The current[Cesario Viola]system will be abolished. But...the[council]has decided to take over the idea of creating a fictional criminal and turning them to a legend"

Does that mean...?

"No way...you intend to kill us?"

"It's okay...even if you die[Cesario Viola]won't die It's a[fictional existence]after all We'll be taking the name and the legend. These girls are better than you. We'll be publicly advertising the[second generation Cesario Viola]but I think that they will be more popular than the first generation..."

They intend to renew Cesario Viola...?

"That's how it is...that's why you can come die in this Far East Land in peace.
Fuahahahaha...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

The two new white Viola too...

"Dammit! They got us...! Dammit! Dammit! Dammit!"

The male Viola shouts.

"...Too noisy. You shut up already"

A low voice of a man comes out of the group of black combat clothed men.
Another person speaking Japanese in this American group...

"My, I'm finally talking to you then...Lorenzaccio Bandini?"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"This is completely different from what I've heard from the[council]...miss"

Bandini's Japanese has a little accent.

"The[council's]promise is to dispose this guy in Japan. The[council]should
need my talent, my permission as the operator of[Cesario Viola]...!"

Disposing him here?

The male Viola's planned to be killed anyway...

"Mr. Lorenzaccio Bandini...how old are you right now?"

"43"

"If you're in Major League Baseball, it's about time for you to retire...!"

Miss Cordelia said.

"...What?"

"Samuel Stephenson from the council said[you've done a lot of work for the last
15 years] But, you don't have the next 15 years. You are getting too old to
operate the[Cesario Viola]system in the underground society...!"

"That's not true!"

"The failure three years ago...made the council judged that you can't manage
properly more than this man's rampage...!"

"Are you saying that I'm going to get killed here too?"

Miss Cordelia's been dispatched by the[council]organization to dispose all of the people involved with the[Cesario Viola]system so far...?

"Even if you die, [Lorenzaccio Bandini]won't die. The real Lorenzaccio Bandini is now protected by Mr. Yazawa's men

I see...the impostor Lorenzaccio Bandini that appeared at school.
Is still bound by Kudou-papa

Even if the real Lorenzaccio Bandini is killed here...

As long as the Lorenzaccio Bandini in custody exists...his death won't be confirmed.

"I should've thought about why you prepared an imposer for me"

Lorenzaccio Bandini smiles bitterly.

"Now...what should we do? I've got a contract with Mr. Yazawa...I don't need to dispose of you right away"

Miss Cordelia tells Lorenzaccio Bandini
...Then

"...Kuromori Minaho's late. How about we watch some attraction until they come here?"

Then she looked towards us.

"How about we have your remaining troops fight to death with Kuromori house?...! I'm sure it'll be an amazing show."

Fight with us?

"Isn't living or death so fun? Margo Starkweather...!"

She smiles coldly at Margo-san...

Chapter 330. Combat Open!

"...Why is Chief Yazawa and miss Cordelia talking in Japanese?"

Seki-san whispers.

"Maybe they don't want the American subordinates to know what they're talking about?"

I answered.

"I see...then, I think that they're talking with too much information"

Margo-san said

"...What do you mean?"

"They're purposely explaining so we would understand...!"

We...?

...Why?

"I don't know what chief Yazawa's aim is. But, I can imagine miss Cordelia's...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs at what Margo-san.

"She intends to murder us all..."

...That's..

"...That's right. You people will be dying here. Isn't it pitiful if you die without knowing anything? I thought of trying to tell you the situation before you die. Ufufu...aren't I kind? Your questions are welcome. I'll answer everything if it's now...!"

Miss Cordelia's smile shakes us...

"Then, I'll take your offer...was it the[council's]plan to kill us or your own idea?"

Margo-san asks.

"It's my idea...or rather, personal grudge. It's a personal emotion.

The[council]is unrelated at all...!"

Miss Cordelia's personal grudge?

"A prostitution ring like yours having relationship with a talented person like Kyouko is a loss of the underground. That's why I'll crush you all. I will murder you all and...Kyouko will return to her meaningful life...!"

After saying, miss Cordelia smiled.

"No, I might have to kill Kyouko in this occasion. If I kill her without others knowing that she's doing something so trivial like protecting a prostitute...her dignity won't be lost"

Miss Cordelia seems to be Kyouko Dothnomechey-san's partner before. She knows Kyouko-san's talent more than anyone. She can't forgive her becoming the guard of[Kuromori]

"Therefore...I decided to kill you all on this occasion. Though the deal was to get rid of Lorenzaccio Bandini, what's more important to me is to kill you. I'll beat you up, and kill you painfully. I had Mr. Yazawa help me out for that..."

Chief Yazawa puts his hand in front of miss Cordelia.
He's saying[shut up]

"You're talking too much from the excitement"

Miss Cordelia...

"It seems so...When I talk Japanese, I remember when I was with Kyouko, that's why I feel exalted...!"

Margo-san talks to Chief Yazawa

"Yazawa-san...you don't intend to answer our questions?"

Chief Yazawa smiles...

"I have the ideology of...[People who don't know anything dies happily...]"

Chief Yazawa intends to ignore us?

"I want to ask a question"

I said

"Go on. I don't know if I would answer it or not..."

Chief Yazawa speaks up as he look at my eyes...

"Are miss Cordelia's targets all the staff of[Kuromori]?"

"That's right...from what I've heard, she intends to kill you all"

"Then that means...Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, Nei-san, and me...?"

"Takanashi Katsuko too..."

Chief Yazawa answered.

I purposely omitted Katsuko-nee's name...

It's exposed that Katsuko-nee's a core member of[Kuromori]

"Katsuko-nee's just a prostitute. Miss Cordelia won't go kill a poor woman exploited by a prostitution organization, would you?"

...If that's how miss Cordelia thinks then I'm sure...

I think that she'll become sympathetic of a woman who has been tricked...

"Right...Then I'll exclude Takanashi Katsuko and Katagai Nagisa"

Okay...I got miss Cordelia's words.

"Promise also to not get the ladies of Kouzuki family and their friends involved with this. Those girls were just involved with us...they're unrelated to[Kuromori] ..."

I'm going to make a bet.

"That's a request from me too...If the Kouzuki ladies are gone, it'll hinder my future work"

Chief Yazawa tells miss Cordelia.

"That's true. In the first place, those girls haven't even met or talked to Kyouko-san...!"

Even I have never met a person named Kyouko Dothnomechey.
But, I'll bluff this one.
Miss Cordelia...

"Okay then...I'll only kill four, Kuromori Minaho, Margo Starkweather, Najima Yasuko, and you.... Actually, even if I just kill Minaho《Black Forest》would be

destroyed...but"

She laughs.

"Just who the hell are you? You didn't come up in the preliminary reports I have asked. You're not listed even in Mr. Yazawa's report..."

That's obvious.

It hasn't been a week since I joined[Kuromori]

"I never knew him at all...he must be a secret member of[Kuromori]"

Chief Yazawa's befuddled.

Okay...that's good.

If they didn't investigate me ahead of time...

Then they don't know about Megu or Mana at all.

I can call them as Misuzu's friends.

"True...it feels like he's an educator of the prostitutes from the sex show earlier...he must be a professional male prostitute. He must be doing it with rich old ladies however"

Oh, I'm glad that I did all my best doing a sex show at that place.

Miss Cordelia doesn't doubt that I'm an official member of the prostitution organization[Kuromori]

"Well...that's how it is"

I answered.

...Good

For the time being...the girls underground won't be harmed.

Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Misuzu, Megu, Mana, Ruriko, and Yoshiko-san will be fine.

Jii-chan said that they would definitely be safe until morning...

There's no security now that chief Yazawa's an enemy.

Even that basement may still have some other escape routes.

What's left is...

"This one's just an apprentice prostitute of mine. She hasn't taken a customer yet. I just forcibly raped her...made her get used to sex"

I explained about Yukino

"She's also a victim of us... She's not an ally...spare her as well"
"...You?"

Yukino's surprised.

"What's your name?"

Miss Cordelia asks Yukino...
Right.

Yukino's on the hit list made by Shirasaka's head.

Miss Cordelia would be receiving extra money from that.

...Don't answer with your real name

Try to say[Kishima Kuroko]for now...

"...It's Shirasaka Yukino!"

Y-You're an idiot...Yukino!!

"I'm Shirasaka Yukino...Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter!"

Miss Corderlia smiles...

"I'll kill you too, that would be 50k\$...it's a bit cheap but there's no helping it.
Your price is cheaper than your father..."

Yukino trembles.

"...Yukino, get behind me"

I get in front of Yukino.

"My...she's not an ally, is she? Why do you try to protect her?"

Miss Cordelia speaks to me ironically

"I just don't want her to die"

Yukino holds my arms tightly from behind.

"It's okay. I'll kill you and that girl together"

...Dammit
She really intends to kill.

"Now then, for starters...how about you all and Lorenzaccio Bandini's minions
kill each other?"

Suddenly, miss Cordelia looked at the men in black clothes.
Then she said something in English

"...She's talking about the[council's]decision to kill Lorenzaccio Bandini and Cesario Viola"

Nei-san whispers.

"Therefore...it's planned to kill all the subordinates along with the superiors but, those who are capable will be rehired by miss Cordelia and would be let to live..."

...That's just.

"She's saying that those who are confident in their skills raise their arms... they'll fight us and see their strength. If they survived from the fight then she'll help them out, she said..."

A few of the black suit men raised their hands quickly
It's 5 people from 13.

"...It's less than what I thought. They're not going to be loyal to Lorenzaccio Bandini this late, those who didn't raise their hands don't believe what miss Cordelia said at all"

Margo-san said

"What do you mean?"

"They know that miss Cordelia has no plans on re-employing them. Even if they survived, they think that they'll get killed anyway. Therefore...they're looking for an opportunity to run away from this place"

Is that how it is?

Rather, they have judged that it's a chance when miss Cordelia is concentrating on the battle between us and the black combat clothes men.

"What? Only five?...Well fine...it's the same number as those people. Isn't this going to be a good match?"

The same number as us...?

Margo-san, Nei-san, me and Yukino...and?

"That ninja girl is going to fight together with you, isn't she?"

Miss Cordelia looks at Michi.

"...Obviously. I am Master's servant"

I see...she knows that Michi is also a combatant from the previous attack.

"I will also fight."

Reika said.

"My, I heard that you are mr. Yazawa's subordinate however...?"

"Hmph...this one's a too single-minded! If she only thinks a bit more flexibly, you could live more comfortably, Fujimiya-kun...!"

Chief Yazawa-san, Reika glares at him...

"Please don't talk to me familiarly...you're already our[enemy]"

"Us...?! I see, you're already a member of Kuromori then"

Miss Cordelia smiles.

"I too will protect these children...!"

...Seki-san

"I don't want to lose my pride as a guard. I can't let these children be killed!"

"They're not children. Those people are dirty...maggots of a prostitution organization!"

Miss Cordelia hates[Kuromori]to the depths of her heart...

"No...these are children I will protect even with my life. They're children I want to embrace and foster"

"Hah! You got attached to these maggots by being with them?"

Miss Cordelia mocks Seki-san

"I don't care whatever you think...I will protect this children as a guard...!"

"Is that so?...Then I've got to change my thoughts too"

Miss Cordelia says something in English again.

Loudly, hysterically...ordering the men in black combat clothes.

"...What did she say?"

"Every man except Lorenzaccio Bandini and Cesario Viola would be fighting with

us... If not, they're going to get killed right now, she said..."

Nei-san translates.

In short...11 people.

We only have 7 people.

But, Nei-san, Yukino and I aren't fighters.

Rather, we're just hindrance.

"You guys are professional executors aren't you? You can easily kill girls right? If you can't even do that then I'll shoot you right now. I'll throw your corpses to the sea over there. Not even your memento would be coming back to your home. Sink in the sea of far east. Are you okay with that...?"

Miss Cordelia said all she has to say.

"...Don't let those guys use handguns"

Chief Yazawa tells Miss Cordelia.

"Oh...why?"

"I'm afraid of stray bullets...if those guys are indeed Lorenzaccio Bandini's main group then everyone's got a decent career, don't they? They might pretend to fight and aim at us you see..."

"Why don't you just avoid it...?"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

She's confident that she can deal with it even if she's suddenly aimed at.

"Since you and your kittens are young, you have the confidence to act quickly but, I'm already at the age. I'm no longer confident at avoiding being shot by bullets. Besides, I'd be troubled if those bullets reach my men. Those guys will still have to work under me...!"

I see, at the same time the battle begins...

Viola's men would try to run away from this place by all means.

They, who are cornered would be forcibly gun down in search for an exit...they might accidentally hit a person from the[information department]holding a machine gun.

"...You're unexpectedly coward"

"I've survived this long because I'm timid"

"I get it...I'll do as your say considering your frankness"

Miss Cordelia instructs the white Viola and Rosalind.
The two of them are smiling...

They walk towards the men in black combat clothes and do a body check.

"Well, if they're going to kill each other then it would be more impressive with a fight. Guns can end it right away...bang, if you're shot, it's a boring death"

Their white and long fingers...check the firearms the men hide, pull out the magazines and throw it away

"..... ! "

One of the men refuses to be touched by the white Rosalind.
...Then
Rosalind head butts the man's forehead with an amazing speed!

"...gah!"

The man fainted...!
Rosalind grins.
Miss Cordelia says something in English...

"Taking up our time... Those who rebel won't be pardoned. If the number of people fighting decreases then you guys would be in trouble..."

Anyway...the enemy's turned to 10.

"Our firearms are only this. I'll let this boy have it. He doesn't have any combat training so you don't care about that much handicap?"

Seki-san said and hand over the pistol to me.

"Right...then I'll give you special permission"

Miss Cordelia answers.

"When you're shooting, it'll attract the enemies. For now, you can't hit enemies three meters away. Shoot at a knife stabbing distance. But if you think it's dangerous then don't hesitate and shoot. Okay?"

The heavy metal is completely warmed with Seki-san's body temperature.

I hold the gun.

"Okay...got it"

Meanwhile...the confiscation of firearms from the men in black combat clothes has been completed.

Viola and Bandini got their guns taken away too.

"Now then...well then, let's begin. Kill each other...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs happily

"I don't think it's a very good hobby"

Chief Yazawa smiles bitterly.

"Oh...it's Kuromori Minaho's fault for not coming out soon enough...!"

Miss Cordelia looks up at the surveillance camera near the ceiling.

"Hurry up and come, Kuromori's boss. If you don't hurry your precious subordinates will all die...!"

She doesn't know that we are a[family]?

"Let's fight with our backs to the wall...Reika-oneesan, you go vanguard. I'll take the right, Seki-san will be on the left. Take down the attacking enemy using counters. Michi-chan, please guard Nei and the two. Also..."

"...I know. Margo-oneesama"

When it gets really dangerous...we can only depend on Michi's[Shingetsu]
But...[Shingetsu]at full power...

It can stop even the movement of allies.

We have experienced it when escaping from the theater...

"I'm not good at close combat but it can't be helped"

Seki-san takes out a hidden retractable baton.

"They should be wearing body armor too. My hands would swell if I hit them with my fist"

"True...we have to punch through vital points"

Margo-san also has a metal club on both hands.

It's the one used when fighting at the back of the baseball ground.

It seems she hid it under her coat.

"That doesn't matter to my cane. I can crush helmets or even body armor with one blow...!"

Reika holds her cane of death.

The 10 black combat clothes men pull out combat knives all at once...

"Hey...are we going to be okay?"

"...Yo-chan"

Yukino and Nei-san cling to me.

"It's fine...let's believe in our[family]...!"

When it's needed...I have to protect these two with this pistol.

The man in black suit instructs the combatants.

They're not using words.

Just using their hands, pointing out[You go there][You and you team up]

And yet...the ten men quickly formed a battle formation

"...That's Giuliano Jenka, right?"

Margo-san mutters

"It seems so. There's nobody else that can lead the battle among the executives..."

Seki-san answers.

"It seems both are ready...well then, should we decide the timing of the combat open?"

Miss Cordelia pulls a coin out of her pocket.

"Nickel Coin? ...It's small and hard to see. You don't have any quarter?"

Margo-san speaks silly

"Five cents is enough for your worth isn't it? I'll throw this and at the moment it falls to the floor, the battle begins...!"

Miss Cordelia's hand has a small silver coin shines dull...

Right now, she said the same thing to the men in black combat clothes, in English

"...Then, let's go. 《ready》...!"

Miss Cordelia's finger flicks the silver coin...!

The coin glitters...spin around the air...

Then, it begins to fall.

Before it drops on the floor...

...Shu!

"...Gueeeeeee!!!"

The man in black combat clothes who seems to be Giuliano Jenka holds his throat and faints in agony...!

...Dosa!

...Chiiiiin!

It was almost the same time the man and the coin lands on the ground...

...Could this be?

Seki-san...threw a knife?!

"This is actually my specialty"

Seki-san takes out the next throwing knife.

"There's no way you would say that's cowardly, would you?"

Miss Cordelia...

"I heard that Kouzuki security service is a Japanese style well behaved surface company...!"

"If I get caught in that way this late then lives would be at stake"

Seki-san glares at the enemy.

"I'm no longer belonging to Kouzuki security service. With this, you and us... are residents of the[underground]world This is a conflict between criminal organizations. Rules are useless from now on...!"

Seki-san...did you become a member of[kuromori]?

《...Hey! Boys!!!》

Lorenzaccio Bandini speaks to the men from behind.

Now that Giuliano Jenka has fallen, I guess he'll take the command from

behind...

"You won't say that this is unfair, would you?"

Following Bandini's instructions, the nine men formed a set of threes. Their fighting spirit isn't gone yet.

Rather...their morale is increased due to Bandini's coaching from outside.

"Reika-oneesan, don't go ahead! Just aim to counter the enemy!"

Margo-san shouts !

"...Roger!"

Usually, Reika would go forward but, she stepped back...

"They got us...as expected of genuine professionals. I don't think there would be any more surprises"

Nei-san mutters.

"Everyone...would be protecting their necks, faces and hands so it won't be easy to use projectiles. They're wearing body armor so the points of effectiveness of Seki-san's knife is limited...they concentrated on the coin so their movements stopped completely.

One was taken down but...it's impossible to take another"

Seki-san's knife can only be used when they're distracted...

"If it's a state-of-the-art armor adopted from the US army, my whip can't bring it down..."

Michi said.

I see...Kudou-papa and others spent a lot of time mopping the Russians...

Was it due to this defensive power?

Thinking about it, old man Dai Grepher and Banbarubie 3 Ladies are amazing.

"In the first place, Maru-chan's best strategy is to take down from a sneak attack you see. Since she's a woman...she's weaker when men comes for a power push. Whether it's muscular strength or weight, women's body can't compete with men...!"

Do you mean she'll lose when she goes face to face with professionals?

"The number's even higher than ours"

They intend to take down each one with three people...
Reika, Margo-san, Seki-san...three people approach each.
...This is bad.

If they attack in unison this way...

Margo-san and the two can deal with the enemies in front but they can't follow up each other.

The enemy's three man team seems to be highly trained.

They're cooperating perfectly...

《...Go!》

Bandini instructs in a loud voice!

The men jump at the same time!

...Aaaah!

Chapter 331. Teamwork

Three on Reika...

Three on Seki-san...

Three on Margo-san...

A team of three against one...

They intend to crush us in one go?...

"...Haaa, Face! Body!!"

Reika strikes the very first man came rushing at her with the death cane...!

The beaten man is blown to the following men.

Reika's the only one who swings a heavy cane so she won't lose to the men when it comes to power.

...But

The man blown away raises smoothly.

"Tsk...it's useless to strike them blindly. Be sure to hit the vital points and bash the body armor with full power...!"

Reika mutters...

As expected of the protege of Lorenzaccio Bandini

The toughness is different from the enemies so far...

They're used to fighting...

"Throw away the thought of smashing them! Just do a large swing! Besides, the three of them would be attacking in links...!"

Nei-san shouts to Reika

"Yes...I'll definitely concentrate on the vital points"

Reika answers.

No...as a matter of fact, she's doing all her best to scoop out consecutive attacks with her cane.

There's no way she could blow away the whole body with one full power swing.

"...Saaa! Saa! Saaaaa!!"

On the other hand, Margo-san skillfully uses the two-handed club to attack the three man team herself.

She's also preoccupied by dealing with the enemies in front of her.

"...Tsuaaa, haiya! haaa!"

Seki-san's on the worst position...

She managed to surpass the speed and accurate attacks, but...

Her lack of power is clear even to my eyes.

The black clothed men is pushing bit by bit.

"...Kuh!"

Though she deflects the combat knife of the enemy with her special baton... she's being pushed.

At the moment her posture broke...another man's knife attacks Seki-san!!

"...Ah, that's dangerous!"

At the same time I shouted...

...Bishururururun!!!

Michi's red whip roars...!

...Bashi!

The tip of the whip cuts the chest of the clothes...!

There's no damage to the man.

I can see something black under the torn clothes.

That's a body armor?

"It's the armor type that takes the shock and blows. If that's the case, there's no choice but to aim at the face or joints..."

Nei-san says but...the enemies are professionals.

They won't let their weak points be attacked easily...!

Even while talking about that thing, the onslaught of the black fighters continues...

"...Aaah!"

Seki-san's legs slipped!

...Uwawawa!

The edge of the combat knife attacks Seki-san

...Gashi!

...What?

Seki-san catches the knife with her arm...???

"It's not as real as your body armor, but..."

Seki-san grabs the hand holding the knife then does an Aikido throw to the enemy...!

"Even we wear simple armor!"

Oh right...in the basement, Reika showed it when she changed to jersey.
There's supporters and auxiliary armor on her limbs and stomach.
...Seki-san is wearing the same thing?

"Blades won't go through this armor! Besides, this glove is an anti-cut gloves!"

Seki-san holds the black glove tightly...!

"But, take care, the shock won't be erased just because you stopped the knife...!"

Nei-san calls for caution

"...I know"

Seki-san shouts.

"But...we've got no chance unless we're prepared to take it on the armor"

Up until now she received the enemy knife with the right hand baton...this time, she's using both her arms.

Seki-san's sleeves became scratched but she's able to cope with the enemy's attack on the last moment

"Geez...this dress was my favorite...!"

"I'll compensate for it if you lived!"

Margo-san said.

MArgo-san also begins to take the enemy's knives with her arm's armor.
As expected, she's also wearing supplementary armor...

"Michi-chan, don't go forward...! You're not wearing armor like us!"

That's right...Michi's not wearing any special armor under her uniform.
I know that best because I've embraced her naked.

"...But"

Michi's puzzled.

"Don't underestimate them...they're more than what you see...!"

Yeah... the[enemy]level is different from before.
Lorenzaccio Bandini hid this power to the last minute.
If they lower their guards for a moment...they'll surely be killed...!
Somehow...is there any way to reverse the situation...!

《...HEY John!》

Lorenzaccio Bandini gave instructions from behind...!
...What?
Then suddenly...the men who should be unconscious from the white Rosalind's
head—butt, gets up
...Was he pretending to be down??
The tenth man rushes towards Seki-san!
If they can't easily take down using 3-on-1...
Then they intend to hunt 4-on-1...
Furthermore...aiming at Seki-san who's struggling the most...
...This is bad

"...Michi"

When it comes to this, we can only hold the movement of the enemy
using[Shingetsu]...

"...I can't"

...What?

"[Shingetsu]needs the other party to pay attention to me...!"

That's right!
These professionals in battle only concentrate with the opponent in front of
their eyes.

We can't turn them around here.

"Don't use Michan's trump card yet!"

Nei-san shouts.

"Maru-chan and the two will be making a chance somehow...!"

...Then

"Yukino-chan, sorry!"

Nei-san turns up the hem of Yukino's t-shirt!

Her petite ass and her secret part is exposed to the people

"...Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

Yukino's scream tear the space time fabric...!

The three and the four team men...not all of them but.

There's one or two people among the groups who said[...what?]and looked at Yukino unconsciously

The gap is created from the cooperation of the men.

"...Seeiiii! Saaaaa!!!"

Margo-san won't let go of that chance!

The man who stopped moving for a moment was hit on the knee joint!

"...Gyaaa!!!"

The man's head broke and he collapsed!

"...Toiyaaa!!!"

And there's another enemy who tried to slash with a knife at the same time but...

She repels the edge of the knife with the armor in her arm and strikes the throat with her club!!!

"...Gueee!!!"

Hitting the vital point, the man choked his breath...he rolled on the floor noisily

"...Cherioooooooooo!!!"

On the other hand, Reika throws a sure death strike to the enemy that stopped moving!

With this furious attack...the body armor would break and the cane's end would pierce the enemy's vital point!!!

"...Gyaaaaa!!!"

The combatant blown away toppled over the other person behind him. The third person attacks Reika, but...!

"...Teiyaaaaaaaa!!!"

Reika strikes her cane to the opponent's helmet sideways with all her strength!

...Baki!

The enemy's helmet breaks!
Still, it didn't reach the opponent's skull, however...
An intense blow from an oblique angle gives serious damage to the opponent's neck.

"...Guwaa!"

The man spit bubbles, and collapsed.
AT that time, the four people attacking Seki-san...

"...Suueei!!!"

The person distracted by Yukino's scream had his arm taken, and thrown by Seki-san!
The huge bulk rotated in the air, slammed to the ground in an angle that's not possible.

...Shubabababa!

At the same time, Michi's whip bursts into another enemy aiming at Seki-san...!
The red whip's tip cuts the nose of the black man's mask.

"...Ugagagagaga!!!"

The man rolls on the ground, bleeding on his nose violently.

I see, these guys don't have any armor under their masks.

"Seki-san, please aim at their faces!"

MIchi said...!

"...Roger!"

Seki-san kicks the face of the fallen man with the heel of her shoes!!

"...Gyaaaaaaaaa!!!"

The man faints in agony!

"There's a point of concentration of nerves under the nose. If you hit that strongly, they'll faint no matter who they are. You can't train your face after all..."

Nei-san said, but...

"...Let down your hand already! Hurry!"

Yukino screams!

Oh right...Nei-san's hand is still pulling up Yukino's t-shirt.

Yukino's face is red, she's hiding her crotch and anus with her hand...

"Oh, right, sorry, yrros!"

Nei-san lets go of Yukino's ass...

"Geez! Idiot, I can't believe this...!"

Yukino's face is red from anger.

"I was seen by everyone!"

Yeah...not only the eyes of the[enemy]...

There's Chief Yazawa and his 120 people...

But, Yukino...you already had your sex scene exposed to all the students...

"Ahn! That's so embarrassing! Too embarrassing!"

...Now then

Margo-san vs 3.

Reika vs 3.

Seki-san vs 4 enemies.

Margo-san took down 2...

Reika took down 2...

Seki-san and Michi took down one.

What's left is 4 people.

"With this...it's 4v4 now"

Margo-san smiles

Lorenzaccio Bandini shouted something from behind.

The four men who can still fight formed a single team.

"Seki-san...Reika-oneesan...Michi-chan...!"

Margo-san calls each one...!

"If it's the same number then we're way stronger. Isn't that right?"

Reika goes forward without saying anything.

Seki-san and Margo-san to the sides.

Michi stands to guard us.,

They came up with a formation naturally.

They've gotten a perfect team before they noticed.

"We won't be coming to attack...we'll be focusing on counters"

Margo-san instructs

The confrontation is 4v4

"But...isn't it bad to just let the enemy attack?"

Seki-san said while switching the baton from the right to the left hand.

"True. I don't want to keep making exchanges with these people...Seki-san, you're in charge of the timing...!"

"...I know"

Then, Seki-san's hand begins to move.

"Hino...funo...mii!!!"

In a moment, Seki-san's right hand who shouldn't have anything at all...
Throws out a knife!

The four enemies avoided the knife!

That's the sign of the decisive battle.

"...Hiken Shiden!!!"

Reika concentrates on just the enemy on front and unleashes a deadly blow!

Margo-san and Seki-san intercepts the enemy going left and right.

No...wrong.

Seki-san pretends to confront the enemy on right...then throws a knife to the enemy trying to attack on the time difference from behind!

The enemy on the right tries to attack Seki-san during the gap, but...

Michi's red whip gushes out!!

On the other hand, Margo-san aims on the enemy on the left precisely

...Gaki!

The sound is only one

The four people attack the enemy at the same time.

...No

This first attack was a feint!

To the enemies who broke their posture...!

"...Second sword Ankoku nagareboshi!!!"

Reika drives her deadly cane!

...Bagogiii!!!

She smashes the enemy even through the body armor!!

"Gueeeeeee!!!"

Somehow, there's a dull sound of something breaking...!

"...Haiyaaaaa!!!"

At that time, Margo-san slams the neck of the enemy with the club on both her hands!!

Even if the neck has a defensive pad...

A human body can't bear a simultaneous attack from both left and right!!!

"...Suryaaaaa!!!"

Furthermore, Margo-san does a roundhouse kick!!

"...Red Butte!!"

Seki-san and Michi also exchanges targets!!

Seki-san throws a knife to hold down and Michi's red whip burst into it's face...!!

"Ugogogoge...!!"

The man suffers, wiping the blood from his face...!

On the other hand, Seki-san's hand extends to the enemy who got Michi's whip...!

"...Suryaaa!!"

Seki-san's Aikido technique...!!!

The enemy's body jumped off a higher space than I've ever seen...!

"...Shinkuu Jigoku Kurumaaa!!"

Seki-san jumps at the giant enemy turning in the air.
She then put her weight...
It's〈Pile Driver〉!!

"...Gyeeeeee!!"

The men then fell unconscious.

"This is the end!!"

Michi throws the whip to his face and he screamed in pain...
Margo-san's sharp kick was the finishing blow.
Cesario Viola's...no, Lorenzaccio Bandini's last ten men were completely silenced...

"...Haa, haa, haa"

Reika, Margo-san, Seki-san...
All of them are breathing roughly.
Reika and Seki-san's knees are on the ground...
They wipe the sweat flowing out of them with their hand.
Their strength is exhausted...

"...Hyuuuuu!!"

Chief Yazawa whistles.

"I'm surprised. Who would've thought that it would be a complete victory...!"

Miss Cordelia smiles.

"That's disappointing To think that they would lose to girls...is this the legendary[Cesario Viola's]execution force? It seems that the[council's]judgement of disposing them was right"

Miss Cordelia said grumpily.

"In that case...I think I and my kittens have to kill you all!"

The white Viola and Rosalind line up on miss Cordelia's side.
The three of them shows a cruel smile.
Did the demons inside them awaken from watching the fight just now...?
We'll be taken down if this continues...
Margo-san's body hasn't recovered yet.
...Then

《♪ Twinkle, twinkle, little star,
.....How I wonder what you are! ♪》

Michi sings...
Isn't this the nursery rhyme...[Twinkle twinkle little star]?

《.....♪ Up above the world so high,
...Like a diamond in the sky. ♪》

Michi's lovely song echoes on the vast 19th floor...
The singing voice of this beautiful 15 year old black haired girl.
Michi's voice is fresh, transparent however you look at it.

《♪ Twinkle, twinkle, little star,
.....How I wonder what you are! ♪》

The people surrounding us on the floor...
The information staff with 100 machine gun men...
The 20 top elite guards too...
They're being drawn to Michi's singing voice.

《.....♪ Twinkle, twinkle, little star,

.....How I wonder what you are! ♪》

...Michi

She smiles like an angel.

"...Don't look at Michi-chan. Close your eyes and your heart"

Margo-san whispers to us.

I see...this is...

Michi's planning to set everyone in this place?

No matter how amazing Michi's[shingetsu]may be...

You're releasing your[qi]to over 120 people...?!

《.....♪ Up above the world so high,

.....Like a diamond in the sky.

.....Like a diamond in the sky.

.....How I wonder what you are! ♪》

The song ends.

...It's coming.

I'm sure it's coming!

I closed my eyes and my heart.

".....Shingetsu! ! "

But still...the[qi]flows into my heart...!!

Chapter 332. ATTENTION!!!

...Gueee

I can't.

As expected, for another person's strong[qi]entering your heart...

The vivid shock is like my whole body's blood boils for an instant and flows backwards...

Even though I knew that it was coming...

The guys who took[shingetsu]by surprise...

"...Uuuu!!"

"...Aaah!"

"...Dowaaaa!!"

The 100 information staff members drop their machine guns

They can't put strength in their hands.

The 19th floor with no decorations and only concrete all over...has the firearms rolling on the floor...!

The top elites of Kouzuki security service...

Chief Yazawa's also limp...

Everyone's unable to fight for a while...

"Y-You did it...Michi!"

Right now...we can escape from here.

Anyway, we have to run away from here...

Miss Cordelia intends to kill us all[members of Kuromori house]...!

"...Nei-san! Yukino!"

"Uuu...I'm fine, I can move my body somehow! Yo-chan!"

"...I can move too. This is the second time after all"

...Okay

But...Michi who's the crucial one...

"Auuuu...Master!"

She's clinging to me, trembling.

She has delivered her[qi]to this vast room...
Has her mind and body crossed the limit... ?!

"What's wrong, Michi...are you okay?!"

I embrace Michi's small body tightly...!

"I'm scareeed...I'm scaaaareeed...!!!"

Michi's trembling in my arms like a child...

"Master...Master...Masteeeeer!!"

T-This is...?!

...Then

A white figure stands in front of us...!

"Ufufufuu...at the moment that child release her[qi]and she became empty...I sent down my[nen]to oppose...!"

...M-Miss Cordelia?!!!

W-Why is she fine?

"I experienced that technique a while ago after all...!"

That's why...miss Cordelia hasn't taken any damage.
She's looking down on us, laughing

"I didn't think that this girl would use a[qi]skill earlier so I took it directly you see..."

...I see

If she knows about Michi's[Shingetsu]...

"There's[qi]manipulation techniques all over the world. Of course, the methods to counter it as well. I was taught about Oriental fighting from Kyouko...!"

...Did miss Cordelia also master the techniques to parry the[qi]?

This is bad.

Michi's trembling in my arms.

When she's defenseless as she release the[qi]with her full power mind, she was devastated by miss Cordelia's[janen]

Her mind and body is confused at the same time , causing a violent rejection...

"It's okay...! I'll hug you tight!"

I call out Michi

"...Yeeesss, hug me, stronger! Masteeerr...!"

Michi won't recover soon...!

I look at Seki-san and Reika, but...

"...Ugugugu"

"...Kuuu"

Both of them are also down from being hit by[Shingetsu]???!!

...Shit

It's their first experience taking Michi's full power[shingetsu]...!

Without guarding their heart, they took Michi's big wave of[qi]just like the enemies!

"Now then...it's about time for punishment"

Miss Cordelia smiles

...This is bad

"...I won't let you"

...That's.

Margo-san's voice.

Margo Starkweather slowly stands up

"...I'm still here to stop you"

Margo-san has also taken damage from[Shingetsu]

Her body's trembling.

She probably doesn't have the strength...

The club on both hands are dropped on the floor.

But still, Margo-san exposes her fighting spirit...

She takes a fighting pose in front of miss Cordelia...

"As expected...it won't be fun otherwise"

Miss Cordelia said, Margo-san...

"If I got taken down like this, I won't be able to look Kyouko-san in her face again...!"

"I don't want to hear Kyouko's name from your mouth...!"

Miss Cordelia shows an obviously unpleasant look

"I'll make sure you can't say that name again...!"

...Suwa!

Miss Corderlia attacks Margo-san like dancing feathers on the wind...!

"...Saii!! Fuu...Haa!"

Margo-san doesn't avoid miss Cordelia's attack...she parries with her armor.

"...You're giving your all it seems!"

"...This is all I can do right now!"

Margo-san right now can't dodge the enemy attack fast enough...

Therefore, she braces herself...

She receives without avoiding.

"Suuu...Haaa...suuu...!!!!"

Making a repeated deep breaths...Margo-san tries to revitalize her whole body.

"Hmph, a karate receive. Did Kyouko teach you that too?"

"...That's right"

"I see...I'll accept your making. You might be able to grow up as a considerable fighter...!"

Miss Cordelia smiles

"...It's a waste to kill you here, isn't it?"

..... ! ! !

Miss Cordelia's attacks speeds up ...!

"...Haaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

Margo-san focuses on the enemy's quick attack and handles all of them...!

"Hah...how long can you keep this I wonder?!"

She's right.
If she drives in at least one blow...
Margo-san would be in trouble...

"Michi...look into my eyes!"

I tell Michi
Err...If I recall...
Match my breathing with Michi, was it?
When our breaths are the same...the beat of our hearts will be same as well

"...Master?"

Michi's voice is weak
But still, her beautiful eyes look at me...

"Connect your heart to mine... !"

The skill that releases[Qi],[Shingetsu]is a technique derived from an accident...
It's completely different from the original[Shingetsu]...

"Pour the[stagnation]from your heart to mine"
"...Master????!"
"I'll take whatever suffering you have...!"

...That's right. I.

"We're going to be together for the rest of our lives...!!!"

Tears spill from Michi's eyes.
The beautiful water drops like a pearl

"...Master...I love you, I love you...I love you...!"

Michi and I kiss each other...
Michi's breathing and heartbeat calms down...
I synchronize the rhythm and the beat.

"...Come, Michi"
"...Yes! Master!!"

...uuuuu
Miss Cordelia's dark[janen]flows into me.

I feel my stomach's flowing backwards...!

My head hurts...!

But, I accept it without refusing any...!!

"...Master, are you okay?"

Michi's facial expression on the other hand gets a bit easier.

She mustn't have poured all of the[janen]into me...

But still, the trembling of her body stopped...!

"Don't mind it...I'm a man. I can endure this much...!"

"...I love you my Master!!"

Michi rubs her cheeks on mine.

"Go, Michi...Margo-san's in trouble...!"

...Uuu

My body's abnormality shivers my spine.,

Miss Cordelia's wave of[janen]erodes my internal organs.

I can't put strength in my body...

"Let's go...please wait here. Master!"

This time...Michi kisses me.

I let my body lay on the floor quietly...

The warrior girl stands up.

"Kuromori Kudou style...Kudou Michi, joining the fight!!!"

Then...she returns to the front.

I look up at Michi's figure as I lay on the concrete floor.

"...Yo-chan?!"

"...Are you okay"

Nei-san and Yukino comes close to me...

"Haaaaaaa!! Red Butte!!!"

The red whip attacks miss Cordelia.

"...Kuh!"

She quickly takes distance from Margo-san...

"Oh...even though I threw out a deep[nen]towards this young lady...!"

Margo-san smiles towards Michi

"Now...it's 2v1 Miss Cordelia...!"

Margo-san and Michi takes their formation

"Don't be an idiot...it's 3v2 you know?"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"I'm already done playing...let's go finish this"

Then...white shadows appear by miss Cordelia's side.

White female Viola and Rosalind...

Both of them were okay...?!

"..... ! "

First, the two subordinates come to attack...!

Michi's attack on the white Rosalind was too early...!

She can't compete with a whip that needs preliminary motion.

Michi throws the whip and becomes light.

Following Kudou style teaching's she turns the white Rosalind's offensive[qi]and let it flow.

But...Michi has no armor.

A slight mistake immediately leads to defeat...

On the other hand, Margo-san's body hasn't recovered yet.

All of white Viola's attacks are received with protectors on both hands and legs.

She's able to deal with it somehow but the impression of[being scrapped]is undeniable.

"...Okay, stop"

Miss Cordelia instructs her two subordiantes.

The white girls retreat.

"Fighting them directly doesn't feel right..."

Miss Cordelia said.

"I want to trample over you. I want to beat you with overwhelming power. I

want to fill you with humiliation and despair. I want to step on you as you grovel, cry for forgiveness...this kind of fight is not what I want"

What does she intend to do?

"...You see, I've looked up about you quite a lot. Unfortunately, there wasn't enough data about Kuromori Minaho from America but...Margo Starkweather. I know a lot about you...!"

Miss Cordelia takes Chief Yazawa's terminal on the table.
Operating the switches...a huge image is projected on the wall...

"I'll connect the flash drive I have with me...and here"

A photo floats on the wall...
...That's

"...Isn't this Maru-chan?"

Nei-san mutters
That is a photo of a girl.
Standing in front of a board with a measuring line...a 12 year old girl.
The photo's from front and from the side...
Isn't this...photos taken by the police?

"...Margo Starkweather. Born from an Indian settlement, grew up while receiving discrimination from the other Indians due to having natural blonde hair. At age 12, gangbanged by several men...one of the men had a gun, she shot all of the men who raped her"

A girl's face filled with despair.

"Despite of it being a legitimate defense...the local police arrested the victim, Margo Starkweather for first degree murder charges because the local police is making fool of Indian settlements. Ten days later, a Christian group protected the murderer..."

Margo-san endures it.
Even if she's confronted by the past...

"Then...these are the men Margo Starkweather killed..."

The faces of the men shot is shown on the wall.

Furthermore, it's the police autopsy photos...

"...James[Spooky]Lydon"

Another corpse image...

"...Rodrigo[Alpacino]Mendez"

...Again

"...Samuel[Big Daddy]Pagemagaboo"

...Then

"...Emilio[El Santo]Stakweather"

...Starkweather?

"...Guh!"

Margo-san trembles as she look at the images on the wall

"Emilio Starkweather wasn't convinced that she's his daughter, an Indian with blonde hair and blue eyes. Actually, the community had been making fun of Emilio saying that his wife was stolen by a white man. Therefore, to regain his own dignity as a man, he cooperated with his friends and raped Margo Starkweather...!"

Margo-san was raped by her father?

"According to the police statement...it seems that the men around urged him and your father was the first one to rape you. I wonder what's the story on your side though..."

Margo-san collapses on the ground.

Her body trembles...

...I

"Stop this already! Stop!"

I shouted with all my strength...!

"This is just...don't you feel sorry for Margo-san!!!"

Miss Cordelia smiles

...Like a demon

"Facts are facts. Margo Starkweather was raped by her father when she was 12...and she had her revenge with a gun. She killed her father...a murderer!!!"
"...Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!"

Margo-san screams...holding her head...
...This is bad

"...What's going on?"

Yukino asks in fear...

"Margo-san always controls her mind with strong mental power, but..."

Nei-san speaks.

"No...normally, she holds it down by force so it's not good to exhaust her mind. She's losing control...!"

I also saw this once.
Margo-san's mind bursting...the image of her suffering...

"Hey, take a look...Margo Starkweather. It's the face of your father you killed...Fuahahahahaha!"

Miss Cordelia laughs.
The two white Viola laughs together.

"...Uuuuuu!"

Margo-san vomits.
That's how painful it is.

"Uuuuuuu...《MAMA...Help Me...!!》Aaaaaaaa...!!!"

Scratching around her hair, she twists around the ground.
Margo-san's mind would be in danger if this continues
...Err

At that time...
How did they calm down Margo-san again?

《.....STOP ! MARGUERITE ! ! ! 》

Nei-san shouts.
Oh right, at that time, Minaho-neesan called Margo-san《MARGUERITE》...

Then, Margo-san's heart calmed down.

《.....MARGUERITE ! ! ! 》

...But

"...Uuuu, ugaaaaaa!!!!"

Margo-san's still suffering

"I can't be Maru-chan's mother"

...It's not good unless it's Minaho-neesan?

Just where is Minaho-neesan right now?

"Now, hurry up and come...Kuromori Minaho"

Miss Cordelia shouts...!

"I'm going to get everyone together and kill you all...Ufufufufu!"

Dammit...that's her aim?

Miss Cordelia knows that Margo-san's heart won't calm down until Minaho-neesan appears.

That's why she's doing this cruel thing to lure Minaho-neesan...!

"Your cute kitten is suffering you know...hurry up and come!"

No good, if she comes right now...

In the state where Michi is the only one that can fight...

We'll definitely get killed...!

Just what should we do????!!!

"...What are you doing. Get yourself together, Margo"

...What?

...Who???

There was no signs at all.

Before I knew it...someone's behind us????

...footsteps

This person falls into my sight.

A very tall...woman?

This person's...?

"Didn't I always tell you? The point of your emotions can be managed somehow by your fighting spirit...!"

This woman's wearing black cloak...
Ah...this person's extraordinarily strong.
Even I who's an amateur at fighting and everything can tell.
This unique atmosphere...the aura of the strong
The lady in black cloak...
Breathes in deeply...

《.....ATTENTION ! ! ! SOLDIER MARGUERITE ! ! ! 》

She shouts at Margo-san filled with fighting spirit!!!

《.....YES ! ! ! COMMANDER ! ! ! 》

Margo-san jumps up and shouts in loud voice.
Her body stopped trembling.

"Yup yup, you look fine..."

The woman shows a carefree smile to Margo-san.

"Just kick away your boring past. Now...stand firm!"

The woman said...Margo-san stands up putting strength in her body.

"You can do it you...aren't you already an adult, Margo?"

Margo-san looks at the woman.

《Thank YouCOMMANDER》

Though her expression is still stiff...she's desperately trying to smile to the woman.

"What are you saying...aren't we friends?"

The woman smiles.
Who's this woman?

"...I see. It wasn't Kuromori Minaho but you"

Miss Cordelia glares at the woman.
She shows a very disappointed face...

"Well yeah...it's fine. I know proper courtesy...!"

She throws away the black cloak...!!!

Eh...why?

The woman's wearing a bright red tuxedo???

She's a more gentlemanly looking than Reika...

"Called by the spring...here I dash! Kyouko Messer!!!"

T-This one's Kyouko-san?

Real name, Kyouko Dothnomechey. Japanese -Brazilian. Margo-san's master.

She's a famous person in the underground society.

Her name in the underground world is[Kyouko Messer]

"...Now, let's get this started!!!"

Chapter 333. Hugging woman

"...Kyouko, it's been a while"

Miss Cordelia looks at Kyouko-san

"True...I thought you were dead!"

Kyouko-san answers with a refreshing smile

"I'd rather be dead, I went through hell...thanks to you"

Miss Cordelia's face is gloomy

"But, isn't that great? You're alive that's why we see each other again...!"

Miss Cordelia's clearly confused from Kyouko-san being too cheerful.

...But

"You did your best, Margo...well done!"

Looking at Margo-san being hugged tightly by Kyouko-san...

Miss Cordelia's face turned stiff.

She recognized Kyouko-san as an[enemy]and glared at her.

"There there...you're amazing!"

"Thanks...Kyouko-san"

Margo-san embraces Kyouko-san tightly as well.

"Nei too, you did your best...you've gotten stronger"

Kyouko-san lets go of Margo-san then embraces Nei-san gently

"...Yup. Kyouko-san"

Nei-san also returns the hug happily

"I don't know who this lass is but...anyway, you did your best, let me give you a hug!"

Kyouko-san also hugs Yukino for some reason.

Yukino's embarrassed but...she can't escape from the hug of a person with such a strong atmosphere.

She's being hugged as she show an "Eeeeeeeeh???" face

"Ojou-chan too, you did your best...well done"

Next, Kyouko-san hugs Michi too

"Ah... thank you"

Michi gets hugged silently

Or rather...

Does Kyouko-san love hugging that much...?!

She's already ignoring Miss Cordelia in front of her and just hugs everyone around in turns.

"You bro did your best but sorry.... I'm a lesbian so no hugs for you!"

Kyouko-san smiled and tells me who's lying on the floor.

"I know your activity thanks to Margo. I've got mixed feelings about it but...I welcome you as a member of our[family]...!"

She's accepting me?

Then, Kyouko-san finally looks at Seki-san and Reika who are trying to get out of the shock of[Shingetsu]...

"You ladies as well, you did your best! Yes...let me give you a hug. Hug Hug!!!"

Seki-san and Reika was hugged in turns...

W-What's this?

The tall Kyouko-san hugs Seki-san who's also tall...

It looks like an owner hugging a large dog...

"...How did you infiltrate in here? You weren't seen in the surveillance network of the hotel...!"

Unable to watch longer...Miss Cordelia asks Kyouko-san

Chief Yazawa allowed miss Cordelia to access the surveillance system.

Of course, the secret[emergency evacuation room]underground...and some data may be kept confidential but.

But still, she can check the floors of the hotel and the entrances.

"Of course...I slipped in secretly so you won't find me!"

Kyouko-san smiles innocently as she keep hugging Reika.

"Oh...Onesasan, you've got some good muscles! Feels good to hug!"

Kyouko-san said as she stroke Reika's body

"No...please don't stroke me"

Reika's confused.

"Now now, don't be so stingy. It's fine, it's fine!"

Kyouko-san enjoys the feeling of Reika's body.

"...Secretly sneaked in?"

Miss Cordelia looks at the white Viola.

She shook her head swearing "There's no way that could be true"

"It's impossible! We have sent in several observers that Mr. Yazawa doesn't notice. All of the entrances are being monitored. If someone enters the hotel, the call will come in immediately...if you defeat an observer then it'll alarm the device that they have to push every three minutes"

I see, if they have such a machine then even if Kyouko-san makes them faint... The alarm won't be pushed after three minutes and miss Cordelia would be telegraphed...

They prepared such a machine beforehand because miss Cordelia assumes that Kyouko-san would be infiltrating beforehand...

"Oh, speaking of which, there's a lot of quack mosquitoes...I didn't do anything to them. I think that your guys are fine but...that's just a waste of people"

Miss Cordelia's surprised...

She looks at chief Yazawa who's still down on the table.

"Could it be that You and Mr Yazawa are accomplices? The two of you are trying to frame me...?!"

Kyouko-san laughs out loud as she massage Reika's ass.

"Don't joke with me! Well, Yazawa pops and I are old friends but...it's only to the extent of giving Christmas cards every year. But, it's been a year since we've

met. I didn't make contact with him at all...!"

"Then how?!"

Miss Cordelia glares at Kyouko-san

"It's easy. I just came before you could see!"

Kyouko-san answers with a clown face.

"I broke to the hotel premises from the sea side... climbed from the outer wall to the rooftop, then came through the ventilation duct from the roof. That's all...!"

...What?

This high-rise hotel...she climbed up the wall to the rooftop??!!

Margo-san said that your stamina won't be able to hold up if you do that, but...!

"Didn't I always tell you? You should never [think there's no way they'd do that]"

Just what kind of stamina does she have...?

She's definitely a monster

"No way...even if you can go up to the rooftop, there's no way the ducts of this hotel has a space for a person...!"

Miss Cordelia's astonished

"What do you think I mastered Yoga for then?"

Kyouko-san laughs.

"Well...that's not everything though. Let me tell you a secret, I was involved in designing this hotel. I've made only one duct route where you can pass from the rooftop leading to any floor! However...there's a lot of places nobody but me could get through!"

She's got a perfect grasp of the ventilation duct maze?

No, if it's her then she can do that much

"However, something unexpected happened...the above duct of the Chinese Restaurant is greasy with oil. So I took a shower and changed clothes, that's why I got late. Oh, there's also a private waiting room for me in the middle of

the duct route...!"

That's where she changed her clothes to a red tuxedo.

"It would've been perfect if I had a bouquet of roses but...I'll prepare one next time!"

The thought, execution ability, body, physical strength, and sense of clothes... all of them are out of the standard.

What a woman, having such a huge body and mind.

That's all I can say...

"By the way, Cordelia...!"

Kyouko-san says[Nufufufufu]...and approach the white female Viola

"Are these girls your[kittens]now?"

Miss Cordelia...

"That's right. They're my《LOVERS》...!"

"Hmm, as usual, you've got a good hobby...!"

Saying that, Kyouko-san even embraces the white Viola.

With the speed and intimidation...the female Viola can't move.

She's stroked by Kyouko-san...she's hardened...

"Do, do do...you don't have to be that nervous. Oh, your muscles are well trained. Yes! You're cute!!"

Following, she hugs the white Rosalind as well.

"This one's also good. This is great! Cute! You're cute! Cordelia, you really got good eyes...aren't these some very good[kittens]...!"

...Err

Miss Cordelia shows a sulking face...

"Thanks for the praise. But...Kyouko also has quite talented《Lovers》don't you?"

Kyouko-san shows a[what?]face as she hug Rosalind...

"What do you mean?"

"It's useless to play dumb...Kuromori Minaho, Margo Starkweather, and Najima

Yasuko...!"

Miss Cordelia thinks that Minaho-neesan and the two are Lesbian partners of Kyouko-san?

"Don't be ridiculous...these girls..."

...At that moment

From the door Margo-san left open...

A gale comes in...!?

"..... ! ! ! "

A slash aiming at Kyouko-san...!

"Edie!? Where were you until now...!?!!!"

Miss Cordelia's surprised.

"Wahahaha! This is a cheerful kid!"

Kyouko-san dodges sister Edie's knife with an amazing footwork

"...Sister Edie, why?"

...Err

Sister Edie doesn't know our relationship with Kyouko-san

Looking at her hugging the white Violas, she thought that she's an enemy...?

No, wrong.

If it's hugging then she also did it with Michi and others...

"...It seems her blood burns up"

Nei-san mutters.

"...What?"

"Someone strong like Kyouko-san appeared so Edie's fighting spirit from the inside is burning"

...Oh right, this girl is...

When she saw Michi's[Shingetsu]...that alone made her abandon miss Cordelia and became Michi's friend.

She's a girl who doesn't use normal reasoning.

"She didn't feel[I want to fight]with Miss Cordelia or Michan, but Kyouko-

san's aura is abysmal so,[I have to fight]switch was flipped, I think..."

In the end, sister Edie is a girl who lives under her own judgement...
She's a girl who's only interested in[fighting]and[becoming strong]...
She wasn't a girl who can't become our[last card]

"Fuufuufun! That's an assassination skill isn't it? Though it seems to be trained well...you still got ways to go!"

Kyouko-san plays with sister Edie while laughing.
At the moment Sister Edie's continuous attack ends, she trips up.
Sister Edie falls down.
Kyouko-san said something in English

"...[We're done, young bird!]she said"

Nei-san translates.
Sister Edie shows a sullen face...
She walks in front of Michi
Then...she talks to Michi in fast English
Err...
I was only able to catch the word [synchronize]...

"You see...[Let's cooperate and take her down]she said"

Sister Edie seems to be already best friends with Michi...

"She's saying that Michan can definitely do the technique Edie's grandmother can do, so they'll fight together. it's a bit fast and has a southern accent so I don't get it well, but..."

Michi answers sister Edie in English.
Nei-san continues to translate.

"[True...Kudou style has the similar skill as Edie's grandmother]she's saying... but"

Michi looks at Kyouko-san.
Kyouko-san...

"Sure, come at me!"

She tells Michi

"Either way, that girl won't understand unless it's with her fists, right? Don't hold back and come at me...!"

She takes a stance.

"I'm strong you know!"

Michi tells sister Edie something...

She holds her fist and show it.

"[If we're fighting, then use bare hands]she said"
《...ALL RIGHT!》

Sister Edie throws the knives from both hands.

Michi bows to Kyouko-san...

"Please take care of us..."

Then...she faced sister Edie...

Matching her breathing and heartbeat with sister Edie...

This is?

"...Kudou style mystic arts[Shingetsu]break...[Soutsuki]...!!!"

In a moment...the two small girls jump!

This is a perfect[tuning]???

Michi's left her heart to sister Edie...!

The two became a one living being...

They attack Kyouko-san in tune!!

"Ahahahaha! So fun! You two are very interesting!!!"

Michi and Sister Edie simultaneously attack from both sides...

Fast...accurate...a perfect collaboration skill.

"But...both of you are too serious! There's no game in your movements I can see through it...!!"

...Buwan!!!

Kyouko-san moves faster than the two!!

"Here...I got you two!!"

Kyouko-san hugs Michi on her right arm and Sister Eide on the left!

"You two are so cute! Geez!"

Sister Edie's legs are flapping, but...

She can't move due to Kyouko-san's arm strength.

Kyouko-san who's tall and large looks like hugging cute dolls in her arms.

"Hey, Cordelia! This American kid is also your[kitten]?"

Kyouko-san asks miss Cordelia while laughing

"...That's what I intend to do"

Glaring at miss Cordelia...Michi speaks while being carried by Kyouko-san.

"No. Sister Edie is already my friend"

Miss Cordelia looks at Michi with eyes of hatred.

"As expected of a prostitution organization...you already made an innocent girl broke?"

"That's not the case. Sister Edie chose to grow with me instead of you..."

Kyouko-san interferes the talk.

"Hey, Cordelia. Leave this child to me. Perhaps...I think will be better with me than you"

"...You intend to take this girl from me?"

Miss Cordelia shows an obvious unpleasant look.

"Geez, why are you so aloof since a while ago...aren't we in a relationship? Isn't that fine...?!"

Kyouko-san smiles like usual.

Then, she speaks to sister Edie in English

"[Do you want to be stronger]she asked..."

Sister Edie makes a clear reply

"[I'm strong enough even now]she brags"

Kyouko-san laughs loud then speaks.

"[No no, you're still weak. But, you've got the potential. If you train under me, you can be 100 times stronger than now]she said"

Sister Edie's face changes.

《...Really?》

"That's obvious Chu! Who do you think Kyouko-san is! Hey!"

Then, she speaks in English again.

"[You specialize too much in assassination. Before certainly killing the opponent...you must survive for sure...furthermore, protecting the important people to you...you must learn those]she said"

Sister Edie speaks lonely

"[I don't have any important people to protect]..."

Sister Edie lost her grandmother, the only relative she has...
Sold by the boss of the[assassination cult]she was born and raised.
Michi speaks...

"[I'm here]she said"

Kyouko-san too...

"[You should study under me too]..."

That gentle smile...

"[I don't know about you but...you're already important to me, I want to protect you]"

Michi says something.

"[Me too. Aren't we sisters?]"

Kyouko-san lets go of Michi and hugs sister Edie with both arms.

"Here...it's been tough for you. You did your best...amazing!"

She rubs her cheeks with hers...hugging sister Edie.

《.....What's your name ? 》

Kyouko-san asks.

《.....Edie. Edie Sexton》

《OK, Edie.....I Love You..... ! 》

A refreshing smile like the clear blue sky
Oh...this person
Is really our...[Onesasan]...

《Wao...!》

Sister Edie begins to cry in Kyouko-san's embrace.
...I see.
This girl was actually lonely.
Since she lost her family...all this time.
But, there was nobody close to her to expose her real emotions to...
There was nobody who would say[I love you]...
Neither in the[assassination cult]nor miss Cordelia's organization, it's always a
place where you can't let them see an opportunity through your heart.
Thus, sister Edie was absorbed in only[fighting]
Because the only thing she inherited from her grandmother was the
assassination techniques.
But, now...
Sister Edie opens her heart to Kyouko-san.
Exchanging fists...fighting...recognizing the power of the opponent.
Being embraced...and told[I love you]
Kyouko-san always uses her whole body to confront the enemy directly...

"Our offer of[becoming sisters]was just verbal but...Kyouko-san's always
strong with her body. Now, Edie has truly become our friend"

Nei-san said.
After a while, she tells sister Edie something in English.
Margo-san too...
Perhaps it was"welcome to our[family]"

"...You never change"

Miss Cordelia tells Kyouko-san.

"That's obvious. Human nature doesn't change that easily...!"

Kyouko-san answers.

"Then...why did you betray me...?"

Staring at miss Cordelia...

"I didn't betray you..."

"...Lies! Because"

Kyouko-san stops miss Cordelia then said.

"Didn't I tell you at first?...I thought you were dead"

"..... ?"

"You were told that I betrayed you?"

"T-That's right..."

Miss Cordelia answers.

"Who did you hear it from...!?"

"The[Council]...Ernest Hawk"

"Me too...Ernest told me that you were dead in an African campaign"

"...Is that so?"

"That guy was supporting us when we were working together but he actually hates it secretly. We're satisfied with the[honest price]unlike him"

That man tore Kyouko-san and miss Cordelia's duo?!

"Speaking of which...that just came to my mind. But...!"

Miss Cordelia glares at Kyouko-san

"So why did you go to Japan, the other side of the earth!...On top of that, you became a guard of a brothel...it's not a suitable job for you!"

Kyouko-san...

"Japan is the home to my grandparents...I came to visit the grave of my ancestors. it's the will of my dead grandfather. At that time, a certain person introduced me to old man Kouzuki...so I decided to stay in Japan for a while"

...Laughter.

"You're mistaken. I'm not guarding a brothel. I'm involved in the management of[Black Forest] As an auditor...!"

"Why is a fighter like you doing that job...!"

"It's a job only I can do. In order to protect poor girls who have fallen to hell because of a savage, cowardly and shameless man..."

Kyouko-san was sent in by Jii-chan after Shirasaka Sousuke has turned[Kuromori]to a mess due to his desires.

With Kyouko-san's presence, Shirasaka Sousuke can no longer threaten the prostitutes violently...

That's the shield on Minaho-neesan's revolutionary reform.

"Of course...I don't know a lot about managing a brothel, but"

Yeah. Minaho-neesan's talent, Morimoto-san's management capability from the old days, and Kyouko-san's overwhelming fighting power...the three of them combined chipped off Shirasaka Sousuke's power bit by bit.

Slowly, taking the time...

The grand sum is the revenge plan against Shirasaka Sousuke right now...

"But...but..."

Miss Cordelia has no more leeway.

It's as if she returned to a maiden in love...

Forcing her feelings towards Kyouko-san

"Weren't you making a harem for yourself with that brothel!!!"

"...What the hell?"

Kyouko-san smiles wryly.

"Kuromori Minah , Margo Starkweather, Najima Yasuko too...aren't they all your[LOVERS!]?!!!"

"Cordelia...where did you hear that from?"

At that moment, Cordelia's shocked.

"...The[council]...Ernest Hawk...!"

Kyouko-san lowers sister Edie on the floor.

"Take care of her"

"...Okay"

Michi hugs the crying sister Edie instead of Kyouko-san...

"Minaho, Margo, Nei too...they're not my[kittens]"

Kyouko-san said

"Lies...that's all..."

Miss Cordelia...

"Because, aren't they all cute and beautiful grls?!"

"Sadly...those girls aren't lesbians"

Kyouko-san slowly approaches miss Cordelia.

"Wait...don't get close to me"

"Those girls are my precious[family]...!"

Kyouko-san doesn't stop walking...

"When I lost you...I was so sad. At that time, I found these girls..."

...Kyouko-san

"These girls' hearts are hurt. All of them...lost their family. That's why, I thought. The lonely people come together...and make a new[family]...!"

That's the start of the new generation[Black Forest]

"Cordelia...you see...!"

Kyouko-san spread her arms and goes in front of miss Cordelia...

"...There's no woman I love as much as you!!!"

Chapter 334. Solving puzzles (Part 1)

"I'm really glad that you're alive. Thank you"

Kyouko-san hugs miss Cordelia strongly

"...You're lying. You completely forgot about me didn't you? There's no way you don't have any《LOVERS》..."

Miss Cordelia tells Kyouko-san.

"I'm not lying. When I heard that you died...I haven't slept with anyone...!"

Kyouko-san smiles clearly

"...Because!"

Miss Cordelia turns to Margo-san and Nei-san...

"You're surrounded by these girls..."

"Didn't I tell you? Those girls are[family]my[sisters] In the first place, those girls aren't lesbians"

Nei-san hugs me who's lying down...

"Yes. I'm not a lesbian! I'd rather have this guy!"

"...I'm also not a lesbian"

Margo-san who still has some mental damage answers, breathing roughly

"There's no way that's true! You're the most lesbian face in here! Margo Starkweather!!!"

Miss Cordelia persistently tormented Margo-san because...
She thought that she was Kyouko-san's lesbian partner...

"Margo-san's not into anything sexual...neither male nor female will do. Her past has become a trauma to her..."

"But...there's no way a prostitute won't be able to do that..."

Miss Cordelia isn't convinced by what Kyouko-san said.

"No...because she has this personality she plays the role of[eunuch]in the

brothel... If it's a girl who can be interested in men then she'll feel rivalry with other women...and the prostitutes will be careful about that. But, since everyone knows that Margo isn't interested in men...women won't get caught up in women's jealousy. Besides, she doesn't even want to be lesbian. The guard of the brothel must be fair to anyone..."

Kyouko-san answers.

"It was the same reason why I didn't make a move on the girls of[Kuromori]... When an executive favors one[kitten], then it'll break the balance of the brothel. In addition, they're all poor girls who were deceived by a man...it's just too sad for girls of their age to have such trivial hate"

"...Kyouko"

"You and I were uncommon force so it's good but. If I didn't have the power to fight...I think I might've become a prostitute. It's the environment we were born and raised after all. When I was a kid in the slums of Rio, I grew up on a place filled with whores and prostitutes. I remember the smell of cheap perfume... always. Therefore, I thought I wanted to be the strength of the girls of Kuromori. It may be impossible to rescue the hearts of the children from the hell but I want to be their strength at least"

This is Kyouko-san's true nature?

"...What about Kuromori Minaho? What is she to you...?"

Miss Cordelia asks.

"You know it already but...Minaho is a former prostitute. But, her body's been messed up by men...her body can't have sex again. When I first met her, she was severely skinny...her eyes show despair. Her little sister was also turned to a prostitute...and killed"

Minaho-neesan's little sister...Naomi-san.

Her body was toyed by Shirasaka Sousuke and others...turned to a toy, killed.

"I want to help Minaho. I want to save her heart...so I made her think of how to improve the treatment of the prostitutes and...and a[revenge plan]for her child and her sister who died. Anything will do...as long as it becomes a catalyst for her living right now"

So it was Kyouko-san who made Minaho-neesan decide to take[revenge]on Shirasaka Sousuke

Ah...

At that moment...I see a lot of things.

It's not only Minaho-neesan...

Margo-san's usual calmness...it's from the strong will to control the instability of her mind at all costs.

Gang raped at the age of 12, shot dead the rapists including her father...there's no choice but to nurture a strong heart.

Kyouko-san was the one who taught her that.

Margo-san was able to return to her sanity from a single word from Kyouko-san...

Kyouko-san has saved Margo-san's heart over and over again.

Taking the time and effort...

The accumulation of it creates a strong bond of hearts.

Nei-san too...

To cover up the heart of Najima Yasuko's heart which is too timid and delicate, she made the personality of Natou Nei, which is bright and gentle.

Nei's bright personality saved Yasuko's heart.

This[Nei-san]personality...

It's completely like Kyouko-san...

Always bright, playful, funny...a strong and kind Oneesan.

Perhaps...Najima Yasuko wants to be a woman like Kyouko-san.

Losing her younger brother...Yasuko's in the depths of despair...

Therefore...she created a new personality with Kyouko-san as the model.

Kyouko-san...no, Minaho-neesan and Margo-san cooperated in making Nei-san's personality.

If Yasuko stays...her heart would break, it'll be hard to breathe.

Just like placing a cast on a fractured bone...they cover her with the new[Nei]personality and wait for her heart to heal.

With a powerful[Elder sister]who's Kyouko-san on her side keeping guidance properly...now, Nei-san has Margo-san...

Minaho-neesan has become a strong woman under Kyouko-san's influence...

Everyone's [eldest sister]...the thickest spiritual pillar of[Kuromori], Kyouko-

san...

...Wait

At the moment I understood...I'm shocked

That key person has been absent up until now...

...Does that mean!!

Shirasaka Sousuke...a man from the famous family has been kidnaped in Australia, and kept running away from the police and Shirasaka house.

It was a really dangerous job.

You won't be able to leave it to someone but Kyouko-san...

Therefore, Minaho-neesan has to do her[Revenge]without Kyouko-san in Japan.

We were in a really tough situation.

...All this time

"What do you think Cordelia? Do you now know what happened to me after we parted?"

Kyouko-san looks at miss Cordelia with gentle eyes.

"...I get it. I believe you"

Miss Cordelia answers in a small voice.

"I've got to punish Ernest Hawk"

"...True. I'll payback three times of what he did"

"I love you...Cordelia. Since past...and in the future as well...!"

"Me too...Kyouko1"

The《LOVERS》kiss each other for the first time in several years...

"Let's leave that aside..."

Kyouko-san lifts miss Cordelia's body.

"...Kya!?"

"I'm going to punish you hard for bullying my little sisters!"

"...Eeeeh!?"

Kyouko-san carries miss Cordelia and turns her butt towards us.

"I'm going to slap your ass 20 times"

"Stoop...Kyouko! Not my assssss!!!"

"Here comes the first one!"

Kyouko-san's ass slapping was intense.
It's a serious slapping power like Yokozuna from sumo wrestling.
In just one shot, miss Cordelia shouts "Kyaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"
Kyouko-san continues to slap her while smiling.
After 20 slaps, miss Cordelia's already out of strength...

"Okay, that's all! Margo, Nei, also the other girls too...could you forgive her with this?"

Margo-san...

"...I'll let Kyouko-san deal with it all"

Nei-san looks at me...

"It's okay right, Yo-chan?"

I...

If this is going to end miss Cordelia's threat then anything will do.
I nod at Nei-san.

"Sorry...this girl is just too obsessed with me, she caused inconvenience to everyone..."

Kyouko-san tells us as she stroke miss Cordelia's butt which she had just beaten.

"...It's fine. Kyouko-san came in the end"

"Yes, that's it. I believed that Kyouko-san would come! We did"

Margo-san and Nei-san said with a smile...

"Geez...you should be independent from me already! Or rather...I'm also too overprotective coming to help...but it can't be helped this time. Cordelia came here for a job. If it was only Cesario Viola and Lorenzaccio Bandini then I would leave it to you...and I'll just wait and see..."

Really, what a caring person...

"Hey, what do you think? Cordelia?"

Kyouko-san asks miss Cordelia who's still being lifted up.

...She

"...Kyouko, more"

"What?"

"More, slap my ass more!!"

Miss Cordelia's been madly in love with Kyouko-san since earlier.



"Yo-chan, you okay?"

Nei-san asks me.

"Yes, I'm fine"

From the shock of[Shingetsu]...and the[janen]from Michi too, they're quite diffused already.

I slowly raise my body.

I still feel uncomfortable but...I can stand somehow.

"Michi...are you okay?"

"Yes, thank you very much. Master...I'm already okay. Sister Edie is a bit depressed but..."

The beautiful girl with blonde hair, blue eyes, and brown skin...doesn't look energetic.

"That person's strength is extraordinary, that's what I'm telling her right now..."

Yeah. Sister Edie's always been living in the[assassination cult]...
She's never met people stronger than her grandmother.

Even miss Cordelia, sister Edie didn't feel her as strong

...Ah

Kyouko-san tells sister Edie something.

"[I'll be training you. Though not to be strong enough to beat me]she said"

Nei-san translates instantly.

Sister Edie's eyes shine!

She speaks fast and makes noise.

"[That's what I want. I'll become strong quickly and beat you up...!]"

This girl...

We've got to make her interested in anything other than[fighting]

"...Maru-chan, what do you think?"

Nei-san asks anxiously.

Right.

When her mind's overheating before...

Minaho-neesan accompanied her all night long, that's when she finally returned to the usual Margo-san...

"Fufu...I'm fine. My mind and body are in mess but...I'm somehow able to keep myself"

Margo-san answers yet her face is still pale.

"I just remembered the time when I was sent to military operations by Kyouko-san...that's also a rehab done by Kyouko-san. You won't be able to survive if you're in panic in the battlefield. I was alone but...the soldiers around bothers me. Therefore, I was focus myself so I can't panic...an in fact, it turned out fine. The experience back then became confidence and everything became easier afterwards..."

"Kyouko-san shouts《ATTENTION!》to me...that was a army's command"

...Army?

"No mater how unconscious I am, when my name's called with that shout, I'll get back to consciousness...! I was schooled during the few weeks of operation. My body just reacts to it"

Thus...Margo-san was awakened from the confusion?

"Seki-san...Reika-oneesan, are you okay?"

Margo-san calls the two.

The two of them got exposed to the full power[Shingetsu]defenselessly...

"I'm already fine"

Seki-san stands up

"...I'm very sorry"

Michi apologizes to the two...

"It's fine. Michi-imouto bet on that moment's chance, right?"

Reika also checks her body as she get up.

"Rather...I'm ashamed of myself being paralyzed and unable to join the fight"

She said mortified.

"...Now then"

Kyouko-san's satisfied from slapping miss Cordelia's ass...

She lets down of miss Cordelia's body and head to the round table.

The white Viola and Rosalind are totally confused, but...

They can feel Kyouko-san's unprecedented strength with their skin

The two of them are waiting silently.

Kyouko-san goes to chief Yazawa who's on the desk...

"...Pops, pops. How long are you going to play dead?"

Chief Yazawa...

"...You want Kimchi? Wha...What...a dream?"

He pretends as if he's been sleeping all this time and gets up.

"Nobody needs that...!"

Kyouko-san glares at Chief Yazawa.

"...Thanks to you coming, the plan's gone crazy"

Chief Yazawa looks up at Kyouko-san

"My...what's Pops' plan then?"

That's right...we also want to know that.

What was chief Yazawa trying to do with miss Cordelia?

Though they teamed up...it doesn't look like a full alliance.

"My people seems to have been in quite the danger though...!"

Kyouko-san clenches her fist in front of chief Yazawa.

She's declaring war depending on his response.

Kouzuki security service's information unit with 100 machine gun men, and 20 top elites...they've finally gotten over the shock of[Shingetsu]picking up their guns on the floor.

But...if Chief Yazawa, their head is a hostage, they can't attack.

In anticipation of that...Kyouko-san approached chief Yazawa.

"Hmph! If miss Cordelia really wanted to kill Kuromori's ladies then I intend to stop her with all my strength. That's why there's the machine guns and the 20 top elite men...!"

...What?

No...true, this is an overwhelming number just to destroy Viola's main troop and us.

Even the top elites who are in charge of other people are here...

This was all a measure against miss Cordelia.

"In the first place...you guys are just too good! I didn't expect you to come this soon!"

Chief Yazawa's angry at us.

"If we didn't come...then you guys would've been murdered by miss Cordelia and Viola's main troops already"

That might be the case.

It was chief Tanizwa who forbid the use of guns during the fight with Viola's main troops.

Because chief Yazawa's watching...miss Cordelia didn't let her feelings take control, she didn't kill us right away...

"That's none of your concern...if you Pops didn't come, I would definitely come and help this children... !"

Kyouko-san said laughing.

"If you're coming then contact me at least. If I knew that you were coming then I won't do something this troublesome!"

Chief Yazawa answers grumpily.

"Our side has to buy some time after all...!"

...Buy some time?

What does that mean?

[I will be explaining from here...!]

This voice...Jii-chan?

Jii-chan's voice sounds from the speakers.

[I was rushed thanks to you all but...I somehow managed to be in time]

Then...an image is projected on the wall.

This is...?

[The news from a few minutes ago...]

The headline is...[Shirasaka Moritsugu's emergency hospitalization]!!!

The newscaster speaks to the camera...

[Shirasaka Moritsugu, the named Don of the mass media industry, has been rushed to the emergency room of University Hospital in Tokyo. The cause is cerebral hemorrhage. Mr. Moritsugu's been in the middle of various debates due to the recent scandal of his nephew, Shirasaka Sousuke, an employee of an advertising agency"

"...Moritsugu-Oooji-sama"

Yukino mutters.

[Since old times...it's a custom for the Masters of the subordinate who caused a problem to retire. Shirasaka house seems to have made their decision]

...That's not it.

Jii-chan worked behind the scenes to make it that way.

[Shirasaka Moritsugu himself wasn't agreeing to the end. Therefore, there was no choice but to use drugs that would cause brain damage... With this, Shirasaka Moritsugu may be incapacitated for the rest of his life. He won't be able to express his will in words. He'll be treated as incompetent in the future...]

"Incompetent...?"

"People who can't manage their own possessions...for example, still a child, sick because of age, mental illness...[incompetent]is no longer used, it's now changed to[adult guardianship]"

Seki-san tells us.

[The letter has arrived to me from the group that pushed Moritsugu out of the head house. They'll stop hostility towards us. And...Shirasaka Moritsugu's kill request is cancelled]

Shirasaka Moritsugu has requested miss Cordelia to kill those who oppose him under Shirasaka house, and Shirasaka Sousuke and his family.

[If the client is in a situation where they can't pay the fee...the contract's withdrawn, isn't it?]

Jii-chan asks miss Cordelia.

"Yes. I can't judge at this stage but...until I confirm Shirasaka Moritsugu's ability to pay, the kill contract will be on halt"

Miss Cordelia affirms.

"They say that they will be paying the penalty..."

"That would be helpful. I also have to report to the[council]after all..."

With this...

Yukino, Megu, and Mana's dangers are gone...

...I'm glad.

[Umu. I appreciate your wise judgement...I managed to make it in time]

Jii-chan said.

He needed to buy time...

In order to create this situation?...

Chapter 335. Solving puzzles (Part 2)

[The other one is also finally ready]

Jii-chan's voice echoes through the 19th floor.

The other one?...

There's still something else...?!

[Yazawa...let your men down This will be an inside talk...]

"...Okay"

[Kuormori people, Seki-kun, Fujimiya-kun will stay]

"Roger. ...Information staff, withdraw. Wait on 13th floor. Go!"

Chief Yazawa orders, the 100 machine gun unit starts to withdraw from the door they came in.

"Yasuda, Tabuchi, and Hirooka will be the center, collect the collapsed combatants. There might be some who plays dead so be careful!"

Following...the 20 top elites collect Bandini's subordinates who were taken down by Margo-san.

"...Gueeee!!

The guys who didn't faint, took another blow to make sure they're asleep. As expected of the top elites, all of them have a strong body...they grab the neck of the black combatant and drag them across the floor.

"Seki-kun, Fujimiya-kun...I'm sorry but could you monitor Viola and Bandini? Miss Cordelia, can you ask your subordinates as well?

"I don't mind"

Miss Cordelia orders the two with her eyes.

"Lord..."

Does Reika still not trust chief Yazawa? She look at me...

"Let's trust him for the time being"

I answered.

"We've got Kyouko-san, Michi-chan and Edie-chan are on our side too. They'll protect you properly. It's better if Viola and Bandini are on check"

Margo-san said.

"Okay. I'll let everyone else guard"

Seki-san answers

"Take care as well. It's this guys so they might still be hiding something..."

"Yes, I'll be careful"

"We'll be going"

Seki-san and Reika responds to me and head towards Viola and Bandini...

"Oh, this boy trust those girls properly it seems...!"

Kyouko-san said as she look at me.

"From what I heard from Margo's report...I wonder what kind of guy you are, but. You made Ka-chan and Nagisa-chan stable like that?"

...Err

"Far from those two...even Minaho's changed. She's stable now"

Margo-san said.

"I also love Yo-chan...!"

Nei-san says as she snuggle with me.

"Nei, just how much do you believe this boy?"

"A hundred and twenty percent! Yo-chan never lies to us...he's kind, and he'll never betray us!"

"Is that so?"

Kyouko-san stares at me...

"He's broken in his own way"

Margo-san said.

"The type that thinks his life is worthless?"

"That's not it...!"

Michi speaks...

"Master is a man who throws out his life without problem just for our sake. But, I will never let Master die. We will be living happily forever. I...No, we will"

...Michi

"We're[family]after all"

Michi said...Kyouko-san thinks deeply

"The thing I did to the[Kuromori]kids was just[copying therapy]in the end. It's not a fundamental healing...but, if you change that way voluntarily, then the[family therapy]was a good thing then..."

Family...therapy

"We're seriously trying to become a family however"

I said with a slightly annoyed tone.

"I know. If you're not serious then it's meaningless...that's how it is"

Kyouko-san smiles.

Oh...I see.

My sense of commitment...

She won't be convinced unless she trusts me...

She's a core of[Kuromori]after all.

Just like how Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, and Nei-san tested me...

I have to take Kyouko-san's trial as well.

"I think that it's impossible for you to believe me right here, right now but... please take your time to check me. Please"

I said.

"...You look like an idiot"

Kyouko-san laughs

"Normally, when you're surrounded by women that pamper you so much... men become conceited and misunderstand. You seem to be different"

"No. Yo-chan's an idiot"

Nei-san said.

"Yeah...he's not too smart"

Even Margo-san

"Or rather... He's too much of an idiot it's amazing"

Wait...Yukino makes a remark at this situation.

"Master's idiocy is the cute part of him"

Even Michi...

"Oh, I see. That's what Margo meant when she said this boy is[broken]"

Kyouko-san said

"His head is so 《Innocent》"

Eh...Innocent?

"It's not a complement...《innocent》in English was an insulting word before"

...Hmm

I can clearly tell I'm being made fool of.

"But...true, he might be what the current[Kuormori]need right now.

Everyone's at their despair...everyone's desperate"

"Kyouko-san...you see, I want to make Yo-chan happy! Katsun, Nagisa-san and Sensei thinks so too!"

...Nei-san

"Yeah...I think that it's a good thing for you to find someone you want to protect. You want to be happy...therefore, it's a[family]...I see"

Kyouko-san seems to be convinced, but...

I don't get it.

"...Margo, what do you think?"

"I don't have any romantic feelings for him like Katsuko-san or Nagisa-san but...I think of him as my little brother. He's a very good kid"

...Margo-san

"The romantic emotions are a bit different though...Ka-chan and Nagisa-chan were turned to prostitutes when they were young...I think they just want to be kind to a boy, or not only be related using sex"

I see...both of them became prostitutes without even experiencing romance...
Sex always intervenes with their relations with people.

"That's why they need someone like Yo-chan. He's not feeling conceited just because Katsun and others are loving him...in contrary, he never refuses and does his best...!"

"What about you Nei?"

"What...me?"

Nei-san stopped thinking.

"Kyouko-san, please wait...Nei's situation will depend on what's after this"

Margo-san said

The situation after?

"...How do we dispose of Cesario Viola?"

I look at Viola and Bandini who are somewhat far away.

Seki-san and Reika...and the two white women are monitoring them...

I see, Nei-san's a bit frolic right now...

It's because Viola's treatment isn't known yet.

As long as Viola's alive...Nei-san's heart won't find peace.

"...Yo-chan"

Nei-san cuddles me.

I embrace her body firmly

"I don't know how Kouzuki-old man and Yazawa pops will settle this but...how about we watch for a while longer?"

Kyouko-san said.

Meanwhile...the withdrawal of the machine gun troops and carrying out of the fainted subordinates is over.

The 20 top elites left as well.

The people remaining on the floor are...

Us, chief Yazawa, miss Cordelia and her two subordinates and, Cesario Viola and Lorenzaccio Bandini...

"It seems that we're ready. Mr. Kouzuki, when in business you must face the

other party properly!"

Miss Cordelia shouts.

[...You're correct]

...Then

One of the floor walls rises up.

An elevator appears from the inside...

Ding, it opens.

From inside the bright elevator, what comes out is...

Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan???

"...Now then, let's do our last business"

Jii-chan said.

"I can't show this deal to people other from the inside. That is why we excluded Kudou and the outside guards"

...Only inside?

Jii-chan looks at me.

"Originally...I was going to hide to you too. However, you broke through danger and overcame so far...I can only reveal the truth to you"

Then he looked up at the screen on the wall.

"...Misuzu, Ruriko, Yoshiko, are you watching?"

The screen shows Misuzu and Ruriko.

The image is on the basement...the monitor room.

[Yes, grandfather. Ruriko-san, Yoshiko-san and I are here]

Misuzu answers...

"Who else is there?"

[Only Katsuko-san. Nagisa-sama, Megumi-san, Mana-san, are waiting in the next room as you said...]

"Umu...Katsuko-kun. I feel sorry to ask but please watch over my granddaughters"

[Certainly]

Katsuko-nee answers.
What's going to start?

"You all as well...I didn't intend to show what's going to start now. However, seeing your growth now...I've confirmed that you've become adults who can endure anything"

[...Grandfather?]

"Misuzu, Ruriko, Yoshiko won't be lonely anymore. You have a[family]that will accept you whatever happens"

Then, Jii-chan looks at me again

"You...take care of them"

...I

"Even if you don't tell me that, I...we will protect Misuzu, Ruriko, and Yoshiko-san"

"...I'm counting on you"

Jii-chan faces the front.

"Now then...let's begin. Yazawa, let the people in wait enter"

...People in wait?

Didn't they only buy time to work with the Shirasaka house?

"It really took a lot of time to gather all the concerned people...so much we had to sacrifice the hotel entirely..."

Chief Yazawa takes the microphone

"...Bring them"

The doors on the left and right walls open at the same time.
Coming inside, is an unknown old men...and Jii-chan's full time guard, Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san.

On right — Ootoku-san + an unknown old man.

On left — Choumoto-san + an unknown old man.

The two unknown old men aren't wearing suits but rather casual wear.
As if they were chilling at their house and got kidnapped...

"...Ootoku, Choumoto, well done"

Jii-chan speaks to the two.

The two full time guards have different atmosphere from when I saw them in the theater.

Could this be...I feel a strong aura like Kyouko-san, but.

I see, the two of them were holding back in the theater.

They must have monstrous strength in reality I guess.

The unknown old man looks frightened.

[...Father!]

[...Father too!]

Misuzu and Ruriko are both surprised...

...Then this means.

This old man are the two sons of Jii-chan...?!

"My sons...Shigeaki and Shigefuyu"

Oh right...the two full time guards went to protect Jii-chan's sons, but...

Actually...they went to take them?

...Gacha.

Then, another door opened.

Another different old man comes in.

It's an intelligent looking old man wearing a suit.

"[Kakka]...what's going on?"

The intellectual old man looks at the strange state of the 19th floor, then said.

"Umu...sorry to cause you some inconvenience. Shiba-kun"

...Shiba-kun?

This old man, is Jii-chan's most outstanding talent among the executives, Shiba Okitachi?

"What's going to start is Kouzuki house's problem, but...I want you to be an observer..."

Jii-chan said.

"Let me tell you beforehand...I've already rewritten my will before Yazawa-kun and Kuromori Minaho-kun"

...What?

Minaho-neesan disappeared together with Jii-chan...

To witness the rewriting of will?

Speaking of which, chief Yazawa was missing about the same time.

"First...Misuzu and Ruriko will become my adopted daughters. Therefore, my property would be inherited by my two's daughters, and Kouzuki Shigefuyu, my biological son"

...What?

The other son...Kouzuki Shigeaki?

Why is he ignored?

"Since of legal distributions...the wealth will be distributed into three no matter what I desire. But, I have the right to decide the breakdown of the assets to be distributed. Therefore, all of the shares of the major companies of Kouzuki group will be inherited by Misuzu. Ruriko and Shigefuyu's child will inherit mostly cash and land

"Does that mean...Misuzu-san will be the next successor of Kouzuki family?"

Shiba Okitachi asks Jii-chan.

"That's right. That's what I have decided to eliminate the future grief"

Jii-chan said clearly

"Uhm...what will happen to me?"

Ruriko's father...Kouzuki Shigeaki asks worriedly

"Who knows, I wonder. Well have Shigeaki later...Shigefuyu!"

"Yes...father!"

Misuzu's father replies in panic.

"Actually...I also want you to abandon the inheritance rights. If possible, I would like to leave it mostly to Misuzu and Ruriko. Even if you don't inherit my legacy, Misuzu is a kind girl so she won't forsake you. What do you think... Shigefuyu"

Jii-chan asks for his son to abandon heritage inheritance.

"Of course...the inheritance is your right. I won't force you. If you want it then

accept it..."

Kouzuki Shigefuyu...

"Father...I was born in Kouzuki house but became a national bureaucrat and didn't contribute anything to the development of the Kouzuki group. Therefore, I think that it's not a good idea to give me a property of Kouzuki family"

Misuzu's father is like this...

"I will be making my future with my own savings. I won't count on father's legacy. I also know that Misuzu's a talented child...if you wish for Misuzu to become the head of Kouzuki house, I'd gladly support it. Above all..."

Kouzuki Shigefuyu smiles.

"If Misuzu inherits directly from father...the inheritance tax will be done only once"

[...Father, thank you]

Misuzu's crying.

"Then, I will write that in the inheritance document in the morning. Misuzu and Ruriko's procedures for adoption will be completed by tomorrow..."

Jii-chan said, Ruriko...

"Please wait...what about father? What's going to happen to father?"

Jii-chan...

"A person who will die ahead of me shouldn't inherit my legacy..."

...Die ahead?

"F-Father...I!"

Kouzuki Shigeaki shouts but...Ootoku-san holds him down

"Now then...let's proceed to business"

Jii-chan turns to miss Cordelia.

"Hey...what's going on?"

Lorenzaccio Bandini speaks to miss Cordelia.

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"It's been a long time ago but...your team murdered a person named Kouzuki Shigeharu in Los Angeles...do you remember?"

"...I-I don't remember that. There's so many people we've killed. Don't expect me to remember each of them"

"It's a Japanese family. You killed the father...raped the mother and then killed her. The boys were killed after Viola raped them. The bodies were dumped in the Mojave desert..."

Bandini and Viola's facial expression changed.
This guys were the ones who killed Jii-chan's eldest son!

"Bitch! You sold us out!"

Lorenzaccio Bandini's angry but...Miss Cordleia's subordinate held him down.

"My, you don't get what situation your in yet... The[council]has already decided to dispose of you. Isn't it better to make money if you're going to be disposed of anyway, right?"

"You, no way...!"

Miss Cordelia laughs.

"Yes. We have a contract with Mr. Kouzuki from the start. It was our job to bring you here..."

"That's why I gave you fake information...the hotel's security is easy, or that there's an escape route on the 19th floor..."

"Finally understood?"

Bandini's main troops didn't head downstairs but head straight to the 19th floor...

Is that why miss Cordelia sent false information?...

"Instead of bringing you here, the subject of the deal was to bring the people of Kuromori in here, but...now that I knew what Kyouko's true feelings are, I don't care about Kuromori anymore. The kill request from Shirasaka house will take double the price for breach of contract...I'm satisfied"

"...Choumoto"

Choumoto-san heads to the door where Misuzu's father went out.
Then, he brings two heavy attaché case coming back.

Then, he goes to miss Cordelia...

"The payments are in gold bars...isn't it?"

Jii-chan said, then Choumoto-san opens the first case.
There's shining lumps of gold contained inside.

"I think that the amount is way more than the contract, but..."

Miss Cordelia says while checking the gold bars.

"This is a bonus wage. Don't mind it"

"If that's the case then I will accept it. I won't issue a receipt but...you don't mind it do you?"

"I don't want to receive an evidence from a criminal organization..."

Jii-chan answers.

"Then...I will hand over Lorenzaccio Bandini and Cesario Viola, and their team to you"

This is a trade.

"By the way...though I've already secured the principal offender who killed my son, would you tell me who sent out the kill request?"

Jii-chan asks miss Cordelia...

"Unfortunately...we're a criminal organization. Though we sell each other, we never reveal the client's information"

Jii-chan...

"Then, a different method...I will be asking for a kill job"

Jii-chan's eyes instruct Choumoto-san.
Choumoto-san opens another attaché case.
Inside is...
As expected, gold bars are packed inside.

"I don't know who that is but there seems to be people who have paid a criminal organization to kill my son's family. I don't know who that person is. I'm sorry but I want you to use your information network to the fullest, find him...and kill him"

Kouzuki Shigeaki shouts from behind!

"F-Fatheeeeeer!!!!"

Ootoku-san holds down Kouzuki Shigeaki with all his strength.

"...Are you serious with this request?"

Miss Cordelia looks at Jii-chan's eyes...

"As the head of Kouzuki house...it's something I can't overlook. I..."

Jii-chan closes his eyes...

"Before I am a father...I'm the head of a big organization...!"

"...Understood"

"...Please let him die without suffering"

Miss Cordelia slowly heads to Kouzuki Shigeaki

"Father! Father! Fahteer...!! Please wait, please listen to me!"

Kouzuki Shigeaki is frightened as the footsteps of miss Cordelia comes closer...

"...When Shigeharu dies, Kouzuki house's successor would be the second son, you. Normally, that is. I knew that from the start...!"

...Jii-chan.

"Therefore I wasn't able to retire all this time...I didn't reveal my successor. I set Ruriko and Misuzu aside so you can't make a move on them. I removed you from the mainstream of the Kouzuki group...so you can't engage with the key executives"

"...Father, that's not it. Please wait!"

"The Kouzuki security service was also a countermeasure when you contracted with a criminal organization to request a murder"

"...I, I"

"What you can only do was to wait for my death. I've always thought so. But, you...!"

Jii-chan looks down at his son with bright red eyes.

"You didn't stop planning behind the scenes...!"

Kouzuki Shigeaki opens his mouth in surprise.

"What you fear is...me leaving the management of the Kouzuki group to Shiba-kun. As long as the talented Shiba-kun becomes the key to management, even if I die and you become the owner of Kouzuki family, you won't be able to rule over the entire Kouzuki group. Shiba-kun won't allow you who's not talented to participate in management...!"

Shiba Okitachi looks at Jii-chan breathless.

"Therefore you tricked Kouzuki Noboru, used Tsunoda and others to chase out Shiba-kun"

Then...the[Mr]in Tsunoda and other's phones is...
Jii-chan's second son, Kouzuki Shigeaki?

"Sending a spy on the security officers of Kouzuki security service...it was you who tried to attack Shiba-kun at the airport tonight!"

Shiba Okitachi didn't arrive to this hotel because of Kouzuki Shigeaki's orders?!

"I came to help Shiba-sama..."

Ootoku-san said.

Jii-chan's full time guard who's been absent all this time helped out Shiba-san... and hid him...

On top of that, it was to bring Jii-chan's two sons to this place...

"Father...father, I'm sorry!"

Kouzuki Shigeaki shouts...!

"I...I was absolutely superior than my elder brother! It's wrong for the first son to inherit the while house just because he was born earlier!!"

He who's being hunted stops at nothing.

"Why, we're brothers and yet...I have to lower my head to my elder brother! It's strange! That's why I turned it all over! If my elder brother isn't here then I would be the successor of Kouzuki house! If not, it's strange! Isn't that the rule?! And yet!!!"

Kouzuki Shigeaki looks up at her father with eyes of hatred...!

"Father keeps ignoring me!! Making fool of me! Dammit! Hurry up and die, die right now, I thought of that everyday! You...someone like youuuu...!!"

Miss Cordelia stands in front of Kouzuki Shigeaki.

"...You're noisy"

...Shuba!!!

Miss Cordelia's roundhouse kick...twists Kouzuki Shigeaki's head!!!

It was turned to an impossible direction...

Then it shook gently...

Chapter 336. Life and death, custom and desires

...Zudaa!

Kouzuki Shigeaki's body collapsed on the floor

[...Fatheer!!]

Ruriko screams...Misuzu and Yoshiko-san hugs her.

To not show the body of the father to Ruriko.

"Forgive me Ruriko...if you will grudge on someone then let it be me. It was all because of my wrong education..."

Jii-chan looks up at Ruriko on screen and said in pain...

"I was born as the eldest of the Kouzuki house, grew up completely distinguished from my other siblings. Being the born successor...is very lonely, isolated. Therefore, I thought I don't want my sons to experience that"

...Jii-chan's not crying.

He's holding back his emotions.

"But...Shigeaki was distorted by that education policy as a result. Shigeaki was embraced by the ambitions I wished he didn't. He said that he can't bear being his brother's vassal... Compared to my childhood, there was no such experience. My brothers weren't allowed to eat in the same room as me, or even talk to me directly..."

Because Jii-chan got rid of the difference between the treatment of the heir to the other children of Kouzuki house...

Kouzuki Shigeaki became arrogant as a result...???

"This is all my sin...the scandal of Kouzuki house. But, given the honor of the entire Kouzuki group, this event can never be made public"

The second son of Kouzuki's head house...requested an American murder organization to kill his elder brother who is the successor...I think that's not a story that should be made public.

Jii-chan has asked miss Cordelia to dispose Kouzuki Shigeaki, his real son.

"Above all...Kouzuki family is a famous name with a long history. We have an obligation to pass the baton and leave it to the next generation. I can't let Kouzuki house end in my generation..."

Jii-chan's been trapped by the[Kouzuki family]since birth
That means living as the head.

"Therefore...I've gathered all parties concerned, clarify the case, and handle it secretly. I have prepared Kouzuki security service and this hotel for this day. ...It was long. And finally, the burden's lifted off my shoulder"

Ending everything in the hotel owned by Kouzuki family...
Kudou-papa and the free guards shouldn't see the last scene...
Kouzuki security service personnel were withdrawn from this floor...
Above all, he wanted to settle everything in private.
In truth, he doesn't plan to let us know...
Misuzu, Ruriko and Yoshiko-san too...he intended to tell only Shigeaki's death after.

"...Jii-chan, you don't intend to die, do you?!"

I shouted unconsciously

"Fufu...I killed my son. I should die as well"

...That's just.

"I'm trying to cover up everything in this case. Originally, this is an act that's legally and socially unacceptable. I distorted it firmly with the power of Kouzuki house. Ignoring the law and society...then punishing a sin that's neither the court nor a social sanction, it's something only I can do myself. Death must be atoned with death. It's a mortal punishment since ancient times..."

Jii-chan's resolved.

"My last regret are...Yoshiko, Misuzu, and Ruriko...my three granddaughters. But, Misuzu's grown beautifully...if I leave her to Yazawa and Kuromori-kun, there will be no problems. You're with her too...the way you handled the executives and my students were brilliant"

Jii-chan's watching it all.

"I won't have any worry with this..."

Jii-chan turns to Shiba Okitachi.

"Shiba-kun...I'll entrust the management of Kouzuki group to you. As I said, I will transfer all of the shares of each company to Misuzu. Therefore, Kouzuki house will still maintain majority of the shares. Of course you can take new shares and lower the percentage of Misuzu's shares. But still, Misuzu will remain the largest shareholder for each company of the group"

"...[Kakka]"

"I'll speak frankly. I don't care about ruling the Kouzuki group anymore. I don't want the name Kouzuki house to be crushed. That's all. Therefore, I'll leave the management of the whole group to you who's the most powerful among the executives. After you become top, you're free to change the name of the group to Shiba Group or whatever you want. However...you must promise me that you won't do anything that would ruin Kouzuki house"

Jii-chan said, Shiba Okitachi...

"That is why you brought me here, didn't you?"

"Yes, don't tell the truth to the other executives. But...I want you to know everything that has happened

"You haven't thought that I will inform the police?"

"You're a man with strict calculations...you won't do anything that would devalue Kouzuki group"

Jii-chan said.

"Then...in accordance to your words, I will take office as the chief executive of Kouzuki group. In exchange...[Kakka]please remain as the adviser of the group"

Jii-chan's surprised at Shiba Okitachi's offer.

"I intend to die though?"

"The current Kouzuki group is united by the charisma of[Kakka] If[Kakka]dies now...the board of directors will be confused. A crack will show in the group. As an outsider of Kouzuki house, I can't settle this. As a result, I think that the stock price of Kouzuki group will decline sharply"

Shiba Okitachi tells Jii-chan seriously.

"If the stocks price decline due to management failure and loss to competitors then we can make excuses. However, if the stocks lower due to a problem in the group, it won't be good. Kouzuki group's companies is a corporation. We are looking after the company from our shareholders...!"

"I have over half of the stocks on every company of the group however?"

"But still...more than 40% are individual shareholders. We cannot betray them. Please remain in the group. If[Kakka]doesn't exert his influence for now...even if you delegate the management rights to me then the group will be confused"

Shiba Okitachi persuades Jii-chan logically.

"I...am saying this after doing strict calculations. Please stop trying to die for now"

There's a voice from the speaker too.

[We also ask of you...grandfather]

Misuzu tells Jii-chan.

[Ruriko-san is also enduring]

Ruriko who's hugged by Yoshiko-san is crying out.

[I beg you. If grandfather dies after father...Ruriko won't be able to live in grief...!]

[I also ask of you...!]

Yoshiko-san also pleads her grandfather.

"...You"

Jii-chan's heart is shaking.

"...Kouzuki-sama, atoning death with death is a naive thought"

...Minaho-neesan?

"What do you mean? Kuromori-kun...?!"

"We do know that it's much more painful and dreadful it is to stay alive than dying..."

[...I also know it. Omo-chan]

Katsuko-nee says on the screen.

[Grandfather...it's too selfish to die because your regrets are away...]

Misuzu tells her grandfather.

[If grandfather passes away now...we can never be happy...!]

Jii-chan...

"Are you telling me to live as is? With all my shame exposed...!! The second son have killed the first son, and I have killed the second son!! I have no qualification to live with such shame!!!"

...I

"Jii-chan...that's wrong"

Jii-chan turns towards me.

"Being qualified to live or not doesn't matter! There's a lot of people who don't want Jii-chan to die! That's why, live!"

"...You?!"

I look around the floor.

"The respective reasons don't matter...anyone who wants Jii-chan to live raise their hand!!"

I raise my hand first...

Michi, Margo-san, Nei-san follows me.

Sister Edie does as well, imitating Michi.

Minaho-neesan of course raised her hand.

Reika...Seki-san raises her hand.

Misuzu, Ruriko, Yoshiko-san, Katsuko-nee on the screen raised their hands.

"I also think that Ojii-chan shouldn't die"

Kyouko-san raised her hand while smiling wryly.

"Me too...it's profitable to have long relationships"

Matching Kyouko-san, miss Cordelia raised her hand.

Seeing that, miss Cordelia's subordinates as well...

Shiba Okitachi of course raises his hand.

"[...[Kakka]lost]"

Chief Yazawa raises his hand as well.
Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san...the two exclusive guards as well...
The only people not raising their hand on the floor is...
Cesario Viola and Lorenzaccio Bandini.
...And
...Shirasaka Yukino...

"You're going to live, majority decision...Jii-chan"

I said

"But...I"

"Don't keep us repeating...go back to your usual unfaithful old man face!"

Kyouko-san said.

"We're still not done cleaning up yet...!!!"



First...connecting the line with the executives and Jii-chan's students...

"It's me...all the enemies have been repulsed. There's nothing to worry anymore."

[[Kakka]...are you okay?!!!]

Kouzuki Souji shouts across the screen.

"Yes...I'm safe but unfortunately, Shigeaki died in the hands of enemy"
[Shigeaki-sama...!]

The upper floor is in turmoil.

[Then...was the traitor Kouzuki Noboru-sama?]

"That is, yet to be known. Yazawa and others are investigating right now. We'll call you as soon as the report's done"

[...What about Shiba? We have discussed about the possibility of Shiba working together with Noboru?]

"Shiba-kun is here. Shiba-kun seems to have been attacked by the enemy when he left the Haneda international airport. Thus, his arrival was delayed..."

[Ah...is that so?]

"I'm a little tired from the fact that the traitor is from the inside and that

Shigeaki has died. I think that I have to step down from managing in this loom..."

[That's just...[Kakka]...!!!]

"No...I say that I will step down but I don't intend to completely retire. I intend to keep an eye on the whole Kouzuki group. However...I'm just too old to be the person in charge of the group. I think of settling as an adviser or a counselor without the representative right. Nevertheless, don't forget I have the majority of the shares of Kouzuki group companies. I will interrupt any strange management and dismiss any incompetent officials. I will continue to have that power"

[...Does that mean, cloistered rule?]

"That's not it. But still, I'm going to take distance from the group small steps through time. I have to make sure that Kouzuki group stands up even when I'm gone someday. I've been so overprotective of you until now. I intend to watch over you as you become self-reliant..."

[Then...who's[Kakka's]successor? Who will be the CEO?]

"Of course, it's Shiba-kun. Isn't that obvious?"

[.....]

"If you disagree with my decision then I don't mind you leaving Kouzuki group. After all, I'm urging you to be self-reliant...!"



Following...connecting to the line on the evacuated floor of the coup d'état of Shirasaka family

"It's me...all of the assailants were swept out. There's no more problem. Shirasaka Fukushi-kun is in custody. He is safe. He'll be sent there right away"
[I'm glad...Fukushi-chan!!!]

"His phone was stolen by the enemy so he wasn't able to contact you it seems. He said that he wants to see his mother soon"

[...Thank you very much! Thank you very much!]

"You have seen the news as well, don't you? My work bore fruit and Shirasaka Moritsugu was forced to retire by the hands of his aides. Moritsugu's kill request has also been cancelled. There's nothing to worry about anymore"
[Oh, I'm glad...we're saved!!!]

"As for the next head of Shirasaka house...I have strongly recommended it to be Fukushi-kun. Well, what's left is the problem inside Shirasaka house. That is for you to deal with"

[We thank you for everything you've done...!]

"I will sent my guards over there. He'll be with you so you can head to Shirasaka house. You should strike while the iron is hot. Settle down the problems inside Shirasaka house by tonight. I'll arrange it for you to join with Fukushi-kun at the first floor entrance"

[Understood!]

...But

Shirasaka Ayako is the only one talking.

What happened to Shirasaka Hiromitsu from the Osaka TV station, and vice president Yamada?

Cutting off the call...Jii-chan turns to chief Yazawa.

"Leak to the press that Shirasaka Moritsugu sent assassins to the opposing factions inside Shirasaka house"

...Does that mean?

"A house that hired an American assassin to tidy up the problems inside...the campaign will be that it's dangerous to have them leading the giant newspaper and television network of Japan...!"

Jii-chan's face returns to the usual cruel old man.

"I don't care about the upstarts named Shirasaka house. I don't mind giving the next owner's position to that woman's son. But, Shirasaka house has created this opportunity so I will take down their newspaper and television company. Move the public opinion so that Shirasaka house must withdraw from management of media companies under their control"

"...Certainly. [Kakka]"

"Shiba-kun...Oosaka's Shirasaka Hiromitsu has some promise. Make a move so that only Oosaka TV station can be independent from the Shirasaka house's group. Examine his capital ties"

"...Understood"



Then...the cleanup begins
Chief Yazawa calls his trustworthy subordinates.
One of them takes Shiba Okitachi.
Shiba heads to the executives' floor.
Meeting with his son...and discussing the future with the executives.
The other subordinates clean up Kouzuki Shigeaki's body.

"...Let's have Shigeaki die at his home"

Jii-chan said.

"Carry him to Kouzuki first hospital. Let's use that story"

"Then, I will accompany you..."

Jii-chan's third son...Misuzu's father, Kouzuki Shigefuyu said.

"He may be like this but...he's still my brother"

Then, he looked up at the screen connected to the basement.

"Misuzu and Ruriko-chan, don't worry...I will take Shigeaki-niisan"

[...Uncle, take care of him]

Has she calmed down...Ruriko replies.

[We'll be coming late...I'm sorry. We can't come out right away]

Misuzu said.

I had the circuit of the elevator leading to the[emergency evacuation room]...

It'll take time to open the escape route from the inside.

They have to manually unlock several closed doors by hand...it'll take time.

[Right now, Megumi-san and Mana-chan are helping, we're preparing to get out...]

Misuzu said, Jii-chan...

"No, Yazawa, replace the control circuit of the elevator. That way's faster. Just wait over there"

"Yes, if we replace the unit, it'll take only an hour"

Chief Yazawa looks at Seki-san and Reika

"You two do it. You were the ones who broke it...!"

"Okay"

Reika answered embarrassed

"Seki-san...here"

I thought I'd return the pistol to Seki-san.
I'd be troubled if I keep it all the time;

"...Hold it for a while longer"

Seki-san tells me with a slightly scary face.

"Why?"

There's no more problems though?

"I still don't trust this at all"

Seki-san looks at Viola and Bandini who are monitored by the top elites under chief Yazawa.

Also...miss Cordelia who's having a pleasant chat with Kyouko-san.

"Hold onto that weapon until they're out of your sight"

"That's right...Master"

Looking at her...Michi still has her red whip
I see...we're like being on the same cage as the beast.

"Not everything has been resolved yet..."

Margo-san hugs Nei-san.

"What's wrong...Nei-san?"

...Nei-san

"Un...just a bit. It feels strange. The person who's been tormenting me all this time is caught over there..."

"Cesario Viola's inflicted a deep wound in Nei's psyche..."

"I don't know what to do now that we're in this situation!"

Nei-san's trembling.,

"I should kill him after all"

Margo-san said.

"Cesario Viola should die in front of Nei's eyes. Otherwise, Nei's nightmare won't disappear forever..."

...No

...But

"Please wait a moment...!"

I look for Minaho-neesan in panic.

Minaho-neesan's talking with Jii-chan. She's a bit far away from us.

"I think that he'll be executed somewhere if Kouzuki security service takes Viola and him... This is the only chance to kill him in front of Nei's eyes...!"

No...like I said, wait!!

...Then

"You all are crazy!!!"

...Yukino opens her mouth.

"Even though a person died in front of you...he was killed...and yet you still talk about killing?!"

...Yukino...you?

"You all have some loose screws!!!!"

Chapter 337. Gunshot

"People died! You should go contact the police! You should be in trial! Don't you think it's strange that you all decided and consented without permission!? Have some shame you people!"

Yukino snapped.

She seems to be unconvinced of Jii-chan and our actions.

"...Hmm. Lass, why do you think so?"

Kyouko-san asks curiously from a distance.

"Because...it's not okay to judge the crime you did by yourself. Isn't there why there's a law, police, a courthouse who determines judgement from a fair standpoint!"

Yukino answers.

"Hey hey...is your head empty?"

Kyouko-san says with an amazed face.

"Law, police, courts?...Isn't their fairness just fictional?"

"...W-What are you saying?"

Yukino's stunned.

"Kyouko-san, this girl only knows Japan so she doesn't understand that social justice is an illusion"

Margo-san said

"Oh...you just believe in what liberals say"

Kyouko-san smiles wryly

"The law, police and the court are all arbitrarily used by the will of people of power. Those who are without power are always insulted as they like...that's how this world is. That said, there are also irresponsible people trying to say make a revolution...in reality, if the revolution happens, the state's root will be broken and it'll be chaos The country experiencing revolution takes decades to

return to a quiet state"

"I'm not saying about law or country. I'm just saying that everyone's wrong!"

"What? Are you saying that the law, police, courts and country don't make mistakes?"

"That's...sometimes they may be wrong but, aren't they made to be fair to everyone, thinking about everyone?!"

"Hmm, I don't know your standards in what's fair but...if the laws, police, and courts around the world work as you say, then I would still be living happily in Rio, Brazil"

"...What are you talking about"

"I know that the law, police and courts are never reliable. At least, they're not on our side. They're not always the enemy but they're not friendly. Ever since I was a child, I saw how many people around me were sacrificed"

...Kyouko-san.

"Therefore...I must protect myself and my friends. If the enemy attacks us with money and power then I'll fight back with money and violence. An eye for an eye. Power for power. Just rob them money. If the surface use public authority, we will fight with the violence of the darkness. That's how we lived on...!"

Kyouko-san says heavily but Yukino...

"Don't change the topic! People died! We can't just hide it! Isn't it the norm to come to the police properly!!!"

It's the same pattern as usual.

If she's asked with reason, her emotions would explode...

"Sadly...there's not a single normal person here...!"

Kyouko-san's voice echoes in the empty floor...

"First, the people here are the same as me...members of international criminal organization...genuine outlaws"

Kyouko-san's eyes look at miss Cordelia and others.

Miss Cordelia smiles mysteriously

"Then...genuine powerful persons and their subordinates that has the power

to compete with national organizations"

Kyouko-san looks at Jii-chan and chief Yazawa.

Jii-chan's interested in Kyouko-san and Yukino's conversation.

"Everyone are people outside the laws of the country. People who has the power they can clearly use for themselves. There's no need for law or the state's help...!"

Kyouko-san smiles.

"That said, we're not always in conflict with the state. As long as we coexist, we can have friendly relationship with both the nation and people in power. That is because we're neither a socialist, nor a revolutionist. There's no big deal if we want to make the world our own way. We just want to live happily with the people we love"

Jii-chan adds.

"Unfortunately...the environment we were born and raised doesn't allow us to live like ordinary citizens. I was born with the huge power of Kouzuki family... The country, Japan had been plotting to take away the power and control of the family many times. I fought with them...again and again. Kouzuki house is in Japan but...I think that its not good to strengthen the power of people who shake the national power further. No, it's a bad way of saying that I fought with the nation...since there's no clear intention in things such as the state. Who I fight are politicians and senior bureaucrat who takes away what they want with their power. They're not as big as the nation. The few number who are vulgar comes to war using the power of the state. Therefore, I crush them with all my power. That's all there is to it"

"I think that's the misunderstood point by this lass. Do you think that the country, the law, the judicial system are absolutely《NOBLE and QUITABLE?》? They're not. The country, law, and justice are only tools and power used by humans. If the person using it is corrupt, justice will never be fulfilled. Furthermore, it's natural for people of power to rot"

Kyouko-san tells Yukino...

"You people are the ones who don't know anything!"

Yukino's unbreakable.

"You're trying to knead me with such a small logic...I know that...!!!"

She looks at everyone with eyes of contempt.

"You should all be in prison and be hanged! You're those kind of people!
What the hell! Why evil so bossy!!!"

Kyouko-san smiles at Yukino...

"That's right...you finally figured that out?"

...What?

"That's why you should already notice that you shouldn't talk about justice on
evil people...!"

Yukino turns to me with a look of fury.

"What about you! Are you thinking the same as this woman...?!!"

...I

I look at Nei-san and Margo-san on my side.

Michi and sister Edie too.

Reika and Seki-san.

Jii-chan and Minaho-neesan.

Then, Katsuko-nee, Misuzu, Ruriko, and Yoshiko-san on the screen...

"I'm a member of the criminal organization[Black Forest] These people are
my[family]"

I've already made my resolve.

I'm resolved to live and die with this[family]

"...Is that so?"

Yukino said quietly

"Then...I can't stay here anymore"

Yukino walks towards the door.

"Hey, where do you intend to go?!"

"Home! I don't want to stay here for a second longer. I don't want to stay with

you any longer...!"

"Home, where?"

"...Isn't that obvious, my house!"

"Your house is filled with mass media!"

It hasn't been 24 hours since the discovery of the big scandal of Shirasaka Sousuke yesterday.

It's just been reported that the head, Shirasaka Moritsugu has been hospitalized.

"I don't care about that! I want to go home! I want to leave!"

Yukino puts her hand on the door knob but the door won't open.

"Where's the key to this door?!!!"

"Wait! Yukino! You intend to go out looking like that!"

Yukino's naked...only wearing my T-shirt.

Her feet's barefoot...

"I don't care!"

"In the first place...this is the outskirts of Odaiba. How do you intend to go home?!"

It's already night...

Yukino doesn't have a single cent...

"Shut up! I'll walk home through the rainbow bridge!"

No...can you even pass through the rainbow bridge with just that T-shirt?

"Just say here for now! At least get a change of clothes. You need shoes don't you!?"

"I don't! I don't need anything! I don't want to do anything with you people anymore...!"

Yukino glares at me with eyes of hate.

"...I hate you. Don't come close to me!"

"...Yukino"

"Don't ever try to get involved with me again! I don't want to see your face anymore!!!"

Yukino rejects me.

...Right.

Of course...

I've only been an existence that torments Yukino all this time.

Having sex several times, it looks like our hearts communicate, but...

That is just a misunderstanding.

There's no way Shirasaka Yukino could like me

...That's just.

...Obvious from the beginning

"...Sorry"

Those words leak out of my mouth.

"...What?"

Yukino turns to me looking unpleasant.

"No...I don't know what to say. Anyway, sorry. I'm really sorry...!"

...Then, Yukino.

Her heart explodes.

"If you're going to apologize then do it from the start! You idiooooooot!!!!"

I raped Shirasaka Yukino.

Taking her virginity forcibly...raping her multiple times.

I tore her relationship with her lover...

Stole Yukino's sister...

Exposed her silliness to the students of the school...

Helped out in overthrowing her father.

I took her to this dangerous place...

Right now...Yukino has nothing left.

Friends, lover, family...nothing

"...Sorry, Yukino"

Yukino is now losing her bond with me.

No, there was no bond from the beginning.

I'm a rapist and Yukino's the victim

That was the only relationship from the start.

Therefore...I

...Can do nothing but apologize.

"...Sorry"

I said, Yukino...

"Give me a break!!!"

Yukino's fist hits me in the face.

It's not a slap.

Yukino's fist hit me.

Since she's a girl, her punch doesn't carry weight, but...

It hurts for me.

"There's no way it can be settled with a sorry!!"

...At that time.

...Gachari.

The door placed on the wall opened suddenly...!

Appearing from the door is Kouzuki Kenshi.

"...Oh, so everyone's here!"

Kouzuki Kenshi smiles like clear sky...very out of place.

"Iyaaa, I finally came down to this floor...!"

...At that moment!

"Uwaaaa!"

A scream can be heard from behind.

Turning around...Lorenzaccio Bandini attacks one of the top elite monitoring him!

"That's just...they were frisked, aren't they?"

"Looks like he was hiding a knife in the heel of his shoe!"

Bandini pushes the top elite and rushes towards the door Kouzuki Kenshi opened!!

"You can't escape!!"

Kyouko-san and the top elite tries to hold Bandini at once.
Everyone's concentrating on Lorenzaccio Bandini
There's no way Cesario Viola overlooks that opportunity.

"..... ! ! "

Viola also flees between the top elites...
Furthermore, he aims to break through in a different way from where Bandini headed.
In short...He's trying to take a hostage.
The most defenseless person on this floor in Viola's sight—
...is Yukino.

"...Come here!"
"Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!"

Viola's eyes are bloodshot...!
Yukino screams!
I jump in between Yukino and Viola!
Before Viola's hand catches Yukino...!

...Bushutsu!
Michi's red whip strikes Viola's hand!!
...Then

"...Toiyaaa!!!"
Margo-san jump kick from the side bursts Viola!!!
"...Gueeee!!"

Viola's body danced in the air from the fierce kick and rolled down on the floor...
He twitched...and lost power.

"...He died?"
Yukino mutters.
"Who knows...I hope he did"
Margo-san answers.

Slowly approaching...

Margo-san stripped of Viola's mask.

The face under the mask is fainted.

It seems there's some make up.

The mustache attached is crooked.

"...Did he have this kind of face? Cesario Viola"

Nei-san mutters"

"The face in my memory was far more frightening"

"Well, the Viola remaining in Nei's head is just adding more and more scariness.
That's how memory of fear is..."

Margo-san said.

Bandini on the door is caught without problems.

"«Hey»Mr. Bandini, who's Viola's disguise for today?"

Right.

Cesario Viola has a hobby of disguising as a movie character during work.

"It's Rhett Butler...!"

Bandini who's held down by several people answers Margo-san frustratedly

"Clark Gable?"

"That's right"

I don't get it.

"Hmm...It's right on track but it feels like[A look-alike]"

Margo-san says so so he must be looking similar to some extent.

"Before we reunited in Los Angeles...that guy was in front of a Chinese Theater, winding up small change from tourists dressed as Rhett Butler. However, her sister who's dressed as wonder woman had better earnings"

The young Viola and Rosalind were doing that...

"He got angry from that...he stopped making costumes and concentrated on stealing the tourists' luggage as they take pictures with his sister...!"

Then...on the path of evil.

Viola who's fainted remains lying down...not moving at all.

"He's dead...killed. You people killed again!!"

Yukino looks at us angrily

"...Yukino"

"Don't get closer!!!"

Yukino screams.

"I don't want this anymore! I'm sick of this!!! I don't want this! Let me out of here!!!"

Yukino tries to escape from the wall.

That's where Viola's body fell.

...I

"Yukino...wait!"

I turned the pistol Seki-san handed me...

"W-What...Y-You...you intend to kill me too?!"

Yukino's face distorts in fear.

"That's not it! I'm telling you to not move!!!"

"Don't order me!!"

Yukino's feet falls back.

You can't go there...!!

"...Yo-chan?"

"...Master?"

Nei-san and Michi calls me.

"...I see, I get it!"

Margo-san rushes.

But...I

I noticed that she won't make it.

"Nooooooo, don't kill meeeeeee!!!"

...I thought that something's strange.

...I felt that it is.

...Therefore.

...Dogyuuuu!!!

I shot the gun.

The bullet flies straight...

In a moment, it opened a hole in Viola's body who's collapsed on the floor...his body jumps up.

Blood, spouts out

The smell of smoke hits my nose...

"Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

Yukino's scream thunders...

Margo-san hugs Yukino-san to protect her.

"Noooooooooo, Nooooooooooo,. aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!"

Yukino's in frenzied state.

Margo-san slaps Yukino!

"...Calm down!!!"

The people's gaze concentrates on the floor.

Viola's body that was shot...

I shot him...

"..... ! "

Yukino looks back at me.

Kyouo-san comes in.

She inspects Viola's body.

"...Well done noticing it"

Kyouko-san picked up a small capsule that's grasped in Viola's hands.

"...What's that?"

"A nerve gas. It's impossible to take everyone on this floor but it's the type that can kill nearby people.... It means that he'll take someone down with him. What a weak willed man..."

Viola's holding to a poison capsule.

"He was pretending to be dead, and when someone comes near him, he'll use this capsule..."

Kyouko-san looks at Yukino.

"With your position, you would've been surely dead...this boy helped you"

But...Yukino...

"You...killed"

She looks at me dreadfully.

"You're a murderer"

...That's right.

I killed.

I shot.

With this hand...

With this gun...

"...I, I"

Huh...what's going on.

I feel my body's so heavy.

I'm tired.

...I feel bad.

I feel like my stomach's flowing backwards.

I feel dizzy.

"...Yo-chan!"

"...Master!!"

I can't stand anymore.

"...Shit. I should've noticed this possibility!"

Margo-san's voice sounds far away

"If he's not fixated about his life...he won't feel hesitant to take away other people's lives!"

Eh...does that mean?

Is that me...?

"...Murderer! Killer! Criminal!"

I can hear Yukino's voice.

It sounds very far away.

"...Uwaaaaaa"

...I

Then lost consciousness...

★ May 3 ▪ Thursday

Chapter 338. One more kiss

"...Good morning...good morning...!"

.....○

.....○

.....○

"...Yoshida-kun...Yoshida-kun...!"

.....○

.....○

...Hmm...?!

"...Yoshida-kun...Yoshida-kun!"

Good...morning...?

...It's morning already?

My body feels heavy.

My stomach's turned over...

...What?

My condition is too bad.

I wish to sleep further.

"...Get up! Yoshida-kun...!"

...Yoshida

Yes...that's, my name.

"...It's morning already! Get up...Yoshida-kun!"

...It's noisy...

I open my heavy eyelids.

...Then

The first one I see is...

"Ehehehehe...you finally got up!"

...Mao-chan?

The angelic smile of the three year old girl fills my vision...

"Good Morning! Yoshida-kun!"

...Err

"Ah, you can't go back to sleep! That's bad!"

...No, I'm completely awake.

What's going on?

...I

I'm on a fluffy bed.

Somehow...I'm in an amazingly luxurious room.

The curtain's are closed so I can't see outside the window, but...

Morning light is shot from the gap.

Yeah...night has already ended.

"You see...Mama said that you didn't take a bath last night and just slept, so let's take a bath!"

Mao-chan tells me.

"Do you get it...Yoshida-kun?!"

No...uhm

"Me...bath?"

"It's not just Yoshida-kun...Mao will join in too!"

Oh...the two of us.

Or rather.

"Hey...Mao-chan. Where's Nagisa?"

Not just Nagisa.

Where's everyone else.

Or rather...what's this room?

At the moment the doubt comes to mind...

The door opens and Nagisa herself appears.

"Oh...awake? I'm glad"

Nagisa smiles gently
Looking at it, there's one chair besides the bed I was sleeping on.
Nagisa was watching over me?

"...Where's this?"
"We're still in the hotel. It's close to the top floor...I had Shige-chan lend us all three suite rooms. This is one of them"

Then that means...
Everyone else is in another room?

"Mao...get the bath ready"
"Eh, Mamaaa"

Mao-chan doesn't seem to want to leave my side.

"We'll be coming right away...you can help out can't you?"

I look at Mao-chan

"Please...Mao-chan"

Mao-chan smiles...

"Okaaaay~!"

Saying that, she head to the bathroom.

"You don't have to run...it's dangerous if you fall down!"
"I can run just fine~!"

The noisy angel leaves the room.
Inside the room is only me and Nagisa.
Nagisa sits on the chair next to the bed.

"Were you able to get out of the basement right after that?"

I explore my ambiguous memory.

"It took more than two hours after you lost consciousness. That's when the elevator was restored. But still, everyone were at the limit of their mind and stamina... It was impossible to use the escape route where it'll take time to open. If we went that way, we can't get any help from outside"

Taking the trouble of removing the lock from the inside one by one...

The only person left in the basement who has the physical strength would be Megu...

"Is everyone safe?"

"Yes...they're safe. Everyone is. Don't worry"

Nagisa smiles...

Yeah...that makes my heart feel lighter.

"...Ruriko?"

"Misuzu and Yoshiko-san escorts her and went home first. She has to prepare for her father's wake"

"...Right"

"Their guards are Seki-san and Michi-chan. Edie=chan wanted to go but Kyouko-san held her back

Sister Edie's completely attached to Michi.

But...it's worrying for that girl to be in the funeral of a member of Kouzuki family.

She's likely to pick a fight with a guard of another family that came to burn incense.

In the first place, she doesn't know the atmosphere of Japan funerals...

"The police are on the grounds of this hotel. But, Shige-chan doesn't let the police enter above 19th floor. Therefore, we'll be fine here. When we're about to head out, we'll just contact Yazawa-san and...Kouzuki security service car would send us off"

"Police...?"

"It should be on the variety show this morning..."

Nagisa turns on the television with a remote.

In the screen...is the whole view of the hotel we're at.

Oh, the messed up — flooded first floor is reflected.

[A hotel in Odaiba is raided by a 120 men Russian Mafia murder group!]

Those were the headline.

"The situation's covered by helicopters so don't open the curtains"

I see, that's why the windows are shut off.

Nagisa changed the channel, a moderator and commentator talks.

[But still, why would someone like Shirasaka Moritsugu try to borrow the power of Russian Mafia to destroy his enemies?]

[He must be getting impatient. They're on the crisis of downfall after all...]

[But...for a newspaper person who believes that pen is mightier than sword, isn't it surprising for them to hire a terrorist?]

[Well, we don't know what's going on inside Shirasaka house after all...]

Nagisa turns off the TV.

"Shige-chan made everything Shirasaka Moritsugu-san's fault"

...I see

In fact, the people opposing Shirasaka house stayed here last night...

The kill request of Shirasaka Morisugu was a matter of miss Cordelia's business...it was not the main purpose of the hotel raid, but...

"The people of Shirasaka house doesn't know anything behind the scenes so they just forced the owner to retire you see? Shige-chan declared[It's all your fault]so the media is reporting as Shige-chan says... It seems that Shirasaka house will pay for the hotel repair expenses and compensation pay for the closed down businesses.

...That's cruel.

...That's very Jii-chan like though.

"Only this case, Shirasaka house also covers the situation of this hotel on the same tone as the other stations. Shirasaka house's control on the newspaper and television companies is now over. The world will never allow Shriasaka's name to become a top company..."

Then, the people close to Jii-chan will be holding down the newspaper and television companies either way.

Well, the head house will still be one of the major shareholders.

But, Shirasaka clan who works for group companies in the future won't be ahead.

"...Ahahaha"

A dry laugh overflows.

"Anyway, the immediate worry is gone..."

Megu and Mana's life is no longer in danger.
Nei-san...won't be attacked anymore.
Cesario Viola's dead after all.
I shot him dead.

"You really did your best"

Nagisa says.

"I haven't done anything helpful to anyone"
"That's not true. You haven't received any special training...you're just a high school student and yet, you're such a kind and hardworking boy that's why you did the impossible. You did all your best until you fall..."
"...That was my limit I guess."

My body's so dull.
My stomach feel sick...
My whole body's screaming
...Yeah
I've been on an extremely dangerous place last night.
At the brink of life and death...
I was tense last night so I didn't feel it, but...
I forced my mind and body to it's limit.

"Right. I'm a normal human. No, rather, I have less power than an average person..."

The ones who actually fought are Margo-san, Michi, Seki-san and Reika.
I was being protected.
Kyouko-san was the one who saved the crisis...
Because of me hurrying things up...in the end, I felt like I was just interfering with Jii-chan's plan.
I didn't help out at all
The sense of inferiority and defeat wraps me up

"...Dear"

Nagisa embraced me tightly...

Soft and warm body...

"You really did your best. I saw it. I think you should be proud of it...!"

"...Nagisa"

Nagisa kisses me.

...Then

"Rather...it was us who didn't do good depending on you too much. You bore the burden and went beyond your limit"

..... !

I...killed a person

"...I'll tell you Minaho-san's message"

Nagisa looks into my eye...

"First, you are free...understand that you don't have to feel any obligation towards us"

"...Free?"

"Yes. Minaho-san's first proposal is..."

Nagisa continues to talk sadly.

"If, you want to leave our[family]...this is a hypothetical talk...Minaho-san will prepare a new family register for you. You'll be given a sizable amount of money as well. You can live a new life with a new name...in a place far away from us. If ever you don't want to see us again...we can move to a foreign country. We'll never show ourselves to you again. Because, we want you to make your life to the fullest..."

"There's no way I would wish for that!"

"Don't think about us for now...think of your own life as a priority. Understand that you can redo your life as an ordinary high school student...! I don't want you to think that your life is over!"

...Nagisa

"...There's no way I would abandon my family because of that!"

A life without everyone is just...

"Minaho-san's second suggestion is...you have to chose a[family]to live with"

"...Choose"

"If this continues...you'll be crushed by shouldering everything yourself. If so... then, isn't it better to limit it to the only family you think it's comfortable and easy to live with?"

"...What do you mean?"

"Minaho-san said that it's best for your mental stability to stay with me and Mao in my house but... You can live with Katsuko too. Katsuko-san, Megu-chan and Mana-chan. Renting a house for four people"

Rent a house?

Why not the[mansion]?

"Even Misuzu's place will do. Shige-chan will prepare a house for it. She's attentive and gentle. I think it's good to live with Misuzu, Ruriko-san, Yoshiko-san and Michi-chan in places Shige-chan backs up."

"...That's"

"Anyway...Minaho-san said that you should narrow it down to a range of people. If you're always worried about everyone, you'll fall down in anxiety. Of course, you can change on the places as you like. For example, you're worried about Ruriko for now aren't you?"

"...Yeah"

"Then, stay up with Ruriko until she's settled down...when you think it's okay then go with Katsuko. That is okay too"

...But

"And, the last proposal...Minaho-san said that you should stay away from the criminal organization[Kuromori]. Therefore...don't enter the[mansion]anymore, and never see Margo-chan, Kyouko-san and Minaho-san herself ever again..."

...There's no way I'd do that.

...Minaho-neesan.

"Minaho-san's the most depressed now. Minaho-san wants to be your teacher forever. She regret that she put you into danger"

...Oh

Dammit...what should I do?

...I

"...Uhm, what about Nei-san?"

I ask Nagisa.

Nei-san's name hasn't come out

"Nei-chan's on hold. Nei-chan is in state of shock right now..."

...What?

"Though the real Viola died...Nei-chan's fear of Viola that has been eroding her all this time hasn't disappeared yet. The balance of reality and mind is being tipped off"

"...is that so?"

"Yes...she can only take time to stabilize. Everything has changed so suddenly after all..."

It's because I shot Viola in front of Nei-san.

"How about going on a trip with Nei-chan for a while, for about one month. There's an option like that too..."

Nagisa said.

"Anyway...Minaho-san's proposal is too long to be understood but...Minaho-san wants you to stop thinking[It can't be helped]or[I have to do something] It's the same as giving up your life"

So I won't have to give up on my life.

"Even I...I want you to choose what you want to do. We will support you whatever you choose I don't mind feeling lonely as a result of it. We want you to be happy..."

...Nagisa.

"What are you going to do in the future?...take your time to think about it"

Mao-can pops out of the door.

"Ihihihi...it's filled with hot water!"

"Please...come in with Mao"

Nagisa smiles at me.

"Since she's three years old...she'll be fine as long as you take care she doesn't

drown"

Then...she said.

"It's her long time dream to bathe with her father"



"Bath! Bath! Rururu!!"

Mao-chan happily scatters around the clothes around the dressing room.

I think while taking off my clothes.

Nagisa's last words...

Does Nagisa think that I will abandon them?

So, in order for Mao-chan to make her last memories...

I'm going to take a bath with her.

"Uwa, it's a peepee"

Mao-chan looks into my crotch

"No, you don't have to look at that part"

"Why?"

"Uh...Mao-chan's embarrassed being seen naked, right?"

"I'm fine! It's Yoshida-kun after all!"

"...What?"

"Yoshida-kun is Mao's papa right?!"

Mao-chan smiles happily

Right...I promised with this girl.

Certainly...I made a promise.

"Yes yes, before you take a bath, wash your body properly first!"

Mao-chan tells me smiling.

"Take a shower"

"...Okay"

"Pour out the water"

"...Okay"

"Wow...so coold!"

"It'll be hot water right away"

"Yeah...it's getting warmer. Okay, Yoshida-kun, take a sit here!!!"

Mao-chan makes me sit.

"I'll pour in the shower!!"

She does to me what she usually do to Nagisa.

I just let Mao-chan do what she want in silence.

"Okay, I'll wash your butt too"

Her small hand washes my butt.

"Here, I'll wash Mao-chan too"

"Okaay"

I pour the warm shower on Mao-chan's small body...

"That's enough! I also washed my butt so let's take a bath now!"

Err

What should I do?

"Yoshida-kun, go in first! Then you hug Mao in front!"

Oh...I see.

I can hold Mao-chan in the bathtub.

"What small hands."

Looking at it again...Mao-chan's hands are really small.

It's like a miniature of an adult's hand.

"Not just my hand! Mao's all small"

Mao-chan's angry.

"Oh, well of course"

"Yoshida-kun's big"

"No I'm not. I'm just around average in class"

"You're bigger than Mao!"

Well...of course.

"Hey, speaking of which, why is Mao-chan calling me[Yoshida-kun]?"

"You see...Sensei tells me to do so!"

...Sensei?

...Minaho-neesan?

"She said[he has to go back to his starting point]"

...I see

So I won't get trapped in[Kuromori]house...

So I can reset my thoughts once more...

"Hey hey, can you do this?"

Mao-chan sinks the towel into the hot water and makes a bubble/

"Bukubukubuku...kyahaha"

"I'll make you a bigger bubble"

I stuffed in as much air as possible and let the bubble flow out.

"Wahahaha, amazing, amazing!"

Mao-chan laughs.

"Hey hey, Yoshida-kun...it's fun!"

"Which...the bubble?"

"No! It's fun to take a bath with Yoshida-kun!"

...Mao-chan

"It's fun to take bath with Mama but...there are times where Mama's tired"

"What do you do at those times?"

"Mao gives Mama a massage!"

The mother daughter pair has a lot of troubles too.

"Ah, Yoshida-kun...you have to wash the back of your ears!"

Mao-chan climbs up my body...and rubs the towel she's been playing until a while ago to my ear.

"You see...Yoshida-kun. Mao...has a request!"

Then, she looks straight to my face...speaking shyly.

"What?"

"There will be a sports day in Mao's kindergarten the next day. The other

children have their, Papa, Mama, Grandpa and Grandma coming, Mao only has Mama. So..."

...I

"Sure. Go. I'm coming too"

"...Really? Promise?"

"...Yeah. I'm not lying I promise"

I made another promise.

"Uhii...Yaaaay!!!"

Mao-chan happily smiled...

...I see.

...Right.

...Dammit

"Hm...What's wrong? Yoshida-kun?"

...I

"...Nothing"

In the end, I...

I've made so many promises.

I can't just run away from those promises I've made.

Promises are meant to be kept.

I tell myself inside.

"...Does your stomach hurt?"

"I'm fine"

"Mao will give you a hug then...!"

Mao-chan's small hand embraces me.

...What a good girl.

Mao-chan...hugs me.

I'll protect this girl for all my life.

I promised to be this girl's Papa...

"I'll be a good Papa for Mao-chan!"

"Yaaay!"

I can't speak about dependence.
I must protect her even on death.
I've got promises to fulfill.

I...will become Minaho-neesan's brother.
Katsuko-nee's brother, and man.
Nagisa's man...Mao-chan's father.
Nei-san's brother.
Misuzu's man...and owner.
Megu's lover...and husband.
Mana's...brother, and master.
Michi's master.
Ruriko's brother.
Reika's lord.
I promised to be Jii-chan's grandson...

I made promises.
To make them happy...
I have to do all my best to do what I promised.
I can't be dependent anymore.
Whoever I am...
Whoever I killed, are all irrelevant.
I'm no longer allowed to be depressed about such things...

In order to protect my [family]...

"I'm coming in!"

Nagisa's also naked...entering the bathroom.,

"Mama, Mama, it's trouble! Yoshida-kun's crying!"

Mao-chan reports to her mother.

"At such times, you give him a kiss! then, say[I love you]"

Nagisa said.

"I love you?"

"Mao...do you like him?"

"I like him! He's Mao's Papa!"

...Mao-chan

"If you think so then tell him in words and give him a peck. It won't be conveyed if you just think of it!"

"Yes, Mama!"

Mao-chan looks up at me smiling.

"...Yoshida-kun! I love you! Chu!"

Her small lips touches mine

"I love you too...Mao-chan!"

I also kiss Mao-chan on her cheek...!

Chapter 339. Good Morning

"Mao, try to stuff in. Mama's coming in too"

"Okay"

"Ufufu, the bathrooms in the suite room are wide. The three of us can fit in..."

Warm bath water...

Soft body.

Nagisa, me, Mao-chan.

I'm being embraced by Nagisa from the back and I hold Mao-chan in front.

Mao-chan's playing with the water.

"...As expected, your body is still tense"

Nagisa's finger pokes my back.

"Tense...me?"

"Yes, your whole body's stiff, chattering"

Saying so, Nagisa massaged my shoulder.

"Here, take a deep breath..."

"Mama, Mao too?"

"Yes...join together, Mao"

Mao-chan looks up at me smiling.

"Okaay, then let's take deep breaths! Breath iin!!"

...Suuu

"Exhaleeee!"

...Haaa

"Breathe slowly...take a long and deep breath!"

Mao-chan speaks like a teacher.

"She learned it from kindergarten. Don't worry about it and just play with her"

Nagisa smiles.

"Okay, inhaaaaaaleee!"

Suuuuuuuuuuuu

"Okay, exhaleeeeeee!"

Haaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa

"Yes. Imagine yourself melting into hot water. I don't mind if you put your weight on me..."

"...I'm not heavy?"

"It's okay...you can lean over me"

Nagisa whispers to my ear.

She hugs my chest from the back tightly

"There's nothing to be afraid of...it's not scary at all"

Nagisa's plump chest touches my back.

I can feel her nipple clearly.

"Mao and I are here. We'll accept you without any rejections..."

"...I know"

"Okay, let's continue our deep breaths!"

So...I take deep breaths while sandwiched between mother and daughter...
My heart and body slowly loosens.

"...It's gotten softer"

Nagisa's finger caresses my arm and chest.

"Let's see, Mao will examine too!"

Mao-chan's small hand touches my chest.

"Mao-chan, that tickles"

I hug Mao-chan and kiss her.

"Go and wash Mao's body and hair"

...Eh?

"You're going to take bath with Mao don't you? You have to learn how to

wash a girl's hair"

"Yeah...you're right"

I'm Mao-chan's Papa.

During times where Nagisa's not with her, I have to wash it.

There's a lot of things to remember when taking care of a small girl.

"Uh-huh...Yoshida-kun, wash me!"

"Sure...Mao-chan"

Then, I wash Mao-chan's head.

Her hair too, carefully

"Close your eyes, it hurts when the soap enters your eyes"

"Wow, Yoshida-kun's saying the same thing as Mama!"

"Just do it"

"Okay~!"

Mao-chan washes my body in return.

As for the hair...since she has no strength, it's soggy, and Nagisa took over halfway.

Nagisa washes my hair to the root, it felt pleasant.

Then, I washed Mao-chan and Nagisa's body.

Mao-chan laughs, overflowing with youth.

"Mao, if you're too frolic in the morning, you'll get tired right away!"

"But it's fun!"

I wash away the soap bubbles on Nagisa's back.

"Mama...Mao feels like it's extremely fun!"

"You see, that's called happiness?"

"Is Mao happy?"

Mao-chan thinks for a bit...then looks at me.

"Yes. Mao might be happy! Yoshida-kun!"

Then, I wash Nagisa's hair.

Women's hair...when you wet it with water, it becomes lifeless.

I hung the long wet hair on the side and rubbed both Nagisa with shampoo

from both hands.

"So that's how you wash it"

"That's right. Mao, help him out..."

"Okay~!"

After shampoo, next is conditioner.

I massage Nagisa's hair.

It's glossy...it doesn't feel strange.

"Mama's hair is like a kelp!"

...Mao-chan

"You know, those that are swaying in the sea?"

"Mao...I've told you many times already, the kelp in the sea and the kelp in miso soup are the same!"

"No way! The miso soup kelp isn't as big as the ones on the sea!"

Mao-chan insists strongly

"We went to a sea aquarium during our excursion. When asked which fish was the most interesting, this child answered[Kelp!]..."

She's fond of kelps?

Or rather, I wonder if this unique personality is something to rejoice at...

"Don't look so worried...it's the children's privilege to say strange things. You don't have to mind all of it"

Nagisa smiles at me.

"Yes yes, you don't have to mind it...Yoshida-kun!"

"Nihihi"Mao-chan laughs...



Coming out of the bath.

"The change is in there. Reika-oneesan has prepared last night"

It's a change of underwear and a shirt.

Did Reika buy it?

"The first floor of the hotel is soaked...so she has gone to a nearby convenience store"

I've got to thank her later...

"She should've bought some ingredients as well. Katsuko should be cooking breakfast"

...Breakfast?

"There's a kitchen in the suite for Katsuko. There are some foreigners who would like to cook while staying after all"

I see.

"Though there's no problem with the facilities of the hotel...there's no clerks around. It's closed until the field verification is over...so it's a secret to the police that we're staying. Room service are also unavailable"

It seems that someone recovered the clothes I took off from the theater in the hotel.

...I'm glad.

Minaho-neesan's grandfather clothes, Katsuko-nee fixed the size to fit me... All of them are taken.

"The hotel laundry can't be used for now. The clothes we took off will be taken home"

Nagisa's on her bathroom for the time being.
Mao-chan's also wrapped in bath towel.

"Wait...women really takes time on this part"

Saying that, Nagisa uses the hair dryer on Mao-chan's hair.

"We've got to dry it properly..."

"Yeah, if not you're going to catch colds"

I said, Nagisa laughs...

"There's that, but...when it's naturally dried, it will look like it exploded. That's our hair type"

I see.

I don't have a long hair so I don't understand

"If you're bored then go watch the TV"

"No...I'll watch here"

Nagisa dries Mao-chan's hair.

Next is Nagisa's hair.

Mao-chan helps out too.

I just watch all the time.

It's not boring at all.

"...Interesting?"

"Yeah, very"

"We're always doing this though?"

"No, it's just that it's my first time seeing this"

I was taking baths with grandma when I was little, but...

Grandma never used dryer or anything of sorts.

My mother...

Mother's room that are absolutely off limits are the bath, restroom, and the dressing room so...

I've never seen this kind of scene.

"Dear, my back please"

Nagisa takes off her bathrobe and puts on her bra.

She puts her rich breasts in the cup and turns her back on me...

"Ah...sure"

I fasten the hook on the back

"Katsuko and I are fine because we carry a replacement underwear out of habit, but. I wonder if Megu-chan and Mana-chan are okay"

Usual habit...

The two of them were prostitutes after all...

"Can I wear the panty myself?"

"...What?"

"You're the one putting on Misuzu-chan and Megu-chan's panties, aren't you?"

"That's...what they wish for. It's not that I'm that particular about panties"

"Oh, is that so?"

But still...Nagisa wiggles her butt to entertain my eyes.

"Yoshida-kun! Dress me up!"

The naked Mao-chan runs towards me.

"Mao's clothes are there. Mao's underwear was washed and dried up last night. I'm glad I did"

Wow...what a small panty
This is surely easier to dry off.

"Mao-chan, raise one of your feet"

"Okay!"

The obedient Mao-chan follows instructions.
What a good girl.

I somehow managed to dress up Mao-chan.

"Wrong, Yoshida-kun...you're one button off"

"Oh true, sorry"

"It's fine, it's fine...you can just remember bit by bit...Kishishi!"

Mao-chan said and laughed.
Taking care of children is troublesome
But, I've got to work hard...
Meanwhile, Nagisa's changed to the same clothes she wore yesterday.

"We're putting on light make up. We're only meeting up with everyone but...if I don't have make up, Katsuko will laugh at me"

Saying that, she takes out a foundation from her pouch

"Mama, Mao too, Mao too"

"Okay"

She also applied a small foundation on Mao-chan's face too.
Then, adding a bit of eyebrow...
Adding a few color on her lips as well...
Just a bit of make up turns her to a face of an adult woman.

"After we eat breakfast...we have to go to the store. I had my stock this morning delivered directly from the flower market but we have to prepare before opening"

Oh right. We're still in the middle of Golden Week, but...
Nagisa's shop isn't closed.

"We have a customers related to flowers...the iris on seasonal festival sells well"

"Should I help out in your store?"

Nagisa smiles...

"Take care of other girls instead of me Everyone's worried about you...some of them are depressed. Therefore, take care of them"

Then she touched my crotch in a way Mao-chan won't see...

"Watching your sleeping face...taking a bath together is enough for me. I can work energetically today as well!"

"...Nagisa"

"We can have baby-making next time again..."

Sex with Nagisa is baby making.
Nagisa wants to be pregnant...

"Oh right. Can Mao stay with everyone? Today's a holiday for kindergarten. I feel sorry to leave her alone in the house"

"Sure...I'll look after her"

"You don't have to do it alone. I'll ask Katsuko and Margo-chan too"

Nagisa crouches and look look at Mao-chan's eyes.

"Mao...can you stay away from Mama until night?"

Mao-chan...

"Okay, I'll stay with Yoshida-kuun!"



We go to the next suit across the hotel corridor.
Megu and mana came out when I ring the bell.

"Good morning, Onii-chan1"

"Good morning, Yoshi-kun..."

The two of them want a good morning kiss.
I kiss them in turns.

"M-Me too, I didn't have my morning kiss...!"

"Mao already had a lot of kisses!"

...Err

"When you want to kiss...or want to do it then don't hold back"

Nagisa gives me a rich kiss.

...But

Megu and Mana are wearing waitress uniforms of the hotel restaurant.
It's an orange apron dress.

"Oh, this? It's hard to stay in dress all the time so after consulting Reika-oneesan, we borrowed the hotel uniform"

Megu explained.

"Look, after this we're going to slip out of the police on-the-spot investigation, so it would be conspicuous to be wearing a dress."

True, it would be unnoticeable if we look employees of the hotel, but...
But, for young girls to be wearing waitress uniform...

"What's wrong? Is it strange?"

Mana looks up at me worriedly.

"No, it's cute. Too cute I'm worried that it'll stand out..."

"Well, we'll somehow manage"

Nagisa said smiling.

"I'm glad...Yoshi-kun"

Megu cuddles with me.

"...I was worried"

"...Sorry"

"Mana too!"

Mana hugs me from the back
I also hug the two
...Nununu
...This feeling

"Mana, you're not wearing underwear?"
"Yup!"

Mana smiles bashfully.
This girl...she's waiting for me to do her...
She's grown up as she's not asking me directly...

"Yoshi-kun, you smell good...did you take a bath?"
"Yeah, along with Nagisa and Mao-chan"
"I didn't do anything that's educationally bad so don't worry"

Nagisa answers smiling.

"That's because he's going to bang Mao-chan when she's at age already...!"

...Err

"Anyway...I want to see everyone's face soon"
"Everyone's in the back room"
"It's amazing!...It's a suite room!"

Megu and Mana sandwich me in between.

"...Look, it's an old Japanese Novel. There's a story that you have to steal the potty where they shit and look at it, right? When you look inside, the woman notices it...it contains fake shit made from fragrant tree...and the man dies in agony"

I can hear Kyouko-san's loud voice.
Or rather, what are you talking about so early in the morning.

"There's no way that novel exists!"

...This voice is...
...Yukino?!

"There's one. Ryunosuke Akutagawa's[Amorous], right?"

Now this voice is...miss Cordelia?

Eh...why is she here?

"Oh, good morning? You look better. Your eyes are back...good!"

Kyouko-san said as she look at my face.

"G-Good morning"

"Now then...since the man has come in, I'm going back"

Miss Cordelia stands up from her seat.

Oh, the female Viola and Rosalind are here too.

"You don't have to be so cautious. You're Kyouko's[family]too aren't you?...
Then I'll let you live even if you're a man"

Miss Cordelia said smiling wryly

"You showed me some guts...let's get along from now on"

...What?

"She's my partner so I think she'll come to play once in a while"

K-Kyuouko-san...

Miss Cordelia's coming once in a while?...

"You too...it's our first time talking directly Katagai Nagisa-san"

"Yes...nice to meet you, miss Cordelia"

I see, Nagisa was in the basement last night so she haven't met miss Cordelia.
But, she has investigated about Nagisa on investigation stage.

"You're, Mao-chan...?"

Miss Cordelia tries to talk to Mao-chan, but...

Mao-chan somehow knows this woman's danger so she hides behind Nagisa.

"My my, what a shy child...so cute"

"Margo was the one who named Mao"

Kyouko-san tells miss Cordelia.

"Oh, Margo Starkweather thinks like that?"

...Thinks?

"[Mao Zedong book]is the only reading I can think of that"

"Cordelia...that Mao is different"

Kyouko-san looks troubled.

"Go already. If you stay for longer, Yazawa Pops would be troubled"

"I know. I'll contact you later."

"Yeah. I'll wait...it's impossible for tonight though. One of my[little sisters]is depressed."

"True...but, I want to see you before I go back"

"I'll be sure to make time...I won't let it pass"

"I'm looking forward to it"

Miss Cordelia heads to the exit.

"Bye, everyone. Megu-chan and Mana-chan too, bye"

"Bye, Cordelia-san"

"Good bye"

Mana and Megu replies.

These two seems to have talked with miss Cordelia while I was away.

"Stay healthy. Yukino-san"

"...I don't want to see you again"

Yukino's turns her face away

"Well then, everyone...have a nice day"

Miss Cordelia leaves with her subordinates.

"...Haa"

Mana leaks a sigh

"Well done"

Kyouko-san said laughing

"You were being careful so she doesn't feel unpleasant. Megu-chan and Mana-chan"

"Y-Yeah...it was scary"

"It's okay. She knows courtesy. I think that she also knows how Mana-chan felt"

Kyouko-san said

"Especially...the girl who's been having bad temper all this time"

Kyouko-san looks at Yukino

"...What?"

Or rather...why are you still here?

No, thinking about it...

True, there's no other place than here.

But still, she's sitting with such an arrogant attitude...

"Don't misunderstand...I don't want to be in this place. Really"

Saying that far...Yukino looks for words to say.,

"...But, how should I say it...I just thought that I should be here when you wake up. That's why I'm here. That's all...!"

...I don't get what that means.

That's why I ignore it.

"...Where's Katsuko-nee?"

"In the kitchen. She's preparing breakfast"

Megu answers

Err...

Misuzu, Ruriko, Yoshiko-san, and Michi came back earlier in preparation for Ruriko's father's funeral.

Seki-san should be with them too.

Reika...she must be doing work for Kouzuki security service.

"I have to call Edie. She was hiding in that room until Cordelia goes away"

Kyouko-san stands up and tries to search for sister Edie.

"Minaho-neesan and Margo-san?"

"...With Nei-san"

I see...

Earlier, Kyouko-san...

She said that one of her[little sister]is still depressed...

"It's on that room. You should go and take a look...!"

Kyouko-san tells me.

Chapter 340. We shall Overcome

"Margo's worried about you too"

Kyouko-san tells me.

Right, I fainted...

"Got it, I'm going then"

I try to head to the room where Nei-san is.

...Then

"Wait a moment"

The door opens and Minaho-neesan appeared.

"Ah...good morning, Minaho-neesan"

"Good morning...show me your face"

Minaho-neesan stares at my face

"...What?"

"...Looks like there's no problem"

...Proooblem

"You seem stable. Should I say as expected of Nagisa-chan?...Mao-chan too of course"

Kyouko-san smiles

"Little girls cures all sorts of diseases after all"

Err...

I won't deny it.

If Mao-chan tells me[Do your best]after running a full marathon, I feel like I can go for another 42.195km more.

"You...do you not know how much danger you were in?"

Minaho-neesan speaks to me holding both of my shoulders.

"...Danger?"

"That's what Margo was afraid of!"

What is she afraid of?

It's not that I'm...

"Margo has always been worried about the danger that you would become a man who's not hesitating to hurt and kill people"

"...Me?"

"Humans get numb on a sensation when they get used to it. That includes people's death"

"...Okay"

"Not hesitating to use violence in order to protect the family...it might be unavoidable but it will be strange if you get too used to the violence. Using violence on people for just a trivial thing...feeling easy to kill people..."

"There's a lot of them in my line of work. Guys who lose their brakes. Those guys can't be worked with. They dispose people with some reason. Just being with them is dangerous"

Kyouko-san said.

"It was especially dangerous for you...since the situation is too special"

...The situation is too special?

"If you didn't shoot Cesario Viola in that timing...nearly half of the people on that floor would be dead. Therefore, you were right to kill him. That's situation 1"

...Yeah

"In the first place, Cesario Viola is Nei's enemy, he's a real scum that nobody would complain whoever kills him. Therefore, it shouldn't matter that you killed him. That's situation 2"

...Right.

"And, that place was an insane and chaotic space. Just before that, Kouzuki gramps requested for a murder and Cordelia killed a man. In spite of that, Gramps and Cordelia don't seem to be judged by the court of Japan. The outlaws of the underground society and the owner of an extreme power are together...it was a place where crimes are overlooked. Thus, in order to save

people, you killed Viola...you shall not be judged. That's situation 3"

Being told once again...that's true.

"A normal human would justify their actions with the reasons I gave. Telling oneself that it's not wrong to kill Viola. But...the head only works towards justification, the heart doesn't"

Kyouko-san said.

"A murderer is a murderer. Taking away a person's life...causes a physiological rejection in regards to the blood squirting out. That's for normal humans..."

Normal humans.

True, when I shot a bullet to Viola...when I saw the red blood...

...I felt horrified.

...Scared.

"Let me tell you again...that one was a truly special situation. You taking a mental shock in regards to killing a person is natural as a human being but...it's possible that the situation would cancel the shock"

...Possibility.

"For example, someone says...[This can't be helped so you didn't do anything wrong]defending your murder. [It's Viola so it's fine to kill him], or[Since this hotel is extraterritorial, there's no problem]...while being talked as such, you'll also think[that might be] You feel your heart is saved. But, as a result...you forget self-justification, guilt...the face that you killed a person will become light inside you"

...Yeah

"The memory of killing a person to protect the[family]will be memorized in your head...the disgust and shock your heart felt that time would be forgotten. The, what do you think will happen?..."

Kyouko-san keeps talking as she observe my reaction.

"Next time you get in trouble...you'll become a person who uses more violence than necessary. You try to solve problems with violence, and your brakes won't work anymore..."

"You'll lose the fear of hurting people"

There's a possibility of becoming a violent person...

"You were lucky back then...Yukino-san was there. She's a girl who screams around her emotions when her head's nervous, not even reading the atmosphere..."

Minaho-neesan looks at Yukino.

"What's with that. It's as if you're making a fool of me!"

Yukino's angry.

"She's got no awareness so she's the real deal...!"

Kyouko-san said looking amazed.

"If you're a person with a bit of kindness to others...then you can't say those horrible things on the spot. The situation back then was hopelessly dangerous... it was an unusual world. Yukino-san who brings the common sense of the everyday world and screams out her emotions is the clear madman. She's a lass whose ego is beyond saving...but it was fortunate that she threw her daily world's common sense to you..."

Yukino's puffing.

"Somehow, it feels like I'm being told that I'm messed up though..."

Kyouko-san and Minaho-neesan ignores Yukino.

"As a result...you were brought back to the everyday world. [I must not kill people, and it's horrible to hurt people]was the priority inside your head"

"Therefore, you didn't overstep the line"

...line?

"Illegal...the outlaw world shouldn't be taken for granted. Just like me"

Kyouko-san laughs sadly

"But, I...am a member of[Kuromori], a criminal organization. I already belong to this side"

"You belong to a criminal organization but...staying on which side of the line is another thing. You're still on the side of ordinary people. You still have the

common sense in you"

"...Common sense? What's common sense? Is that important?"

Yukino asks.

"Asking that question means that you're really a foolish girl who grew up spoiled. Well fine. Let me tell you"

Kyouko-san said while smiling wryly

"Humans are a group creature. Creatures that can't survive without making a[group]called[society] And yet, it's a creature where each one has a will"

I've heard about this before.

"[Society]as a[group]...always look for optimal conditions and changing. At the same time, the[individual]always aim for the optimal situation. This is usually called[the pursuit of happiness] However, there are many cases where the optimization as an individual and as society confront each other. I think it's easy to understand when you compare it to companies...for the company[group], its easier to reduce the personnel expenses and yet...the[individual]which is the employee wants to raise the salary even a bit...or something like that"

...I see.

"The group and individual aren't always conflicting but...there's always parts where the optimization is incompatible. However, in case of humans, the individuals can't continue to survive unless they organize as a group and the society isn't allowed to crush an individual as long as the individual is in the society. That's why a compromise is needed"

...Yeah

"Therefore, in order for the society and individual to coexist...the group has to endure. This is a fine rule that the individual must endure. This is[common sense] In each group...it's decided within the relationship of the group and individual. Therefore,[common sense]isn't always constant. It changes according to the group"

"But, things like you shouldn't kill, you shouldn't steal...those common sense is universal isn't it?"

Yukino refutes.

"Well of course. That's because the[common sense]comes from the fundamental[living instinct]of humans. If you can't keep that strange common sense, it's impossible for the group to be organized you know?"

True...if a murderer or a thief lives unregulated, you can't condition the society.

"Now then, any kind of animal group will always produce a stray. You know the talk about some percent of worker ants don't work at all? It's prepared to respond to sudden changes in the social environment. It's the[fluctuation] In Saruyama, the[stray]is always chased out every year. The alpha male of the boss monopolizes the females and drives out the young males out of the herd. Both of those grow stronger outside the herd, then beat the old boss and take over the herd. The[stray]is an absolute necessity in the group"

...[Stray]

"In human society...us[outsiders]play that role. Because we're deviated from the social common sense, we can directly cut off the affected part of the society directly..."

"A crime is a crime! You're just self-justifying your crimes!"

Yukino snarls at Kyouko-san...

"Well, if you look at it with eyes of common sense..."

Kyouko-san laughs.

"What I'm trying to say is...either way, the common sense of the world is bigger, and it has a base. The world of outsiders is a world where common sense is not necessary...thus only[outsiders]can survive. Ah, the[outsiders]in this case isn't just outlaws and criminal organization. Even powerful people like Kouzuki house are[outsiders]because they deviate from the world of common sense.

Minaho-neesan looks at me with kind eyes...

"You can just stay in the world of common sense. No...please stay there. And if we step off the right track, or lose what's important, tell us"

...Minaho-neesan.

"We've already crossed the line after all"

Then...she looks at Megu and Mana.

"You two, stay with him. By looking at you young ones...we won't be drowning in the world of insane..."

...But

"...Minaho-neesan, I've already..."

I've killed Cesario Viola.

"I can no longer turn back"

Minaho-neesan...

"...Did you kill Cesario Viola because of hate?"

...That's

"You didn't, did you? You tried to save everyone...and as a result you killed him"

"...Yeah"

"I won't say it's an accident...I know it's hard for you. But, it's not that you wanted to do it, do you?"

"...Yeah"

Minaho-neesan hugs me.

"...I will carry that burden with you for the rest of my life"

"...Minaho-neesan"

The emotions overflow from the inside...

"...I'm here with you"

Nagisa hugs me from behind.

"Me too...Yoshi-kun"

"...Onii-chan"

Megu and Mana cuddles with me.

"Yoshida-kun! Get well!"

Mao-chan too...

"...I"

"You can cry if it's painful. Cry a lot..."

Minaho-neesan tells me.

"We'll drink all of your tears..."

At that moment...

My tears overflow.

The emotions I've piled up explodes inside me.

"Uuuuu...uuuuu...uuuu!"

I can't speak but groan.

My body trembles.

"Geez...you still have this much accumulated!"

Nagisa scoops my tears with her tongue.

"Me too...!"

Megu and Mana licks my face.

I...

I lost my voice.

Just...tears falling down.

"Don't worry. We'll never leave you...never"

Minaho-neesan said...and licks my tears.

"Mao too, I want to lick!"

"Okay, sure"

Nagisa carries Mao-chan

"Ufufufu!"

Mao-chan's small tongue licks my tears.

"It's salty! Yoshida-kun!"



"Feel refreshed?"

Kyouko-san asks me laughing

"...Yes"

I'm finally able to speak.

"You seem to have《overcome》it"

"Overcame?"

"In Japanese...it's getting over it?"

Kyouko-san smiles.

"As long as you live...you'll experience a lot of things. Even painful, sad, or traumatic experiences too. But, confront it, accept it, understand it, make it your experience...and unless you overcome it properly, the experience will remain as an obstacle in your heart. If you don't go through the process of experiencing your experiences, you can't digest any memories..."

I wonder if I overcame Viola.

"Yeah...that's right. In this boy's case...it's better for you to digest the downside in your heart completely. Before meeting Nei..."

Kyouko-san looks at Minaho-neesan.

"I'm a little rough you see...I can't win against Minaho's tenderness"

"Kyouko-san is delicate enough"

Minaho-neesan answers.

"It's just that Kyouko-san is always thinking from the[outsider]perspective..."
"I'm trapped in that thought you see. I thought that having him meet Nei while having a bomb in his heart is good for both of them, just like shock therapy. That's a battlefield mentality. True..."

"For now, it's better to take time and choose a reliable method"

"Yeah...Minaho's calmness is right"

Kyouko-san's convinced.

"Yoshi-kun...no matter what happens, I like Yoshi-kun. That feeling won't change..."

"Mana too"

Megu and Mana clings to me.

"But, I...Cesaio Viola..."

I'm a murderer...

"I...pulled the trigger with Yoshi-kun Therefore, Yoshi-kun's pain is mine as well"

...Megu

"Yeah, Mana...will take Onii-chan's pain together

...Mana

"I was told by Minaho-san...show a usual face until Yoshi-kun lets out his emotions properly..."

"Therefore, Megu-oneechan has been holding back until now"

...Does that mean?

"If these girls said at first[you did nothing wrong]your heart would be confused, won't it? Therefore I didn't let them touch about Viola first"

...Yeah

If the two defended me killing Viola as soon as we see each other...

I think I would've closed my heart.

[Wrong. That's not it. It's my fault...!]like that.

"By the way, why aren't you clinging to him?"

Kyouko-san asks Yukino.

Yukino goes aloof...

"Haa?! Why me?!"

"Don't you also《LOVE》this guy?"

"There's no way that's true!"

Yukino snapped.

"In truth...I hate it that Yukino's here"

Megu said.

"Me too, desu"

Mana too.

"But, I thought that Yoshi-kun would be glad if Yukino is here when he enters the room...so I held back"

"Me too, desu"

"What are you saying! I came here by my own will!"

Yukino shouts.

"As expected, let's throw her out the window"

As usual, Mana's cruel with her sister

"Well, don't say that...we're having breakfast soon you know?"

"Tell Katsuko-san that Yukino-san doesn't need her share"

Hey hey, Mana

"Instead of that...both of you go and help Katsuko-nee"

"Yeah...you're right, Yoshi-kun. I was worried about Yoshi-kun so we came to this room"

"True. Katsuko-san said[Go on, I'll be fine]"

...Katsuko-nee.

"Katsuko believes that you'll be fine if left to Nagisa. She'll heal you"

Minaho-neesan said.

"Misuzu-san is also so mature"

Mana said

"...Misuzu?"

"Yup. [If it's Danna-sama, he'll definitely recover. Misuzu knows it]...she said"

"She's worried about Ruriko-san right now...so she said that she wants to be by their side"

...Misuzu

"Michi-chan too...[I have to guard Misuzu-sama, and I'll just accept Master's scolding later]she said"

"She said[I have a clear Idea what master needs from me right now]..."

True...if Michi guards Misuzu, I can feel relieved.

Did Michi move ahead knowing my feelings?

"Both of them are amazing. Yet, we're just moving around...waiting for Yoshikun to become well"

"Me too, desu..."

Megu and Mana's face turn gloomy.

"It's fine. It's fine for people who are not in hurry to be absent minded. It's fine to take it easy. Japanese are always too ahead on[doing something]"

Kyouko-san said.

"Anyway, go help out Katsuko-nee. Okay?...I'm going to Nei-san"

"Okay"

"Sure, Onii-chan"

Megu and Mana head to the kitchen.

"Then...how's Nei-san doing?"

I asked, Minaho-neesan...

"Well you see..."

Minaho-neesan hesitates to speak...

Did something serious happen?

Kyouko-san answers instead.

"To make it short...she returned to Yasuko."

...Yasuko?

Not Natou Nei...

But Najima Yasuko...???

Chapter 341. Brother

"The fear of Cesario Viola and the trauma from the days when she was confined has been confined inside Nei's heart the whole time. With Viola dead, the balance inside her mind is lost"

Kyouko-san tells me.

"You do know that Natou Nei is a personality Najima Yasuko made so that her own heart won't break, don't you?"

"Yes, I know that"

The real Nei-san...Yasuko is a girl who's too meek and delicate. When we stayed under the principal's room, Nei-san has talked about her past.

"When we came back to Japan...a lot of things happened"

Minaho-neesan said sadly

"Nei entered out school but...at that time, her name was already Natou Nei. The name Najima Yasuko can't be used..."

"Why?"

I asked.

"Najima Yasuko in the census is still missing in the US. We came back to Japan with counterfeit passport made in Los Angeles. We used the Chinese Canadian name Mei Lin. If we applied for Najima Yasuko's passport reissue, Viola would find her whereabouts...that's the reason why"

"But...the school?"

"I all forged the papers in our school. Therefore, she has a student register but... Natou Nei isn't supposed to exist in Japan. It's just a Canadian named Mei Lin staying in Japan..."

"Could it be the reason why Nei-san had to repeat a year..."

"That's one of the reason she can't graduate. She has a student register but... she's normally a child who can't be enrolled. Even studying abroad as a Canadian...Nei's never lived in Canada in the past." I can't leave documents with pictures everywhere. Do you understand it?"

Nei-san's photo was uploaded to the criminal's network and Viola identified her and went to Japan immediately...

"Therefore, the Canadian Mei Lin is in Japan on a short term visa. She has to go out of the country once every 90 days to get visa"

"Well, Canadian embassy is anywhere in the country but...my face is effective with American embassy staff so I often went to America. If we're not careful, it'll be exposed that it's a fake passport. We head over there on a private jet... we try not to face other people except for customs staff. We've always stayed on a place that's a closed villa for the rich. Then we never come out of there. Well, she had practiced driving a car with Margo though. Oh...she's got an international driver's license in a Canadian rural town"

Kyouko-san explained.

Despite of Viola's presence...they've come to America so many times because of that reason?

"That's why Nei-san often takes a day off from school"

"That's not the only reason"

Minaho-neesan said.

"I put Nei in our school...wanting to let her live as a normal high school student, regain her brightness, but... Nei has also entered the chorus club at the start of the class, but...

"What happened?"

From what I know...the Kendo grounds was burned down and the arsonist was Nei-san.

"That girl was still having black hair back then...she's a beauty that would make any men look at her. She stood out too much within the campus... But, she's in reality a shy girl"

Yeah...She would be in a mess if men were coming to attack her.

"On top of that, there were many staff members who have the same tone as Shirasaka Sousuke...so she's been harassed in various ways"

Shirasaka Sousuke's looking for girls in our school as prostitute candidates. Katsuko-nee and Nagisa...and Iwakura-senpai were turned to prostitutes.

"He has a grudge to us for stealing Nei in Los Angeles. Thus, his protégé male teacher attacked Nei"

That's the incident when Nei-san was in first year.

"Well, Margo was a student at that time so she was able to protect Nei somehow. but. The teacher who attacked Nei is paralyzed. The kendo grounds he used as a stronghold was burned down as a result"

"Then, anyway...we kept Nei and Margo away from the general students... It would be troublesome if Shirasaka Sousuke's catastrophe befall into Nei's friends or something. That man would do that without any problems"

If Shirasaka Sousuke attacks Nei-san's friends...there's no response. If he takes a hostage and threaten Nei-san and Minaho-neesan...

"Thus, the girl herself avoided making friends inside the school. Not going to the chorus club...she still has her membership however. An official departure hasn't been issued"

...Nei-san

Without Margo-san who's her only friend in the school...

She's been lonely all this time.

Though she's registered as a student...it's a counterfeit so she can't graduate. She can't make friends.

She's singing alone on the rooftop of the school building.

"But...even if Nei rejects them, other students will still come for her you see? Especially the boys. Then...she joined up with Margo, pretending to be a delinquent who's too dangerous for ordinary students to approach. So, Nei dyed her hair blonde and wore blue contact lenses"

"A girl who's too beautiful like Nei coloring her hair blonde and her eyes blue would make her stand out more you see...she creates an atmosphere where normal children can't come close to her"

Kyouko-san says so but...in reality, Nei-san's isolation just deepened.

"Nei made a personality like that to adapt to the image of a delinquent girl, but...in order to comfort her loneliness, Nei thought that her true character won't be able to endure it"

Everyone's convinced of the current Nei-san.
The delinquent blonde haired girl, Natou Nei's personality...was born from that
...But

"That's wrong, Kyouko-san"

I said.

"Nei-san...longs for a woman with a strong personality like Kyouko-san. That's why she imitates Kyouko-san's personality...which results to the current Nei-san"

Thinking that if it's a woman like Kyouko-san...she'll be fine no matter what situation she's in

"Nei, me?...No way"

Kyouko-san laughs.

"No, I think that he's correct. Nei thinks she wants to be like Kyouko-san"

Nagisa who's been listening to the talk...answered.

"Because...I'm just a muscle head girl"

"No, I think that Kyouko-san's middle cuts are refreshing and are fascinating for me"

"Hey hey, nothing will come out even if you flatter me...In the first place, I'm a lesbian"

"I too like girls. But that's not the topic...I think Nei-san longs for Kyouko-san's way of thinking, of living with such confidence in oneself"

"Nei thinks that she's hopeless, that she can't do anything herself. Even about herself"

Minaho-neesan said sadly

"Yeah...in the end, she closed herself in her shell"

Kyouko-san also shows a troubled face.

Nagisa fell silent too.

Megu and Mana are playing with Mana-chan while listening to our talk in a way they don't disturb us

...I

"Uhm...I've got an idea. Could I have everyone's attention?"

In order to realize my idea...

I need Minaho-neesan and Kyouko-san's cooperation

"What? Say it"

I begin to talk quietly.



Nei-san is in one of the several bedrooms in this suite.

...Konkon

I knock the door

"...Who?"

This is Margo-san's voice.

She must be accompanying Nei-san all this time.

"...It's me"

The door opened

Margo-san looks down on me worriedly

"...You okay?"

"I'm fine"

"Well...come in"

I enter the room.

Nei-san was in the bed.

Nei-san looks at me.

"Uhm...are you okay?"

It's not Nei-san.

This is Yasuko

"Because of me...I'm sorry"

Tears spill off.

"No, it's not Nei-san's fault. It was mine...I was careless"

Margo-san blames herself.

"I imagined what would it be like if you had a gun. And yet...in that situation, I have overlooked Seki-san handing over the gun to you"

Speaking of which...I was told not to hold any guns.
If I had a gun, I wouldn't hesitate to shoot...Margo-san has noticed that before.

"Err...Uhm"

I laughed gently

"Is there a problem?"

Margo-san...

"Because...I've made you carry the cross of killing people"

I...

"Yes. I shouldered it...I'm finally same as everyone"

The two of them look at me in surprise.

"...Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, those who are prostitutes in the past.
MARGO-san who killed the person who raped her. Nei-san who can't help out her brother...I'm finally able to stand on the same place as all of you...!"

I've already gotten over it.

"And...the experience I had can no longer be changed. The only way is forward. With my face raised...facing forward..."

Reach towards Nei-san.

"Margo-san...please teach me martial arts starting today. It's not to become stronger. If ever the opportunity arises that I have to use violence...if it's to protect the family, then I will do anything. My resolve won't change...I don't want to do excessive injury on people I use violence on so I want to be able to have brakes"

That's right...I

"The beat up stick Margo-san gave me...is a weapon that won't be able to kill even if I beat up the opponent, right? Margo-san purposely handed me a weapon that only has that amount of destructive force..."

The beat up stick...is a short stuffed golf club that's cut off.
If the grip is long then it's possible to crush the skull of the other party by applying centrifugal force, but...
If you swing something that short, the destructive power of that extent won't come out.

"Even if one hurts people...it doesn't lead to killing. You chose this weapon so I won't cause any fatal injury to the other party by mistake due to my recklessness. Margo-san has been worried about my mind issues for a long time. Thank you very much"

Right now...various things have really come to light.
Margo-san and Minaho-neesan...has been taking care of me in various ways...

"With that thought...I want it to be thoroughly charged in my body. No, even if I can't hurt the other party if possible...I think it's best to learn the skills to be able to stop Please teach me. Please... !"

Moving forward.
I can't stop.
I have a[family]I need to protect.
There's no choice to move forward...I must be active and not be greedy.

"Okay, I get it. I'll train myself too. Polishing skills where you can't kill thoroughly..."

"Yes, we may be a criminal organization but...we're not murderers"

If I could protect the[family]that's good enough.

"...Are you really sure?"

Yasuko speaks in a timid voice.

"What are you saying this late...Nei-san"

I smiled.
I'll drag out the Nei-san from inside Yasuko-san.

"We'll be together forever...I'll protect Nei-san"

Yasuko looks at me.

"By the way... what kind of place is America?"

I start the topic calmly

"It may be impossible right now, but...I'd like to go there on summer vacation with you, Nei-san"

"...Eh, Why?"

Nei-san's surprised.

"Ah...you're not coming? But, we can meet each other over there...and come back together"

"...What is this about?"

I smile at Nei-san.

"I asked Kyouko-san to smuggle us out of Japan. I don't know how to do it... maybe going out to the sea with a fishing boat and board a cargo ship at sea? Or jump from an island to another using an airplane...then ride a ship. Anyway, I'll let Kyouko-san choose the route"

"Why are you going to sneak out of the country? Couldn't you just take a passport and fly with an airplane normally?"

Margo-san looks like she doesn't understand it as well...

"Speaking of passports, Nei-san leaves the country with her usual Canadian passport, right? Thus, she can go to America anyway. Oh, come with us too Margo-san. Then, in there's someone in Miami Japan consulate who's close to Kyouko-san so they'll meet up. Kyouko-san and Minaho-neesan will come"

"...Miami?"

Nei-san doesn't figured it out yet...

"That's where we'll issue Najima Yasuko's passport. the girl who's been missing in US is coming home. There's no more cruel criminal coming for you, Nei-san. Let's burn the counterfeit passports in Miami. You'll come home as Najima Yasuko...!"

Nei-san's eyes comes back to life.

"If we come back from the America...we can use your original family register. Even in high school, it won't be fake documents anymore. You can graduate. Isn't that great!?"

...That's right.

Nei-san will follow the formal procedure...and come back home.

Then, reclaim her lost life...

"Un, I agree with that. That's better, Nei"

Margo-san's also pleased with my talk

"But...I understand about Nei however why do you have to sneak out of the country?"

I was waiting for that question...

"My passport will also be made at the Japan consulate in Miami..."

...I

"Nei-san...I'll definitely fulfil the promise I made..."

"...Promise?"

"That's right. Didn't I promise to become Nei-san's real brother?!"

...I'll move forward.

...Far more forward.

By myself, actively...

"In Japan consulate in Miami...I'll become Najima Keito. The siblings who went missing in US...will be coming home together!"

I'll take over Kei-san's register...

That's the path I've chosen.

"...You'll be Kei-chan?"

Nei-san's surprised.

"Of course, it doesn't mean that the lost Kei-san has to be erased. It's fine for Kei-san to stay alive in Nei-san's heart"

That's right, I'm not Kei-san's substitute.

I just want to be Nei-san's little brother.

"When we return home, Minaho-neesan will process adoption papers immediately. Therefore, I'll be Kuromori Keito. Minaho-neesan said that she'll build a grave with the name Najima Keito...for the late Kei-san"

Nei-san stares at me.

"Therefore...I'll just take over the family register and Kei-san's name. No, I'm really sorry that someone like me is going to take over the lost Kei-san, but... But, I've made my decision. I'll never leave Nei-san's side. This is the only way in order to be with Nei-san for the rest of our lives...!"

Once I've become the younger brother in the register...I can never leave her. Even if I die, I can't leave.

"...You're serious?"

Margo-san says as she look into my eyes.

"But...are you sure? Are you fine with that life?"

Yasuko asks me

"The live I had until now is nothing..."

"But, you...you're going to throw away your past for me..."

I...

"I don't care about my past. The future where I can live with Nei-san is much more important...!"

"...Yo-chan"

The Nei-san comes back from inside Yasuko-san...

No, that's not it.

I've only been with Nei-san, not Yasuko-san so...

If I'm going to be with Nei-san in the future...

Yasuko-san has to awaken Nei-san's element in herself.

By doing so...

Yasuko-san and Nei-san will be fusing gradually.

Slowly taking their time...

That is the real reason why I have to be Nei-san's brother.

Yasuko-san is too fragile.

Nei-san thinks that her personality is an act.

By fusing the two somehow...

A new Nei-san who can survive no matter what will be born...

"From now on, I'm Keito. Ah, but...[Kei-chan]is the name of the lost Kei-san.
Please think of a new way to name me"

"...That's"

"Ah, too troublesome. Kei will do. Call me...!"

I proposed.

"I'm Nei-san's brother. I'm the brother so Nei-san can depend on me.
Anything will do. I'll allow it all, forgive it all..."

Err...

What should I say after this?...

"Anyway...I love Neechan!"

Tears spill out of Nei-san's eyes...
Like a grain of pearl...

"Love...I also love you..."

Margo-san pushes my back.
I go to Nei-san's front.
Then...we hugged each other.

"I've loved you since the first time we've met. Neechan"
"...Un. Thank you. Thank you...Kei
"I won't let go anymore"
"Me too...I won't let go"

We can't become lovers.
What Nei-san needs is[family]...a brother.
Therefore, I'll love my sister as the brother...

"Sorry, I...think I won't be able to leave Kei anymore..."
"That's fine"

That's what I wish for...

"We'll be together forever...I'll bear Kei's child, raise it with Kei...and grow old together Are you still okay with that?"
"Isn't that obvious, it's okay..."
"I feel sorry for Kei's wife"

I laugh and look at Nei-san...

"There's no one among my[women]who cares about that. Everyone will accept it happily."

"...Is it okay?"

"I'm with you so have some confidence. You're everyone's[oneesan]...Neechan"

Nei-san leans her body on me...

"Can I do it?"

"You can...you're my dear sister"

"Yeah. I'll entrust my mind and body to Kei. If I'm with Kei...I'm not scared of anything"

Nei-san hugs me tightly...

"Hey...Kei. Should we have sex...?"

Chapter 342. Breakfast table

"Have sex with Oneechan"

Nei-san...

She was kidnapped by Cesario Viola along with her twin brother, Kei-san...
Viola who's a homo who likes good looking boys raped Kei-san...thus they were allowed to live.

Nei-san is also an amazing beauty and yet...Viola completely ignores her value as a human...

Viola used her as a tool to torture Kei-san.

That has turned to a bottomless trauma in Nei-san's heart.

Nei-san tried to give her virginity to Kei-san...

The confined Nei-san had nothing else to offer him.

But, Kei-san doesn't want to embrace Nei-san's body...

Viola's little sister, Rosalind died along with him.

Nei-san's helplessness...remained as is.

"I feel like my time won't move if I don't have sex with Kei"

Nei-san said smiling wryly

"Does Kei not want to do it with me?"

I...

"Of course...I don't hate it but"

"...But?"

Nei-san looks at me with serious eyes.

"...I don't want to do it here"

I answered.

After a moment.

Nei-san starts to laugh out.

"What's that...Kei? You sound like a woman!"

Nei-san laughs...

Then...

"But, you're right...there's no need to hurry. Shall we go back to the mansion and take it slow?"

"...Uhm, Neechan"

"What's up?"

"There's a place I want to take Neechan to"

"Eh, where?"

"...Uhm"

"...Does Kei want to have my first time there?"

"...Yeah"

Nei-san smiles.

"Okay. I'm fine anywhere...if that's where Kei wants"

"...Thanks"

"Then...where's that place?"

I answered in a small voice.

"...My house"

"...What?"

"It'll be the last time I will return to Yoshida house. I'm never going back to that house...so I want to show Neechan my house"

The house where I grew up...

The shabby sofa which was my bed...

"...Kei"

Nei-san looks at me...

"I...I'll give up my past up until now. From now on...I'm going to live by thinking only my future with Neechan"

Therefore, I want only Nei-san to see.

My past...the world I'm throwing away

"Got it...Kei"

Nei-san's hand pats my face.

"...Oneechan will go with you"

Margo-san who's been observing us until now opened her mouth.

"Now that's decided...Nei, go wash your face. You might also take a light shower. Katsuko-san's preparing breakfast and everyone's waiting for you"

Margo-san smiles.

"The family's waiting for Nei to show up with a cheerful face...!"

"That's right, Neechan! Hurry up...here!"

I pull out Nei-san from the bed.

"I get it, I get it already...!"

Nei-san gets up laughing.

"The bath and shower room is that door."

Margo-san points out smiling.

This suite has a bathroom for every bedroom.

"Yeah...I'll be back in five minutes!"

Nei-san disappears behind the door...

"...Fuu"

Margo-san leaks out a huge sigh...

"Thanks to you...it somehow went well..."

She looked at me then said.

"I think that it'll be hard but...I'll leave Nei to you"

"Yes, I'll stay with her forever"

I've made my resolve.

"I think that it's a good idea to make Nei call you[Kei]"

Margo-san said.

"Nei puts[chan]on nicknames on people she get acquainted with"

"...Yeah"

"That looks like she's trying to make friends but actually, that's different"

...It's not to show intimacy?

"By approaching the other party yourself and using[chan]as the guise of getting along...in fact, it's a sign for herself to not step further from that. Nei refuses to have someone step into her heart..."

...Does that mean?

"Yes, she calls me[Maru-chan] Even against me, Nei's making a firewall in her heart"

...Is that so?

"Minaho as well, Nei's calling her[Sensei]doesn't she? Katsuko-san's called[Katsun], I think she's more close to them than me"

"...Why?"

"Katsuko-san's been a prostitute...always oppressed by Shirasaka Sousuke. For Nei who's been confined by Viola all the time, she thinks of her as a closer existence. Kyouko-san and I who have the power to protect oneself...is on a different type than herself, that's what she thinks"

Margo-san who's been watching over Nei-san all this time...makes a lonely analysis.

"Now that you have succeeded to make Nei adress you without any suffix...I think that you're the first person to become the closest to Nei. You're a relative, or rather... you're directly linked to her heart."

"I didn't mean to say it like that though..."

Margo-san laughs.

"I know. I understand...you've always been open minded to Nei"

"I just want Nei-san to become happy. No...I want to make her happy. No...I'll make her happy. I!"

I'll use my whole life.

"...Yeah. I'm sure you can do it. No...I'm sure you'll be happy"

...Margo-san?

"...Haa. I wonder if I'm already relieved from my post now. Nei have always wanted a[brother]...if it's you, you'd never do anything to make Nei sad..."

Margo-san said sadly.

Margo-san is going to part with Nei-san?

"No...Margo-san is still needed by Nei-san"

Those words come out of my mouth.

"...What?"

Margo-san's surprised.

"If Nei-san's life can't settle down without a brother like me then...she'll surely consult to an elder sister like Margo-san"

"...An elder sister like me?"

...That's right

"Yes. Margo-san is our[Oneesan]after all"

I said clearly

"I'm younger than Nei-san...and I'm a man. Of course, I'm a younger man so I can be helpful however...without an older woman, I think there's a lot of things I can't understand..."

Everyone must have their share.

"Therefore, I'm counting on you...Margo-oneesan"

Margo-san looks at me with a dumbfounded face.
...Then, she laughed out loud.

"...You're getting stronger aren't you?"

Margo-san smiles.

"I have no other ways but to go forward after all"

I don't have the room to stop and look back...
There's a lot of things that has to be done for the family.

"You're right. Then, I'll bring Nei with me...you can tell everyone that Nei's better. I think they're all worried..."

"Okay. I'll be going then...!"



Returning to the room where everyone else is...

Huh? Nobody's here.

"Onii-chan, this way...!"

Mana shows up on the door next room.

It seems that they're in the living room.

I head to the next room...

Looking at the table...there's bacon, eggs, salads prepared on the table.

Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Megu, Mana, Nagisa, Mao-chan, Kyouko-san, even sister Edie...are waiting for us to come before eating.

Minaho-neesan is talking with Kyouko-san.

Katsuko-nee's making tea, Megu brings the tea to me.

Mana and sister Edie join up with Nagisa to play with Mao-chan.

Yukino's the only one watching the TV with a serious face.

When I enter...Yukino, Mao-chan and sister Edie looked at me.

"It's fine now...Nei-san's coming right after"

Everyone's relieved.

"Take a seat as well...if you're hungry then go eat first"

Katsuko-nee tells me.

"No...I'll wait for Nei-san"

I answered...

"Look, you're the only one who can't hold until everyone starts eating...!"

Kyouko-san calls out under the table.

...then

"...Sure"

Under the table...Kudou-papa's sitting cross legged...

Kudou-papa's eating milk with plenty of cereals with a big spoon.

"I've heard that I could eat breakfast if I came here after all..."

...Err

"...But, that's just a lie. Kouzuki-pops asked me to escort you people. Thus, I came here and there was food..."

"His stomach is already growling so I let him ate first"

Katsuko-nee laughed, then said.

"Sorry. I haven't eaten at all since last night...!"

Kudou-papa throws in the cereals to his mouth like coal to a steam locomotive.

"All the ingredients were taken from the kitchen of this hotel...it's all good stuff. I wanted to make bread if I had time but...I can't afford to borrow their oven so bear with the cereal this morning"

Yeah...can't just use the kitchen equipment like one owns it.
Currently, the hotel is closed so the cooks are absent.

"By the way...you said about escorting us?"

Why is that needed?

Viola's threat is already gone...

Shirasaka house also withdrew their kill request.

"No, it's nothing big. The police are on the lower floors you know? I'm needed so you can get out without making any contact with them"

I see...they were doing on the spot investigation.

"There's a lot of media in here too"

Megu turned up the the volume of the television matching with Kudou-papa's words.

The morning show...

Yeah...it's this hotel.

The weather today is clear...the high-rise hotel built along the Odaiba sea is shown.

The telephoto lens from the outside shows the first floor lobby turned to a mess.

The headline written on the screen...

[Shirasaka Moritsugu's on wild rampage?! Hiring terrorists to murder his own relatives?!]

[Russian Mafia attacked a first class hotel?!]

...Oh

Jii-chan's orders last night are executed.

Viola's 120 combat troops invaded this hotel...

[Shirasaka Moritsugu requested to murder his relatives opposing him]is what's being reported...

Us and the owner of the hotel...Kouzuki house are all kept confidential...

[Shirasaka Moritsugu's career in mass medias is over. To think that a representative of the people's voice resorted to terrorist acts against his relatives...furthermore, it's Russian mafia! A foreign criminal organization! Far from outrageous...this is an absolutely unforgivable act!]

The commentator speaks appropriately.

[Shirasaka Moritsugu was suddenly hospitalized...made to resign from the position of the chairman of the newspaper company...and is announced to retire]

[No, that's natural. Rather than that, I think that Shirasaka house itself should be separated from the management of group companies. It's unhealthy to have that family itself be nesting in the press industry...it's truly deplorable!]

Manipulating the public opinion...Shirasaka house will be chased out of their own media companies soon...

Yukino's the only one watching that broadcast seriously.

"...What happened to the contractors Kudou-san summoned?"

I asked.

If I recall, chief Yazawa dropped the fire doors of the hotel to isolate everyone?

"All of them are home already...!"

Kudou-papa answers while eating.

"Is everyone all right?"

"Well of course. They're all professionals after all...!"

"That's not it...weren't they trapped in the middle of their job?"

On the final stage of crushing Viola's main force...

Chief Yazawa confined them without giving a reason why...

Miss Cordelia went home laughing earlier...

"Kudou-san...weren't you trapped in as well?"

Kudou-papa looks at my face.

"Oh I see...you know a lot of things behind the scenes that I don't?"

...Err

"Don't tell me those. I don't want to know...and If I do, it'll only fill up my mind..."

...What?

"Things that shouldn't be known should stay as that...that's the core of our work after all...!"

Kudou-papa gobbles the spoon.

"True...we were suddenly trapped, and when Yazawa Pops released us, he gave[operation end]as instruction. We don't know what was going on. There's no explanation so...there are some that are annoyed. But you see...we're employed people. If Kouzuki graps or Yazawa Pops say[end of operation]then it's the end. What's left is to take the reward...go home and sleep"

"...Is it the same for Banbarubie 3 and Dai Grepher?"

"They all happily went home. They earned additional money from the initial promise, and even given special bonuses

...I see.

"It's not that we're fighting Cesario Viola and his funny Russian thug friends because of hate. We're fighting because it's our job. So, as long as the employer gives us the promised reward...we're totally not interested in the details, the progress, or the result of this incident. There's no need to bother to look into what the employer is hiding. Everyone withdrew without having any big injury, isn't that merry for all?"

That's the contractual guard.

"Oh, only Dai Grepher was the one carried by an ambulance"

...What?

"THat guy was punished by Barbie for trying to touch Banba-chan's butt. For

some reason, Barbie's the only one who's able to go through his different dimension fighting strategy. He was blown away by Barbie's phoenix phantom fist, and soaring wings combo"

Thus...he got to a hospital?

"He's also in bad luck...or rather, he's an idiot"

Kudou-papa resumes eating once again.

Or rather...he's eating only cereal

"Once I take you out of the hotel, my work for today is done. I decided to take a day off. I've got to visit Haruka in the hospital..."

...What?

"I don't know the details but...she got injured after fighting Michi in the theater, right?"

Oh right.

Michi has taken down her sister, Haruka-san with Kudou style techniques.

"I still have to do something father-like at least. Besides, I have to talk to my son, Shinishi. Etsuko too..."

Michi's mother, Kudou-mama...is fired along with the Kouzuki security service's director Yamaoka.

"Shinichi is a permanent employee of Kouzuki security service...I think it'll be hard to stay in the company with her mother causing scandal but...I'll let him decide what he wants to do in the future"

"You already know about director Yamaoka?"

"The company is a bunch of people so that kind of talk is being passed on right away. What's more important is that they've done something that's absolutely unacceptable for Kouzuki security service employees"

"...What do you mean?"

"Kouzuki security security service is a company for guarding VIPs you know? The company knows that it's not just Kouzuki gramps who's here but also most of the executives of the Kouzuki group last night. A security personnel for emergencies got fired due to abandonment of work and order violations during an enemy attack. Won't they be evaluated as worthless scums?"

...I see.

"Shinichi has no position as he's a son of a [worthless] Even Haruka, she'll no longer be hired by Kouzuki security service. In the end...Etsuko didn't understand what influence her actions would bring to her family"

Kudou-papa says frustrated.

"I don't care about her affair with Yamaoka at all. If she wants to divorce with me then she could've just said it and I'll slap in the seal. But, above all that...she violated orders and abandoned the workplace?! Those guys are too idiot for their age. Seriously!!!"

Kudou-papa speaks angrily.

"No...I know. I was sloppy...this happened because I'm not a reliable man. I know that it's my fault. But...but you see...!"

Kudou-papa seems to be unable to lament.

"Do you know where those people are right now?"

"I only know that Yamaoka got out of the hotel...I don't know anything ahead of that and I don't want to know either. Instead of the [family] that got away, I must follow the family I have for now. I have to think of their future"

Then...he looked at me.

"I'll leave Michi in your care. I've already given my permission to you..."

...I

"Yes. Leave this to me No...to us"

"..."Us"?"

"Michi is a member of our family"

Before I noticed...everyone in the room is already listening to our talk. Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Megu, and Mana... They nod looking at me.

"We'll all protect Michi-san..."

On behalf of the [family], Minaho-neesan speaks to Kudou-papa

"That's how it is...you don't have to worry anymore!"

Kyouko-san smiles.

"That girl has good qualities...if she pairs up with that girl, they'll be good warriors"

For Kyouko-san, Michi and sister Edie is a set.

"No...I'd be troubled if she becomes a warrior like you. That's just my opinion"

Kudou-papa replies with a bit of scared tone.

Kyouko-san's overwhelming fighting power is also a threat to him it seems.

"Well of course. It's not good to become like me. But...I don't want her to end up with half-baked abilities like you I'll be educating her tightly...!"

Kyouko-san laughs happily

"It's fine. Margo-san is also with her...I won't let them do the unreasonable"

I followed in between.

...Then

Sister Edie who's playing with Mao-chan suddenly speaks to Kyouko-san

...What?

"You see...Edie-chan seems to have taken a liking to Mao-chan"

Eh...Mana?

"You can understand English?"

"Isn't that obvious? I learned it at school..."

No, I started learning English from first year middle school though...
I didn't get what Edie just said.

"Mana's school is different from the norm"

Megu tells Mana.

...Oh right.

Mana's school has a lower status than Misuzu's school, but...

It's still a pretty famous girls' middle school...

The English conversations...is practically on a different level

Meanwhile, sister Edie continues to talk.

"You see...Edie-chan knows that Mao-chan is Nagisa-san's daughter...then,

she seems to have heard from Michi-chan that she's a[imouto-bun]of Nagisa-san Then, for Edie-chan, Michi-chan is the same as a sister right? Therefore, by putting it all together...she asked if she's going to be Mao-chan's[Obaa-san bun]!"

...Hmmm

It's all about [** bun]

"Hey, Mana-chan. Could you translate what I'm going to say?"

Nagisa asks Mana.

"Sure, I can!"

Mana talks to sister Edie in English.

It seems that she's telling what Nagisa's telling her.

Nagisa...

"Edie-san, thank you for liking Mao. But you see...you don't have to mind the relationship hierarchy. If Edie-san wants it then she can be Mao's[oneechan]directly!"

Mana translates, then...sister Edie's face turned brighter.

"[Sure, I'll be Mao-chan's Oneechan]! She said..."

Mana said, Nagisa looks at Mao-chan...

"Mao, this lady will become Mao's[Oneechan]too"

Mao-chan...

"Yay...I've made a lot of[Oneechan]today too! Kishishi!"

She happily smiled...

Chapter 343. A good sign

"Good morning everyone"

Nei-san enters the room with Margo-san
Showing a refreshed face.

"You're late! Everyone's waiting for you!"

Mana tells Nei-san...

"Sorry, Mana...!"

Nei-san doesn't use[chan]on her[little sisters]anymore

"Nei-oneesan...have some tea"

Megu immediately brings in tea

"Thanks...Megu"

Everyone except Kudou-papa noticed Nei-san's change...
But, nobody talks about it.
It's fine having the[family]know it themselves.

"Anyway, let's eat?"

Minaho-neesan said, the breakfast begins...
The dining table is filled with laughter.
Nei-san, Margo-san, Kyouko-san, Mana...are talking with sister Edie in English.
There are times Kyouko-san tease sister Edie but...Margo-san follows it up skillfully.
Well...Edie also knows the difference in ability so she may get angry at Kyouko-san but she doesn't revolt.

"I'm still making some eggs so eat a lot"

Katsuko-nee tells me.

"Yoshi-kun, do you need a refill?"

Megu's being tactful.

She's completely into being the chairman of the family.

"Thanks. I want another drink"

"...Okay"

Megu happily brings the teapot and pour in the tea in the cup.

I look at Nei-san.

Nei-san hasn't told anyone that I'll be[Kuromori Keito]yet.

She's not calling me[Kei]either.

She seems to think that it's not the time to tell them.

Does she intend to say that only to the family when we return to the mansion?

Or does she not intend to say it until she has sex with me?

Well...anything's fine

We have plenty of time...

...Ding dong

The room bell rings.

...Someone's here?

"Ah, I'll go check it!"

Mana leaves the table to see who it is

Then, she came back right away

"...It's Reika-oneesan!"

Reika's still in her yellow jersey from last night.

She has the cane in her hand.

She enters the room behind Mana, showing her blushing from embarrassment face.

"Good morning, Reika-oneesan...!"

Nei-san's morning greeting is repeated by the younger ones.

"Good Morning! Reika-oneesan!"

"...G-Good morning"

Reika answers downcast.

"Please wait for a while. Reika-oneesan's bacon and eggs will be ready soon"

Katsuko-nee stands up.

"Reika-oneesan, take a seat. I'll prepare tea right away"

Megu invites Reika to an empty seat.

"No...uhm, I..."

"What's wrong, Reika-oneesan...why so nervous?"

Margo-san asks Reika

"That...I"

I...

"Take a seat first. We can't talk with you standing right there"

"O-Okay..."

Reika takes a seat.

"...What's up?"

Kyouko-san looks at Reika smiling.

"...Uhm"

"It's fine...you can tell us anything"

Reika keeps looking down...

"I'm ashamed of myself..."

...Ashamed?

"I have always been a frog in the well. I was overconfident of my own power..."

"You noticed it yourself? Isn't that great?"

Kyouko-san tells Reika.

"You're still young so if you find yourself wrong, then you can start over again"

"Yes...thank you very much"

Reika obediently thanked her.

"But, I...I don't know if it's okay for me to continue like this"

"What's this about?"

"Last night...I was introduced into the family. But, is it really okay for an odd inexperienced person like me to be everyone's ally? Ever since I saw my reflection of my face in the mirror this morning, I became really scared"

...Reika

"Hmm. I don't know about that though. I don't know how to deal with this so, You deal with this"

Kyouko-san looks at my face.

"Reika...do you want to take back your words about becoming our[family]?"

"No, that's not the case. It's just that...last night I was a fool who forgot myself... joining in your family means joining Misuzu-sama's family. To think that I'll be in such a big relationship with the head of Kouzuki family...Thinking about it again, I felt like it's something I shouldn't be allowed to..."

"Oh, you felt shivering this morning..."

Minaho-neesan said.

"We're not forcing you to anything. It's all for Reika to decide herself"

"I answered"

"Is it okay to be this selfish?"

Reika looks at me with upturned eyes.

Even if you tell me that...

I have no authority on deciding on Reika's life.

...But

"...No. Reika-oneesan. Once you promised to join our[family]you can't take it back anymore"

Nei-san said.

"Look...you too, you should get angry saying[Selfishness is unforgivable]"

She looks at me with strong eyes as she speak.

"We're[family]already...!"

...Nei-san.

"You see,...it's not good for Reika-oneesan to leave us now. Therefore, you

won't be let go, you won't be freed. Give it up and just eat with everyone!"

"...But"

Nei-san said...Reika's puzzled.

"If I recall...you're a guard?"

Kyouko-san asks.

"Yes. I'm supposed to be one of the top elites under chief Yazawa. More or less"

Meeting Kyouko-san who's got a superhuman ability...Reika seems to have lost her confidence.

"Your weapon is that cane? Could you take a stance...?"

Kyouko-san orders Reika.

"No, I..."

"It's fine, I'm telling you to take a stance...!"

"Reika...do as Kyouko-san says"

I order Reika.

"...O-Okay"

Reika stands from her seat...

She holds the cane with Seikan stance, facing Kyouko-san.

"That's enough...I get it"

"...What?"

"That alone made me understand enough...!"

Kyouko-san looks up at Reika.

"You...you're the type that took only a sword training?"

...Reika

"Y-Yes. That's right"

She answered bashfully.

Kyouko-san points at the bacon and eggs dish on the table...

"Katsuko-chan made this you see...can you make such a dish?"

Reika looks at the dishes...

"I can do omelets but...I don't have the confidence to make this beautiful plate..."

Yeah...just like the dishes and bread...

Katsuko-nee's food has the quality that can be put in a shop right away. The look and the taste too...

"Why do you think Katsuko-chan can make something so delicious?"

"Is it talent for cooking as expected?"

Reika answers Kyouko-san's question.

"That's not it. She's just thinking about those who would eat this. Anyway, it's because she wants them to eat good looking and delicious food"

Kyouko-san said.

"Let's see...let's turn your sword skill to a ramen shop..."

...What?

Kyouko-san, what's with you suddenly?

"You know ramen shops? If you're obsessed with the taste of your own ramen, you won't notice anything else"

Kyouko-san talks seriously.

"But you see...no matter how delicious the ramen the store puts out...if the bowl's scratched it's hard to eat, if the chair's hard to sit on, the table is oblique? If the inside of the shop is small, can you eat ramen in such a good mood? Can you feel like eating delicious ramen?"

"...I don't think so"

Reika answered.

"That's right. A ramen shop won't be good with only Ramen. You need better chairs and tables. The shop should remain clean. There are things you have to do other than ramen...!"

Everyone's listening to Kyouko-san's talk.

I still don't know what's the relationship of ramen shop and swords.

"A first class store isn't only in the taste of the cooking. You have to pay attention to the bowls, the interior of the shop must be clean as well. If you don't care about that, you can't really please the customers. You won't be evaluated well. No, of course...the shops who totally take care of the cleanliness of the shop and yet the taste isn't good is out of the question. But, you know that it's wrong to think that only good taste will do..."

"...Yes"

"You're quite decent on your sword. I can tell only from the stance you take. But, that's all. You don't have anything to expand on in the future"

Kyouko-san declared.

"You and I are people who fight. You know that turning the word is entering the combat, don't you?"

"I know...therefore...I turned my sword to Kyouko-san with that resolution"

Reika answered.

"You don't get it at all...!"

Kyouko-san scolds REika.

"When you and I fight in this room...did you assume the other people? Did you think how Margo would move? What about the old man over there? Edie? Could you make sure Megu-chan and Mana-chan's safety? What would you do if Mao-chan jumps into the fight by mistake?"

...Reika

"...I didn't think about that at all"

"Right? You only focused on me...you were convinced to react reflexively only in accordance to the next action I take. You threw away your thoughts to yourself...!"

"That's true..."

Reika regrets.

"It's okay if you were alone. But, how can you be a guard with that kind of thinking? You can't protect anyone right now! You'll focus on surviving and kill the people you should be protecting...!"

"...Aah!"

Reika helplessly falls to the floor.

"You've been fighting alone all the time so that's why it turned like this! You may have the real skills but your ramen shop would be unpopular...!"

Reika trembles...sheds tears.

"I'm really a useless woman. With this...I have no worth living

"That's right! That's why you'll be learning household chores from Katsuko-chan!"

...What?

"Stay with the family you should protect...and find what you can do within the family. A woman like you who has been alone until now can't grow up...!"

...Kyouko-san.

"Preparing food, cleaning, washing...what can you do for everyone? How can you please everyone in the family...have Katsuko-chan teach them all one by one. That experience will surely make you stronger...!"

Kyouko-san stares straight at Reika.

"You have to make your happiness overlap with the family's happiness. If you do, you can be happy too..."

"...Y-yes"

Reika nods while crying.

"Of course, you have to help out in nursing Mao-chan too. Then, go take a drink every night...don't forget to prepare sake and snacks...!"

"...Yes mam"

...huh?

Could this be?

It looks like a good talk but...

Could it be that Kyouo-san is imposing housework on Reika???

"It's fine. Reika-oneesan, I will also learn from Katsuko-neesan..."

Megu said.

"Mana too...Mana's going to learn too!"

Mana too...

"Is it okay for me to be everyone's[oneesan]?"

Reika looks at the two with teary eyes.

"Isn't that obvious?...Right, Onii-chan?"

Mana looks at me...

Oh...can't be helped.

"A troublesome person like Reika is going to be useless without us. Therefore, just stay in the[family] Okay?"

I pass the baton to Nei-san.

"Yes that's right...give it up already and just be our[Oneesan]!"

"...Right. We welcome you"

Minaho-neesan smiles from what Nei-san said.

"Hey, Mao...go and say[welcome]to Reika-oneechan...!"

"Welcome!～ Reika-oneechan!!"

Mao-chan's bright smile...

"Thank you very much. Everyone...!"

Reika cries inspired.

"Okay, the eggs are done...! My, what's wrong?"

Katsuko-nee who came with a new bacon and egg dish is surprised at how Reika looks like.

Well, she's crying on the floor after all...

"Reika-oneesan, don't cry over there...here, here, return to your seat"

Megu pats Reika's back.

"...Yeessssss"

Reika-oneesan returns to her seat crying.

"...Somehow, I don't understand anything. Do you make this kind of fuss every time you make a new friend?"

Kudou-papa asks me.

"Well...yeah"

"That's right. Every time, they're making so much noise...saying[we're allies]
[we're family] These people are really idiotic...!"

Yukino speaks from the side.

Yukino is only the one not on the table...watching the TV alone.
Even so, she's hungry, chomping cereals.

"Was my Michi-kun also drawn in using this?"

"That's how it happened!"

Yukino shouts.

"Drawn in, that's a poor choice of words...!"

Margo-san smiles wryly.

"Anyway...it won't be just me alone. All the members of this[family]will
protect Michi. We'll never abandon Michi"

I promised Kudou-papa

"Oh...then that's fine. Well fine. I believe you people"

After answering...Kudou-papa's phone rings.

"...hm, it's me. Sure, I'm coming"

Kudou-papa ends the call...

"Looks like the car you will ride on is ready. I'm going ahead to talk with
Yazawa pops on how to deal with the police. Once you're ready to go outside,
call 993 on the extension phone. Norma-kun should answer that"

"Okay. 993 it is...!"

"Yeah, well then, see you later!"

Saying that...Kudou-papa left the room hurriedly.

"That guy is worried about Michi-chan so he came to see us"

Margo-san smiles wryly.

That's right.

Checking if we're really trustworthy people or not...

He came to confirm when Michi was out.

"He's a good father..."

Megu said.

"Yeah. I'm jealous of Michi-oneechan"

Megu and Mana's father is...

"Speaking of which...Kyouko-san, about Australia"

At the moment I said that...Mana puts her finger on her lips telling me to stop speaking.

"There's still an[enemy]in this room so you can't talk about that here!"

Enemy?...Yukino's your sister though.

"If you're asking about Sousuke, I confined him to a place only I know"

Kyouko-san answers with a nonchalant face.

Yukino's listening here.

"His whole body tied up and gagged...his ears have headphones on with loud music so I he'll be limp without even sleep"

"What kind of music he's listening to?"

Margo-san asks.

"Hmm...It's[Magical Girl Limit-chan]and[Balloon girl Temple-chan]...!"

[Limit-chan]and[Temple-chan]...

What are those?

I can tell that it's names of household goods, but...

[Temple-chan]is probably a guy who solidifies tempura oil.

[Limit-Chan]is a cooking timer?...

Why is there a song about them?

Is it a commercial song?

"Well, I'll be grabbing him later"

Kyouko-san laughs.

"I want to go back home soon"

Mana said.

"Onii-chan, let's take a nap together in your room...okay?"

For Mana, her house is no longer with Shirasaka family.
It's Kuromori[mansion]already...

"Oh right...Reika-oneechan!"

Mana talks to Reika smiling.

"For our chores...there's also Onii-chan's[night attendant]!"

What...Mana?

"It's okay! You only have to satisfy Onii-chan sexually! If Reika-oneechan doesn't understand it well then Mana and Nei-oneechan will teach you"

Mana smiles at Nei-san.

"Isn't that right?! Nei-san!!"

Mana...Nei-san's a virgin. For now.

"I-I'll be in your guidance...!"

Reika tells me.

"No...if you don't like it it's fine. There's no need"

Reika...

"No...I'm not displeased by it"

She answered with her face turned red.

"Without this opportunity...I think I'll stay virgin forever... If I'm going to experience it, then I would like to do it with my Lrod"

O-Okay

"Ah...then, I'll do my best"

"Uhm...I don't think that you can be satisfied with my body but..."

Reika self depreciates herself again, so Mana...

"Geez, Reika-oneechan! If you can't get him satisfied with one time then do it as many times as he wants! Quantity over Quality!"

...Err

Sorry, I've done Mana a lot of times since she lost her virginity.

"Mana's done it 10 times for Onii-chan's sake...if your technique can't do then compensate with numbers! If not, you can't win against Katsuko-oneechan and Nagisa-oneechan when it comes to their rich technique and experience!"

"Oh...is that so?"

No...Reika.

Mana's experience is special...

Sorry, Mana...

I made you experience such sex.

"It's true. I've done it more than ten times in one night. And I was a virgin back then...!"

Sorry...Yukino.

That happened.

"Err...then I have to do it ten consecutive times too. Yoshi-kun?"

"Megu...you want to do it?"

"No...I don't think that it's good to do it with only me"

"Nei-oneechan, how many times have you done it with Onii-chan...the best record?"

Mana asks Nei-san...

"That's a secret!"

The virgin Nei-san smiles...

Sister Edie looks up at Katsuko-nee.

"What's up...oh you want another?"

Sister Edie doesn't mind our Japanese conversation...she just continue to eat and drink.

She's completely used to being with us.

If she was a dog, she would be swinging her tail on full power...

"This girl also is also no good unless we take care of her"

Nei-san said.

"Well...if it's combat training, Margo and I will take care of her. Reika-chan, you're included as well...!"

Kyouko-san tells Reika.

"Yes, I'll be in your guidance..."

"You'll be taking care of her on daily life"

Minaho-nesan tells me.

"Edie is the same age as you and Megumi...so she'll be transferred to our school"

...What?

Seriously?

"Take care of her. Class chairman...!"

Minaho-neesan smiles at me

Oh right.

Megu and I are both classroom chairperson

"Magumagumagu...!"

This warrior beauty born from an assassination cult...

The petite girl with blonde hair and blue eyes continue to eat in satisfaction.

Chapter 344. Tiger soul

"Oh, [Super model development project]?...sounds interesting"

Kyouko-san said as Mana talked about it.

"You need to manage all your meals and exercise, right? If you put too much muscle your body's growth will be hindered. However, the stimulation by moderate exercise promotes growth hormone secretion. The goal is only to have a body of a super model so I think that novel training programs would do? A college professor I know has a lot of knowledge about that so ask them for help"

Kyouko-san seems to have participated in the plan.

"I'm short but, can I grow taller?"

"How old is Mana-chan right now?"

"Fourteen years old"

"Oh, you still have a lot of time. You have a good foundation so I think you're going to be quite the beauty"

"T-Thank you very much"

Mana's happy from Kyouko-san's praise.

"The meal program would be me and the exercise program would be Margo-san"

Katsuko-nee tells Kyouko-san

"The mental level backups are you, Nei, and Megumi. I'll be doing psychological checks however"

Minaho-neesan tells me.

"When becoming a supermodel, you need something that would make an appeal at the moment they see you but...I think you'll be fine? You're still 14 but you got a good twist"

A good twist?

"A person who solves problems straight away are not interesting. People are bent by the burdens they take on their own lives. It's better to have a bit of darkness"

"That's why...Onii-chan, do it a lot with Mana. Everyday!"

Eh...why?

"Because Mana believes in Onii-chan's love...Mana can do whatever it is. I'll be fine even if I get hungry. I'll do my best in exercise too. If Onii-chan embraces Mana every day..."

Mana's only affirmation of love is sex.

And I'm the one who implanted that thought on her.

Therefore...I must take responsibility for this.

I hug the body of Mana who crawled to me and pat her head.

"I'll be with you. I'll cheer as much as you want. Do your best...Mana"

"Thanks! Onii-chan!"

"Do your best on studying too. In addition to English, you should be able to speak French and Italian well. If you want to become a supermodel that is..."

Minaho-neesan said.

"Yes...I'll do my best!"

Looking at Mana who spoke that, Yukino...

"Are you an idiot? There's no way a brat like you could become a super model! Maika, you're being deceived by those people!"

Minaho-neesan laughs.

"What about you Yukino-san, what do you plan after this? I've told you last night...I'll be taking the baby but I don't care about you afterwards. You should think of how to live alone as a woman..."

Shirasaka house...will no longer come to help Yukino.

Her father remains abducted...the maternal relatives have also given up on Yukino.

"Maika and I don't need your help!"

"Mana-san's already in our family! We'll be taking care of her"

"That's right! Yukino-san is an enemy!"

"Maika, you need to stop!"

"...You're the one who need to stop being so spoiled"

Mana flatly tells Yukino.

"Megumi...you're happy that you take away Maika from me?"

"You really don't get it. Mana's not yours"

"She's mine! She's my little sister! It's natural for her to listen to me!"

Yukino has been a princess in Shirasaka house.

She has bullied Megu a lot.

But now.

"This girl's interesting. It's my first time seeing a hostage be this arrogant. She also has a strong appetite to keep munching food"

Kyouko-san laughs with interest.

"She has to eat for the child in her stomach too after all..."

Minaho-neesan says sarcastically

"...Kuuu"

Yukino cries again

Ranting, crying, screaming...this triple triangle is an endless waltz

This personality probably won't get cured.

Then...the phone room rings.

"Yes...hello?"

Nagisa who's nearby answered the phone.

"For you...it's Misuzu"

...Misuzu?

Looking at the clock...the time's already past 9:30

It's two hours later than the usual morning call.

"Thanks. Nagisa"

I receive the handset from Nagisa.

"Hello...what's wrong? Morning pee?"

Is Misuzu holding back?
Her bladder didn't burst, did it?

[Good morning. Danna-sama...I'm already done peeing. I won't do something that would bother Danna-sama at this kind of time]

"You did it properly?"

[Yes. Uhm...I'm sorry for peeing on my own]

"No, I'm fine as long as Misuzu's healthy. I'm a bit worried after all..."

[Misuzu's worried ass well...I'm relieved to hear Danna-sama being energetic]

"I'm fine. What about there...?"

Ruriko who's father suddenly passed away.

[The wake would be today and tomorrow will be the funeral service]

...I see.

Jii-chan intends to finish his son's funeral in a hurry.

While the public eyes are focused on Shirasaka house's scandal.

[Ruriko's behaving bravely. Yoshiko-san and I are here with her...Seki-san and Michi are also with us]

"Yeah, I'll go there later. It might be at night but...I also want to go to Ruriko's father's funeral"

[Yes, I'll be waiting. I tried calling Danna-sama's phone several times but I can't connect]

I see.

I haven't answered the calls on my phone...

So Misuzu called me through the hotel.

"Yeah...Err, where's my phone? I think someone's taken it but I haven't got it back yet. I'll call you when I have it"

[Just in case, I'll tell you my phone number for the time being...]

"Right. ...Nagisa, you got any paper to write on?"

Megu hands over a pen and paper.

"Here, Yoshi-kun"

As expected...she's really tactful.

I wrote Misuzu's phoen number...and Ruriko's father's funeral location.

"I'll contact you later..."

[Yes, I'll be waiting]

The call ended.

"...Where's Aoyama Funeral?"

I asked, Katsuko-nee...

"Of course it's in Aoyama. It's the biggest funeral venue in Japan"

As expected of Kouzuki house...

"I want to go to Ruriko-san's father's funeral"

Megu tells me.

"Ah, Mana's coming too!"

"We can't go...it's a place where nobles gather"

Katsuko-nee said sadly

...There's the possibility of people that knows Kurumori would come.

"Kouzuki Shigeaki-san wasn't our guest. Kouzuki-sama has never brought his sons to the mansion. But, if we show ourselves in the funeral, some of them might misunderstand"

Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa...better shouldn't show themselves there.

"Margo...take the children there later"

"Sure, Minaho. We can do it at night?"

"Yes. Because it's a wake. It'll only be a nuisance if you go too early"

"I'll go too...!"

Nei-san said.

"We can just go in our uniforms, right?"

Megu tells me.

"Ah, what about me?"

Mana shows a troubled face.

"If I wear uniform...they'll find out that I'm Shirasaka Maika"

Yeah. Girls from Mana's school might come.

"Mana-san will have to buy a mourning dress on the way"

Minaho-neesan said.

"Well then...it's about time we go back to our[dear home]!"

Kyouko-san said energetically

"I still have to get Sousuke"

Yukino's listening to that word.



When we called Kudou-papa through the extension just as he told us...it wasn't Norma-kun but Tony-san who came immediately

"...What's this?"

Tony-san brought a number of black cloaks and tiger masks.

"Oh, sorry, but; Please disguise with this. We have to break through the police..."

No, I understand that we have to disguise so we can't be identified, but...
Why tiger masks?

"It's our boss' hobby...!"

This black cloak?

"So you won't know[who's the real one!]"

...I don't get it
All of it.

"Why am I the only one with a black tiger mask!"

For some reason, the mask handed to Yukino is a black tiger.

"Ah, the true identity of the black tiger is[Rollerball, Mark Rocco] According to Mr. Takahashi, he's living in Canary Islands, Spain right now!"

I don't get what Tony-san is talking about.

"Anyway, everyone...please wear the mask and cloaks!"

I don't get it but...
I'll do as told for now

"Wow, everyone's having the same face!"

Mao-chan looks amused but...Mao-chan is also wearing a tiger mask.
Masks for infants are very common
Sister Edie...

She's so excited wearing a mask that she started shadow boxing
Margo-san talks in English to calm down Edie.

"Err, boss is in the police zone right now...nobody open their mouth. Also, please don't leave any fingerprints. Please be careful about your hair. Those guys will be secretly taking samples from you..."

What's with the police?

"Well then, I'll show the way...please follow me"

Tony-san goes ahead holding a triangular flag...
The flag says[Tora no ana line]...



Going the elevator hall, we the black cloak group in tiger masks walk in line.
Following Tony-san's flag...Kyouko-san, Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, Katsukonee, Nagisa, Mao-chan, Nei-san, sister Edie, Mana, Megu< Reika, and Yukino...
The thirteen tiger masks walk...
...It's surreal.
There's only one black tiger.

"Then, we'll head down through two elevators. The destination is Basement 2. We'll be leaving through the underground parking lot. Ah, the elevator is controlled over there so it'll go non-stop. We won't be stopped halfway"

Tony-san explains.
Yeah. It would be helpful if we can get down without having to face anyone...
Tony-san waves his hand on the camera in front of the elevator...
The two elevators open their doors at the same time.
Oh...Norma-san in the headquarters is controlling everything

"Okay, please get in"

We ride on the elevator.

We broke up into senior and younger groups.

But, Mao-chan and sister Edie are on the senior group.

In exchange, Nei-san and Reika are on our elevator.

Reika's our guard for the time being.

Even if we didn't press the elevator button, the Basement 2 button is already glowing.

"Somehow, it feels exciting"

Nei-san in her tiger mask says happily

No, I'm wearing tiger mask too.

"This looks idiotic...this is truly stupid!"

Yukino...you who wear the black tiger mask looks the most stupid

...Ding!

The door opens at the Basement 2.

Kudou-papa's waiting ahead.

"Great, everyone's here. Let's go!"

The head changed from Tony-san to Kudou-papa...

The large group of 15 people...walks away from the elevator hall.

In basement 2's parking lot, there are people who are clearly police officials.

"Hey, Kudou! What's with that group...?!"

A 40 year old high pressure old man calls out Kudou-papa.

"That's obvious you see. It's the Tigers"

Kudou-papa answered.

"...Oosaka? Or Detroit?"

"Not that Tigers"

Kudou-papa grins.

"This is [Julie], this is[Sally], this is[Top], this is[Tarou], and this guy's[Pee] The remaining ones are all [Kishibe Shiro]"

"...All?"

"Yeah...all of them are[Kishibe Shiro]"

"...Oh"

The detective like man laughs.

"Then...what about you who's leading these guys? Yuya Uchida?"

"The lead of Tigers. It's obviously Watanabe Misa!"

The two of them laugh...

I don't understand the talk of the two middle aged men...

"Clear the way. Both me and the Tigers are having a day off. I want to go home and sleep"

Kudou-papa glares at the detective

Before I noticed...the police officers are gathered around us.

"Nobody should go out until the field investigation is over...that's the orders from above"

The detective tells Kudou-papa

"I don't think I need to hear that kind of command"

Kudou-papa returns bold words

"Kudou...don't underestimate the state power...!"

"You're the one who shouldn't underestimate the citizens!"

"...A Kouzuki house's dog seems to have a very bossy mouth"

"Bark bark...what about you, your salary's low isn't it? If you bark badly it'll come back on you"

"Right back at you... We can crush you even without the help of Kouzuki house"

Kudou-papa and the police standoff continues...

"Sorry to bother the fun but you see..."

Kyouko-san takes off her mask.

...Then

"...I'm Kyouko Messer, a Malandro. If you're a public security officer then you've heard of my name, haven't you?"

The detective's shocked.

"Malandro?...The criminal organization in South America? The Kyouko Messer in the docs...?"

The police people gathers.

"Wait! The international wanted issue on me is now cancelled. You can't catch me!"

"We can deal with that later!"

The police officers stand firm around Kyouko-san, following the detective's instructions.

"You intend to arrest me for a different matter?"

"We'll be interrogating you for the time being. We'll have everyone's belongings inspected...if anyone has even a box knife, you'll accompany us to the station"

"We don't have any of those"

"...We don't know about that. You might be hiding it around somewhere"

...This guy

He's going to force dangerous goods on us?

"Hmm. As expected, public security on any country are petty"

Kyouko-san laughs calmly

"Say what you want. We're only doing our job"

"Hey...this is Kouzuki house you're getting involved with. If you make a bad move then you're fired"

Kudou-papa tells the detective but...

"It's her who let out an international criminal organization name. If that doesn't bother you, we'll be the one to take actions...!"

The detective's blood is completely above his head.

"Well then, let me tell you another thing...!"

Kyouko-san said...

"Right now, I'm in this country with a position of a diplomat of Republic of

Gamon You don't mind it becoming an international problem do you?"

...What?

"The police of Japan puts pressure on the US member embassy staff...I hope you're prepared for that"

...Embassy?

...Diplomat?

"It won't end with you being fired. The top of Japan's public safety...the foreign minister will also be fired. Definitely"

...Is that so?

"Have you read the newspaper recently? The Republic of Gamon and the Japanese government aren't in a good relationship now. This is an opportunity to sever diplomatic relations...no, it could be a declaration of war. The diplomat who represented the nation is treated unfairly by the Japanese police officers. The people in our country treasures honor more than anything. This might become a big problem...!"

Kyouko-san grins.

"...Do you intend to threaten us?"

"It's a warning. Isn't it better if you don't push on the falling edge too much?"

The police officers are upset.

"If you want, should I call my boss? I think you'll be surprised. It's quite hard to meet an international celebrity like me

"...Are you the real deal?"

"...I might be lying though"

"What should we do?"

"But, if we deal with this badly...if she's really a diplomat, it'll become really bad"

The policemen whispers to each other.

The detective...

"No, Kudou's taking him so she might be serious. Okay...I'll let you pass with my powers"

"It really helps that you know what to do...!"

Kyouko-san said.

"All of the people in tiger masks are my people! Don't touch a single finger on them! We don't want this to become an international discord!"

She threatens the policemen...

"The car is that minibus over there?"

Kyouko-san asks Kudou-papa

"Yup, that is"

"Hey, get in everyone...we're going to withdraw!"

Kyouko-san orders...we enter the buss.

Kudou-papa and Tony-san also goes to the driver seat.

The policemen stare at us from far away...

"Here, boss"

Tony-san hands the tiger mask to Kudou-papa

Then, he also wore a mask.

There's only one man who's not wearing a tiger mask inside the bus.

"Keep the mask on. Don't take it off until I say so...!"

Kyouko-san shouts.

Nei-san translates it for sister Edie.

"Even if Nee-san didn't interfere...I had Kouzuki-gramps' seal. I could've pushed through...!"

Kudou-papa tells Kyouko-san but...

"Hah! This is why men are...!"

She looks at Kudou-papa unamazed.

"You and Kouzuki gramps are just going to push the police off the edge right? But, when all of the information is crushed by people above, that's when they get the most impatient. If you don't let them vent it out...they'll burst into other people"

"...Vent it out?"

"That's right, with the case of this hotel last night...with me who's involved in an international criminal organization, those guys would imagine that they would be removed from the investigation, don't you think? If there's one reason why they have to agree, then they'll give up. If you just pushed through power without letting them do anything, those guys would obviously be rebellious saying[this bastard]...!"

Kyouko-san's involved in this case...

Furthermore, that Kyouko-san came to Japan with a status of a diplomat... They'd be convinced that an underling level can't do anything with it.

"People in the public safety are persistent chasers like snakes...if you feed them information, they'd be satisfied. With this, they'll concentrate on researching the Malandro's organization and Republic of Gamon..."

...They won't notice[Kuromori]?

"There's romance in investigating an[international criminal organization]...or a[Rogue nation]..."

I-I see.

"Seriously...men don't even understand other men...!"

Kyouko-san ridicules Kudou=papa.

"...Tony, start the car"

"...Okay boss"

Kudou-papa makes instructions with a face unable to stay any longer.
Our bus leaves from the parking lot in the basement.
Going to the first floor...

The detective have contacted the people ahead.

The hotel checkpoint didn't halt our buss, it just let us through.

Outside the hotel grounds...are mass media cameras lined up

"Stay calm! You don't have to hide your face in strange ways!"

The bus carrying a group of tiger masks...passes through the media.
The flashes are too dazzling

"...There's five tailing"

Margo-san mutters under the tiger mask.

"There's two police cars and three press"

Kyouko-san wearing tiger mask looks at Kudou-papa in tiger mask.

"You're ready to shake off the tail, right?"

"...That's obvious. I'm a pro too"

Kudou-papa answered.

Chapter 345. Each respective crossroads

"There's a lot of large cargo collection locations on the Gulf coast from Odaiba to Haneda..."

There's five cars that's following the bus we're riding on...

"Because it's treated as a private property...even the police cars can't easily pass through. If they don't have the entry permit then they'll be stopped at the entrance"

Kudou-papa takes out a document grinning.

"By the way...I have the entrance badge around this area. Tony"

"...Yes boss"

Tony-san moves the bus into a nearby logistics terminal.

Kudou-papa presents the pass to the guard...so our buss is allowed to enter. The cars behind stopped.

"We'll be coming from this entrance and get out on the other side"

Then the bus goes through another terminal and head towards the exit...

"Of course, tailing cars can't be chased away at one go...there are guys watching us from above too"

Kudou-papa points above...Oh, there's a helicopter

I see, these guys are monitoring our location from the sky.

These guys were giving the tracking cars instructions from a while ago.

"It's the ironclad rule of tailing...it's better to think that there are other tracking methods prepared other than those five that were visibly chasing us. With that said..."

The buss enters into another truck terminal.

"We'll continue to cross private properties multiple times"

The next terminal has a big roof.

We turn in a place where the helicopter can oversee...and head to the exit.

And then another entry card is presented on another collection site.
This time, the bus runs in a huge building.
Going around the inside, coming out of a different exit.

"Hmm...we're close to our destination."

We jumped into another terminal.
When the bus enters the facility...

...What?

There's buses with the same type as ours.
Furthermore...the passengers of the bus are wearing the same tiger masks as we do

"Okay. Tony-kun stop!"

By Kudou-papa's instruction, Tony-san stops the bus.
At the same time, the busses parked starts...

"That one has Norma-kun driving. The passenger tigers are all mannequins.
For a while, they'll be running around the logistics terminal like we've been doing now. The police and media would notice the buss has changed soon but... they won't know at which stage they did"

I-I see.

"Therefore...everyone, get in that truck"
"It's okay to take off the mask"

Fuu, Kyouko-san gave her permission.
We take off the tiger masks and cloak.

"Then...where are we going from here?"

Kyouko-san asks, Kudou-papa...

"After coming here...Haneda airport is just around the corner"

He smiled.

"There's a convenient place there called VIP parking lot. Your cars were moved there from the theater last night. The airport parking lot has many cars coming and going...so even if your luxury foreign cars like yours line up, it won't

be noticed..."

Kudou-papa and Tony-san immediately changes their uniform to a transport company.

We open the aluminum door and head inside the cargo compartment.

"This two ton long compartment might be narrow for you all but please endure it for now"

There's no seats so we sat directly on the floor of the cargo compartment.

Mao-chan is carried by Nagisa...but she's happily laughing.

Sister Edie looks pleased as well.

Reika sits in between Nagisa and Katsuko-nee.

Minaho-neesan is protected by Kyouko-san and Margo-san.

Megu and Mana's tense, I'm hugging Nei-san.

As for Yukino...

Why are you still wearing your black tiger mask?

"Because...someone might identify me as Shirasaka Yukino. The airport has a lot of people"

As usual, she's overly self-conscious...

Or rather, it doesn't feel like the black tiger mask is strange.

"The road is flat and I won't speed up too much so I don't think there would be that much shaking. We'll be right there so bear with me"

After saying, Kudou-papa closed the door of the cargo compartment from the outside.



We endured being stuffed inside the truck compartment for ten minutes.

Well, it didn't shake as much as I thought but still...I know that the cargo compartment isn't a place for people to ride on.

Before long, the truck stops.

The door opens again.

"We're here...woah, it's filled with womanly scent"

Kudou-papa said after smelling the room.

Well of course... there's more than ten women stuffed in.

"You look fine"

"Haha...I got used to it"

That's right. I'm used to living with women.

Outside of the truck...seems to be a multi-story parking lot.

A familiar car is parked in front of our eyes.

Margo-san's blue Maserati...

Next to it is Minaho-neesan's Benz.

Then, a white van.

"That's my car!"

Nagisa points at it

A red car...

"It's a Peugeot. A French car"

Oh. Nagisa knows it.

"Don't touch it yet, Nagisa-chan...!"

Kyouko-san said.

"Everyone take distance"

Then, she looked at Kudou-papa.

"It's not like I don't trust you but...it's an occupational disease. I'm scared for others to touch the car before I check it"

...Scared?

"There could be transmitters or explosives you see"

Kyouko-san started from checking Minaho-neesan's Benz.

"Margo, check your own car"

"...Roger, Kyouko-san"

Margo-san begins examining from the Maserati's suspension

"Ah, I'll help out too"

Reika also joins the work.

"Okay. There's no bomb but I found a transmitter"

Margo-san said.

"Margo, that's probably not the only one there"

"Yeah. Having this one found is probably within their assumption...I think there's a gimmick in here"

"Don't overlook a single piece"

"Okay"

"Ah, I found one here too"

Reika also finds a transmitter.

In the end, the four cars had twelve transmitters found on them.

"What does this mean?"

Kyouko-san asks Kudou-papa.

"I-I don't know anything about that"

"I know...the one who did it is probably Yazawa-pops"

Kyouko-san laughs.

"That old man wants to put bells on our necks"

"Or rather...it's just Kyouko-san. Yazawa-san feels threatened with your freedom"

Margo-san said.

"Well who cares. I hate having a bell on my neck you see. Could you tell Yazawa-pops that?"

Kyouko-san hands the mountain of transmitters to Kudou-papa.

"My, look at the time...I'm really late"

Nagisa looks at her watch.

The time is already 10:30

"I'll be going ahead. I've got to open the shop after all..."

"Wait, Nagisa"

I look at Megu.

"Megu, do you have club activities today?"

"There's one today but...I called Captain Takeshiba this morning telling that I'll be taking a day off for today"

"Huh...why?"

"Because of the fuss last night, everyone hasn't rested at all you see?...I feel sorry to have only Katsuko-oneesan take care of the mansion..."

Megu's completely into being the chairman of the family.

"Captain Takeshiba also watched the TV on the big things happening to Shirasaka house. So she told me to not go to the club for today"

Everyone knows that Megu's a distant relative of Shirasaka family...
The big coup in the Shirasaka house is reported more extensively than yesterday's Shirasaka Sousuke's sex scandal.

People who are interests oriented were taken up by Shirasaka Sousuke but...
With the downfall of the head of the media network and television stations.
He's also the owner of a popular team...
The influence on the society is uneven.

"Okay. Then, Megu will take care of the mansion. Also, Mana...go help on Nagisa's shop"

"What...me?"

"That's right. We're family so isn't it normal that we help each other out?"

"Yup...you're right"

Mana's convinced.

"Also, Reika will be going too"

"Me?...Help out with a flower shop?"

Reika's surprised.

"Because of yesterday's events...I think that it's better if there's a guard on Nagisa's shop just in case." Reika will help out the shop and protect Nagisa and her employees"

"...If that's the case"

No...my true intention is to...

Have Reika touch something other than a sword.

"Of course, you have to be helping out with the store properly so the

customers coming to the shop won't think of you as strance"

"...Certainly"

"Nagisa...is that okay?"

Though instead of helpers...I'm just letting Nagisa take care of Mana and Reika though...

If it's Nagisa, she'll be teaching them properly

"Yes, it'll help...!"

Nagisa smiles.

"Then, get in the car...Mao too. When the shop's closed, we'll go back at the mansion at night"

Nagisa, Mao-chan, Mana, and Reika gets in the red car.

《...Wooo, MAO!》

"You're here"

Edie's not agreeing to Mao-chan going away but...

Kyouko-san holds her down with power.

"We'll be returning to the mansion for now. I don't think there's any watchers hired by Shirasaka house or Viola in there, but... It feels scary if we don't check it properly"

Minaho-neesan said.

"After the safety of the mansion is confirmed, I'll go with Kyouko-san to take the target"

The target means Shirasaka Sousuke.

Yukino the black tiger looks at Minaho-neesan in surprise.

"Minaho...can we go on a separate route?"

Margo-san said.

"It'll be me, him and Nei..."

Minaho-neesan...

"Let's see. I'll leave that case to you..."

She said.

"Then, we'll be going ahead...see you later, dear!"

"Onii-chan...I'll do my best!"

"Leave this to me"

Nagisa's car started rolling

"Should this girl be in our car too?"

"Yes...we don't know what she would do if she's not monitored"

"Isn't it safer than Edie? Well, it looks fun so hey...get in!"

Yukino in her black tiger mask rides on the back seat of Minaho-neesan's car.
Edie sits next to her.

But still, she's frolic.

Her excitement on places she would go doesn't stop.

Katsuko-nee and Megu rides the white van.

"Kudou-san, thanks for everything this time..."

Minaho-neesan gives her thanks before riding the car.

"Don't mind it. We're only doing our jobs..."

Kudou-papa answered with a smile.

"This time, we were allies but...do you want to be hostile next time?"

Kyouko-san says.

"Spare me from that. The bodies hitting the floor won't be enough against you"

Even Kudou-papa can't make jokes on the veteran Kyouo-san.

"Besides...I don't want to fight Michi"

...Kudou-papa looks at Minaho-neesan and Kyouko-san with a serious face.

"Please take care of Michi"

He bows his head.

"Your daughter is taken by my brother. We the seniors will be monitoring and guiding them so they can become happy. Please do not worry..."

Minaho-neesan also bows her head to Kudou-papa.

"I'll get it right...!"

I bow my head deeply

"...Thanks. Really"

Kudou-papa's affection to Michi is deep in his heart.

"Well then, good luck, boy!"

Kudou-papa tells me.

"Yes...I'll do my best"

"...Thanks"

Laughing, Kudou-papa rides back the truck.

He ordered Tony-san and the engine started.

"Well then...you three do what you have to do..."

Minaho-neesan says then she rides the Benz.

"Margo, you don't have to worry about us. Take care of Nei-chan!"

Kyouko-san says from the passenger seat.

Yukino...at the moment our eyes met, she turned her face away.

While still wearing the black tiger mask.

Sister Edie laughs at Yukino...

The engine starts roaring...

And the black Benz rolls out.

"We'll be going as well. Please come back home soon"

"Yoshi-kun, I'll be waiting!"

Katsuko-nee and Megu's white van also follows Minaho-neesan.

The people remaining in the parking lot are...

Me, Margo-san, and Nei-san...

—And Margo-san's blue Maserati...

"Well, let's go too..."

Margo-san said.

We're going to my house.

I won't say it but...the three of us know that

"...Let's go, Kei"

"Right...Oneechan"

We ride the car.

"Here, take this. Nei too"

Margo-san opens the car dashboard...

Then she took out two phones from the inside.

"It's a prepaid card type phone. Use that for the time being. The number's pasted on the seal on the back. Jot the number down and throw it away"

Yeah. There's a number written on a seal.

"The phones used until yesterday were all destroyed. There's a possibility that those numbers are already leaked in the underground society. The phones I gave you just now will only be used as a communication until you get a new phone. I'll prepare a new phone by tomorrow"

Thus...my former phone wasn't given back.

"Well then...let's go?"

Margo-san turns the engine key...

The high power Maserati starts lightly

"Yeah...let's go"

Nei-san holds my hand.

Is she getting nervous?...Her hand is cold.

...I...later

Will be taking Nei-san's virginity...

"...Let's go"

The Maserati kicks the ground and dashes forward furiously...!

◇ Nei - First experience Arc

Chapter 346. The car's blue, the sky's blue

The blue Maserati runs across the morning road...
The sky's sunny...we're in the middle of the Golden Week.,
The atmosphere of relaxed holidays is in the city.
Margo-san plays music in the car.
It's a gentle and relaxing...a beautiful woman's English song.

"Oh...I love this one"

Nei-san said

"What's this song?"

"...Brazil"

Nei-san smiles gently.

"《BRAZIL》is a movie title you see...and that song plays on the dream scenes.
This is a version Kate Bush sings"

Margo-san said.

"《BRAZIL》is the original title but in Japan...it's called[Future Century Brazil]"

Nei-san teaches me.

Of course...I don't get it.

"Kate Bush is really great. I like her"

"...Is that so?"

"Yeah. There's a song called[Wuthering Heights]sung by her...I love both the song and the lyric but, it's been used as an opening show on variety shows in Japan they said. That's why the comedy image comes into my head"

Nei-san talks of a story.

"When I came back to Japan and just entered high school...I was in the chorus club. I made friends, and told them[I like this song]as I listen to[Wuthering Heights]and they laughed at me...it was a huge shock on me"

Nei-san also had that time...

Immediately after, the man under Shirasaka Sousuke tried to make a move on her...and Nei-san turned to a delinquent blonde haired girl.
Pairing up with Margo-san, in exchange of protection...she lost friends in school.

"They're not at fault but...once they get along with me and had themselves targetted, they might be turned to prostitutes..."

Out high school has been a source of prostitutes for[Kuromori]
At present, Iwakura-kaichou is supposed to be the last, but...

"There's my case with Cesario Viola...ever since I came to Japan, I've been watching the lives of prostitutes in the mansion...sex didn't have a very good image in me. Really, until recently...you came. I've come to think that sex may be a kind of fun act"

Nei-san calls me as[you]
She's not calling me"Kei"even in front of Margo-san.

"Was it from when you saw me having sex with Misuzu or Katsuko-nee?"
"No. I felt it since you first raped Yukino-san. You have a completely different atmosphere when raping compared to Shirasaka Sousuke..."
"...Different?"

"Yes...when Shirasaka Sousuke rapes a girl, he's showing a faint smile...looking like he's having fun. And it's disgusting. It's selfish, and he only hurt the girl's body and heart"

Yeah.
Rape is like that.
The man's libido being forced into a woman.

"But...when you raped Yukino-san. It was different from the first time. You're so serious, that even watching through the video was painful. It was sad. It looks like you were trying to cling into Yukino-san's body from the bottom of your heart..."

"Was I like that?"

"Or rather...it's always like that. Whoever you do it with"

Margo-san says from the driver seat...

"At the same trying you're trying to fill the void in your heart...you

desperately try to fill up the sadness of the other party's heart. It's so painful and so sad. You're really an interesting child"

Even if you tell me that...

"Kyouko-san's really surprised about you"

She was surprised about me?

"No, you see I was on the middle of reporting the progress to Kyouko-san. Then, she was really surprised to see us in flesh. Minaho and Katsuko-san who were mentally unstable is now calm...Nagisa-san, Nei, and even me..."

"Margo-san too...? Isn't Margo-san quite calm since when we've met?"

Margo-san laughs.

"Is that how you saw it? That's wrong. Even I was as unstable as everyone else. It's just that Nei's instability stands out more, I guess?"

"That's right. This person's quite a moody one you know...!"

Nei-san doesn't use[Maru-chan]either

As expected, the person in this car right now...is a person in between Nei-san and Yasuko-san.

Her personality isn't fixed.

"Kyouko-san is worried about leaving us alone going to Australia. But...there was no other choice but to let Kyouko-san capture Shirasaka Sousuke on that side. Minaho's quite rushing to carry out her plan"

"Why?"

"...Shirasaka Sousuke planned to turn Megu-chan to a prostitute by Monday, you do know that right? Minaho wants to prevent it from happening by all means. Therefore, she had no choice but to start the[revenge plan]in panic"

...I see

For Minaho-nesan, Megu is a memento of a senior prostitute she's indebt with...

She definitely don't want Megu to be turned to a prostitute.

"Kyouko-san and I have been regretting what happened to Nagisa-san"

"Nagisa?"

"Nagisa-san was forced to be pregnant...and gave birth to Mao-chan. At that

time, Kyouko-san wasn't in the mansion. She had to leave Japan for the [Malandro] work by all means... Kyouko-san wasn't there so Shirasaka Sousuke did the absurd. But...Minaho nor I didn't have the power to stop the tyranny of that man... It was a painful reminder for us"

Mao-chan's three years old so...Nagisa got pregnant four years ago. Margo-san's fifteen years old, just coming to Japan from America... It was also the time when Minaho-neesan hasn't grasped the management of [Kuromori]

"Shirasaka Sousuke was approached with a Yakuza organization...if it continues, Megu-chan would be abducted regardless of [Kuromori] That's why she leaked the [customer list] information to Shirasaka Sousuke in hurry..."

And lured him to Australia...

"There was a fear that it would become an all out war with Shirasaka Sousuke and the Yakuza organization inside Japan. We don't have that kind of power. It was necessary to send him overseas to separate him with the Yakuza. Besides, Kyouko-san would be able to move freely there"

For Kyouko-san who's from an international faction...it's hard for her to move in a country like Japan.

"Then...she's been worried if we were all right all this time. I know it very well because I'm in contact with her every day, but. We are really mentally weak people after all"

"That's not true. Margo-san, Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, and Nagisa...all the seniors are doing well aren't they? They're always helping us younger ones..."

"That's not it. That's not the truth"

Margo-san speaks as she look straight in front.

"...It's thanks to you. All of it"

"No, I didn't do anything"

"Because of your existence...we're able to discipline ourselves. We don't want to hurt your trust...we wanted to be [a good elder sister] to you"

My...elder sisters?

"Everyone's so desperate. But, they're not doing the unreasonable.

Everyone's having fun...being your [Oneesan] Because you believe in us...we're able to forgive ourselves for the first time in our lives. We became able to love ourselves. We're doing our best to become your elder sisters..."

"I don't get it"

Nei-san holds my hand.

"It might be something you don't understand. But...it's certain that you've turned us to a good direction...!"

"It's not just us. The younger girls too...Misuzu-san, Megu-chan, Mana-chan, Michi-chan too...they're growing more and more by touching you. Reika-oneesan and Seki-san too..."

...Eh?

"Earlier...Kyouko-san scolded Reika-oneesan right?"

Nei-san tells me.

"Ah, yes"

"That's just rare. Kyouko-san is a person who never scolds people unless they're promising"

"Is that so?"

"Yeah. She'll usually make fun and just turn it to a joke. It's my first time seeing Kyouko-san scolding seriously"

Margo-san said.

"Kyouko-san's too smart of a person so...getting angry, is only exhausting the physical strength. She'll come up with a countermeasure right away. She'll be moving on the next action before she gets angry. Just like the police officer a while ago who doesn't hesitate to threaten others...she'll just use force fast on people who are foolish enough to not understand..."

On top of being smart, she's also absurdly strong...

Before she gets angry, she already takes out the other party by force?

"The remaining pride inside Reika-oneesan is completely destroyed..."

...Nei-san?

"Reika-oneesan who's been crossdressing didn't hide her vulnerable heart

and pride with that appearance. And now, all of the armor worn by her heart is peeled off..."

"...Yeah. She opened her heart...got naked in front of us. I think that letting her to go Nagisa-san's shop is the right choice"

"Is that so?"

"That's right. Reika-oneesan right now is too bare...she can't do a guard work. It's better for her to familiarize herself with the atmosphere of the family with Nagisa-san and Mao-chan"

"If she understands what she want to protect...I think that Reika-oneesan will become stronger"

Margo-san said.

"No, actually...before you got up, Kyouko-san said. She's surprised that we're mentally stable but...all the people you bring have good qualities"

"No, it's not that I bring them in"

"I wonder? I think that you're the key man but..."

"That's right. Without you...Misuzu-san , Michi-san, Mana-san and Reika-oneesan won't join in the family"

As expected...Nei-san doesn't use[Chan]

"Who would've thought that even Kouzuki-san joined in the family"

Well...even I am surprised.

"Really, your ability is phenomenal, that's what Kyouko-san said..."

No, I'm just...

I don't have a role...even though I'm just being pulled by everyone.

"Are you not good at dealing with Kyouko-san?"

Margo-san asks me.

"Hmm...let's see. I still don't know what kind of person she is after all"

"Kyouko-san is the...father of[Kuromori]"

Nei-san said.

"A father role even though she's a woman...I think it's hard for you to understand."

"Right. Kyouko-san's got a masculine role after all"

Oh...because she's a lesbian.

"She's a person who complicated the feminine sensibility and masculine thinking. Therefore, it's hard to understand the behavior of hers. If we make it clear by saying[This person is everyone's father]then it'll be easy to understand, however"

Margo-san said.

I see...I guess that's the cause of the sense of discomfort I feel with Kyouko-san.

It doesn't feel like she's the eldest sister of[Kuromori]

Minaho-neesan is definitely the eldest sister, but...

Kyouko-san is the[father?]

"That[father]is acknowledging your existence properly. You're the indispensable brother to us"

Nei-san tells me smiling.

"Kyouko-san has praised other parts of you as well. Especially how you distinguish Yukino-san apart from the family, making a proper line"

...About Yukino

"That girl's really hopeless"

Even Nei-san...her evaluation of Yukino seems to be low.

"If it's a normal guy...the affection gradually goes up the longer you stay together, even with someone like Yukino-san would definitely be turned to a relative. In your case, you were able to make a clear distinction""

...I

"Yukino-san will never be our ally...you know that she's a girl who we can never let our guard down. It's rare for men to do such things, even excellent to do so...thus Kyouko-san praised you"

Margo-san says so but.

"I just know that Yukino and I will never understand each other..."

"...It's the relationship of two straight line in three dimensions"

"What?"

"Mathematically...in a three dimensional world, there are four kind of relationships done by two straight lines. First is [completely overlapping]... Second is[extend parallel], third is[crossing at one point]the fourth is[bending on one point]...never crossing"

...Err

"If you think of a human life as a single straight line...it's funny isn't it? It's not easy for one and another's life to completely overlap. If they're parallel, they'll be able to see each other all the time. There are lives where they cross at one point and then continue on different ways. Even if you think it's parallel, in fact it's twisted a bit of an angle...it may be the life relationship of twist, that goes away gradually"

...That's right.

The encounters with people's lives are various.

"Yukino and I...normally would have a relationship that would never intersect, twist from the beginning to end. But...by coincidence, we're able to cross at a point now. But, what's ahead is to go away gradually"

Our lives will never overlap nor become parallel
After getting involved once...what's left is to break up...

"[Life is only goodbyes]huh..."

Margo-san sighs.

"What was that?"

"There's a person who used to say that. Everyday you meet a lot of people even if you're not conscious of them. Therefore, people are only conscious of[parting]"

"I see...because you're supposed to break up, that's why you're kind to Yukino-san..."

Nei-san mutters.

"What about me?"

...What?

"Do you think of me as a person you'll part from someday...?"

...I

"I don't want to. I want us to stay together forever...!"

Nei-san smiles.

"...Me too"

"Therefore, let's stay together. Please stay with me..."

"That's what I should ask from you..."

Nei-san kisses my hand.

"I don't want to part. Let us be together until death"

...Nei-san



Before long, the car arrives to the town where I live.

"Ah, let's stop on a convenience store or something. We don't have anything to drink at all..."

That's right.

I haven't come back to the house for a while...

"There's no tea leaves or packs in there. I never had any visitor at house"

"Does your father or mother not drink tea?"

Margo-san asks.

"Ah...I don't know"

"Don't know?"

"I'm off limits on the zone where my father and mother lives..."

"Eh, there's only one kitchen right?"

Nei-san's surprised.

"Yeah...since grandma died, both of them eat only outside... Both of them have the refrigerator in their room I guess? I've never seen their rooms so I don't know, but"

"Then, you're using the kitchen alone?"

"I borrow the water and stove. I also have one aluminum pot for myself. But,

I'm not allowed to use anything other than that..."

"...Not allowed?"

"The fridge in the kitchen isn't used so it's a waste, therefore it's pulled out of the socket. All of the cupboards are locked. I've been using my own cups, dishes and chopsticks bought from the hundred yen shop"

"But, isn't it troublesome that you can't use the refrigerator?"

Nei-san looks at me with amazed eyes.

"I'm not troubled...I've been living alone in the house for a month since spring. The food is mostly bread or cup noodles...and the water is all you can drink tap water. Sometimes, I boil water and drink it"

"But...If you buy juice you need to cool it you know?"

"I don't buy those. I can't pay a hundred to hundred-twenty for drinks. I thought that I couldn't live without saving money"

Nei-san hugs my body tightly.

"Oh right...you were that kind of boy..."

"There's a big drugstore there...so we'll stop by"

Margo-san parked the car.

Oh, though it's a pharmacy, they sell a lot of drinks.

"I avoid artificial sweeteners and stimulants"

Margo-san said, as she take the barley tea bottle.

"I'm fine with that tea over there. It's got to be cool to be delicious..."

Nei-san chose straight tea and goes to the back of the shop...

"Sorry, I've got to buy other things"

What is she buying?

I took a mineral water...

"You sure?"

Margo-san asks.

"Yes. It's cheap, can be drunk even warm, and is more delicious than tap water..."

"You drink a lot of tap water...Japan has good water except for Tokyo"

"Is it different on other places?"

"In foreign countries, there are many who get sick from drinking tap water. Even when taking shower, if you don't close your eyes properly, there will be germs entering your eyes"

"Ooh"

"In Japan...when you leave Tokyo, tap water is also delicious. Anyway, Tokyo's tap water is horrible"

I don't know the taste of water in other places.

"Now then, let's buy that bottle and wait in the car"

"Eh, shouldn't we wait for Nei-san?"

Margo-san smiles.

"Men shouldn't look at what girls buy in pharmacies"

...Oh, okay.

Pharmacies sell things that are very private.

Especially for women...

"True...got it"

"Nei...we'll be waiting outside!"

Margo-san tells Nei-san who's at the back of the store.

"Yeah! I'm coming right away, just wait for a while...!"



"Thanks for the wait...!"

Nei-san comes to the car holding a small plastic bag.

I better not ask what's inside.

Margo-san starts the car.

The car components are restarted.

After the sound of engine...A Japanese song different from earlier plays.

What's this? A folk song?

"...Who sang this?"

Nei-san asks Margo-san.

"I don't know this well too. It seems to be an old Japanese band, but... Katsuko-san lent me this"

"Hmm, it's an interesting song...what's the title?"

"...[Flower, sun, rain]"

Wrapped in gentle music...the Maserati heads to my house...

"Please turn to the corner there...the three frontage is my house"

...I came back

It's been a while...

How many times has it been since I left home?

Back then...I was a virgin.

It hasn't been a week since then and yet...

I feel like it was decades ago...

"...Okay, we've arrived"

Margo-san stopped the car in front of the house.

"Then, you two can go ahead"

...Eh?

"I'll be waiting here...!"

"Why?"

Nei-san asks.

"You don't want to watch me lose my virginity?"

Margo-san smiles gently

"Nei...you should be independent from me"

Nei-san gasps.

"I've been trying to keep Nei from being alone since we've met in US. Me, Kyouko-san, Minaho-, Katsuko-san always stay close to Nei. Everyone's worried about Nei all the time"

For Nei-san who's mentally unstable...
Someone's always by her side.

"That is why there's always someone with Nei, but...in exchange, Nei has

never told any secrets to us"

...Secrets

Margo-san's eyes looking at Nei-san...is very kind.

"I think that you two need to have a secret only you know..."

Margo-san looks at me.

"You too...your sex have always been monitored by someone. It's about time for you to be out of that situation soon"

Where nobody can see...

Nei-san and I are alone...

...We're going to have sex.

"Becoming an adult is a secret to have...go"

Margo-san smiles.

"...You two go make a secret"

Chapter 347. The room's stagnant air

"Here, take this"

Margo-san handed me a camera.

"In[Kuromori]it's a rule to have your first time sex recorded but...you two can do as you like. You can record it or not...you don't have to show us the photos you take"

"...Are you really sure?"

Nei-san looks at Margo-san

"Didn't I tell you? Nei also needs a secret to keep..."

Margo-san smiles.

"This car is too flashy to be stopped on this road so I'll be nearby. If I recall, there's a family restaurant on that street. When you're done, call me. I'll come pick you up right away. Ah...you don't need to hurry. You can take your time...at least three hours"

Three hours...just me and Nei-san

"Anyway...go"



Nei-san and I get off the car...

Margo-san starts the Maserati immediately

Smiling at us...

The two of us...were left behind

"Well, let's go...Kei"

As soon as we're alone...Nei-san calls me[Kei]

"Yeah...Oneechan"

I also match the way I call with Nei-san

"Wow...that's amazing. It looks like a jungle"

Nei-san said looking at the garden.
Our garden had nobody grooming it since Grandma died...
The trees grow thick and the grass are seriously tall.
At least, the paving stone to the entrance doesn't have growing so you can pass through, but...
Well, it looks messed up from the outside.
You can tell that the residents are useless...

"Our house...neither mother nor father had a visitor. This is just a house to sleep at night...so nobody takes care of the house"

I was also living in a dormitory until spring this year
Even after coming back to this house, I didn't want to do anything with the garden.
Or rather...I did something without permission, I'll get scolded by mother.

"Anyway...let's enter

I open the iron gate and enter.
The parking lot where Mother's car is always parked is vacant.
Well...that person will not come back from her family home anymore...
We go through the jungle garden to the entrance.

"Ah, the entrance is exclusive for mother...father and I weren't supposed to enter without permission

"...What's with that?"

"I don't understand it but that was the rule since I was a child"

"Kei has never entered the house from the front entrance?"

"Yeah...I don't have any memory of it"

I take Nei-san around the house.
Since it has concrete pavement, it's not turned to a jungle.
We're in front of the kitchen door.

...Now then

I lift a concrete lock piled up casually next to the doorstep.

If I recall, the gap on the third block from the top...

Yup...there it is

It's a small metal box with sweets inside.

Opening the rusty box...a dull glowing key shows up.
It's the key to the kitchen I've hidden since elementary school.
I push the key to the door.

...Click

The lock's open.
I enter inside.
The air is stagnant.
I haven't been in home for a while...
No, that's wrong.
This house has stagnant air from the start.
I left this house...and discovering the life in the Mansion where Katsuko-nee properly gives it a sense of life...
It's my first time noticing the abnormality of Yoshida house.
This house is no good...it's rotten.
It lacks the vitality even more than the house of prostitutes
...Oh
I recall something.
If the room's just like how I left it then...

"What's wrong? You won't come in?"

Nei-san looks at me curiously

"Uhm...could you wait for a while?"

"Why?"

"No...it's just that I have to clean inside"

...Nei-san

"Nope!"

"...What?"

"If you're cleaning then Oneechan will join in too"

"But...how should I say it"

"...Embarrassed?"

"Rather than that...I think that you'll come to hate me"

Yeah...I think

"I won't. Never..."

"But, it's really dirty"

Nei-san laughs...

"It's fine..."

Then, she said.

"I want to know everything about Kei"

We enter the house from the kitchen.

Yeah, it's dusty

So my house was like this.

I checked the kitchen's garbage in a hurry

...Yeah

There's only bags of breads and containers of cup noodles washed with water...

There's no stench.

I feel a bit relieved.

Well, I don't buy meat or vegetables, which becomes the source of raw garbage.

I was living alone...

I was forbidden to use the refrigerator.

"This is the kitchen...the other side is the living room. Though I say living room...it only has the sofa I sleep on and it has nothing else"

"Your family's not coming to the living room?"

"Yeah. Father and Mother always enter their own room when they're here...

Father sometimes go to the kitchen to brew coffee or something but...mother's room on the second floor has everything"

"...Everything?"

"Kitchen, bathroom, toilet...all of them are for mother's exclusive use. I've never entered it so I don't know the inside"

Anyway, even if we're on the same house, I have never seen it...

I think that there's everything in mother's room.

Father...comes down on the first floor to take a bath or toilet.

"I only know the first floor. I was told not to go upstairs..."

Ever since I was a child

"Hey, could we go and see the second floor?"

Nei-san said.

"It's impossible. It's all locked"

I said

"...Locked?"

"Yeah, mother has a very suspicious personality that this room is filled with locks"

I show the kitchen cupboard.

"The plates and cups on this cupboard...are all mother's. Father and I weren't allowed to use it"

The cupboard...are all locked with a large padlock to prevent them from opening.

"The kitchen and the living room next to it...and the toilet and the bathroom on the first floor? Those are the only one's mother hasn't locked. The remaining rooms are filled with mother's belongings...so all of those are locked. The shoe box at the door too. Only mother's shoes are there..."

"What about you and your father's shoes?"

Nei-san asks with an amazed face.

"My shoes are supposed to be taken off at the kitchen doorstep. Well, it's only school shoes. Father puts his shoes into a convenience store's plastic bag and takes it to his room every time"

The entrance is exclusive to mother...so there's no other choice.

"The only places I can stay in are the rooms that aren't locked. In short, only the kitchen and the living room. Even the corridor out of the entrance is no good...right"

"Has it always been like that since childhood?"

"No...when I was in elementary school, grandma and my room was in the first floor but. When I came back from the dorm, it was gone"

"...Gone?"

"Yeah. The there's a lock on it...it seems to have become a new storage place for mother"

I don't know the details.
Neither my father nor mother said anything about it.
But...having a lock means it's off limits.

"Are you okay with that?"

Nei-san asks me.

"Even if you ask me...this is the house where I was born and raised but...I had nothing I own. There's no helping it"

I feel suffocated by the stagnant air.
I open the window to let the air in.
Wow...this window's very dirty.
The last time this got cleaned up was back when Grandma was alive...

"This isn't a house..."

...Nei-san?

"This isn't a house at all"

...Err

"...Kei, don't you think so too?"

"...Well"

"What's up?"

"This is the only place I know"

I don't know about other houses.
Kuromori's[Mansion]is different from an ordinary house.

"True...sorry"

Nei-san hugs me from behind.

"I didn't understand it at all"

"About what?"

"Before Kei-chan and I were kidnapped by Viola, we were happy. Papa and Mama were kind people. Our house...is a[home] Even though I had such happy

memories...I was convinced that I'm such a poor person. I am so spoiled by the people around me..."

"Oneechan had a lot of sad feelings so you can be spoiled"

"Then, Kei depend on me too...!"

Nei-san's rich breast is pressed against my back.

"Even Kei had a lot of sad past...but I couldn't even notice it because of me thinking that I'm so pitiful"

"...I'm not that pitiful"

That's right...I

"I had a place to sleep. I also managed to eat somehow=..."

"But...Kei has always been alone. Your father and mother ignored you..."

"It's not always. There was a time when I was with grandma..."

I turn to Nei-san...

"Now, I have Oneechan...and everyone"

"...Kei"

I hug Nei-san strongly



Then...we head to the living room.

This is the first room after leaving the kitchen.

The hallway a well has some amazing dust looking at it now.

Did father use the vacuum cleaner before he has disappeared?

Mother will never do it...of course.

"The other rooms are really locked"

Nei-san looks at the doors of the other rooms in the corridor and said.

Each of the door is sealed with a big padlock.

The entrance of the doors have [Winter and coats]or[Bags]written on paper pasted on it.

"Each of the rooms have mother's luggage buried on it. That person never throws things she bought so it accumulates"

"What's that room?"

Nei-san points to a door...
It has[unnecessary]written on it.

"Like I said...she's not throwing anything away. That's all the things she bought"

That person is that kind of woman after all

"...This way"

We enter the living room.
...Ugh
It stinks

"No no no...could you wait for a while?!"

It's too late to stop her...
Nei-san is already in

"Wow...what's this smell?"

...Err

"Uhm...during the night before I left this house, I was masturbating..."

The used tissues are on the floor of the living room.

"Eh, you used this much tissues overnight?!"

Err.
Around the sofa I sleep in...
Tissues are scattered around it.

"No... When father was gone...I was alone in the house, I was a bit desperate...
so I only did masturbate"

...In short.

"You didn't clean at all..."

"Yes...I'm sorry"

I pick up the garbage bag in a hurry and collect the tissues I threw around.

"I'll help you out"

Nei-san said and reaches out for the floor.

"It's fine. It's dirty"

"It's fine it's fine"

Nei-san said...then picked up the smelly paper with my semen, then threw it away.

"Let's use a vacuum cleaner. This room is also dusty"

Nei-san opened the window...letting out the smell of the room.
I got the vacuum cleaner...cleaned up the floor and the sofa.

"...Sorry"

I apologized.

"...About what?"

"No...it's just that I really kept masturbating. Ever since the entrance ceremony..."

My father disappeared on the day of entrance ceremony.
Then...for a month.

I was in this room...masturbating all the time.

"Yeah, the amount of tissues is a bit overkill"

Nei-san looks at the garbage bag.

"Don't do this anymore."

...What?

"I'll be Kei's sex partner from now on"

...Nei-san

"Kei...have you ever imagined having sex with someone in this room?"
"Never. I've been told not to call anyone to this house"

Ever since elementary school...
Even if I can go to my friend's house...
I can't call everyone to my house.

"And yet, Kei...this is where you'll break my virginity?"

Nei-san sits on the cleaned sofa.

She caress the surface of the tattered sofa.

"This is...Kei's bed"

"...Yes"

"Isn't it a bit too small? You can't sleep with your body stretched out, right?"

"Therefore I sleep curling myself. Like a cat"

"...Like this?"

Nei-san's charming body lies down on the sofa I usually sleep on.
Then...Nei-san noticed the cardboard box next to the sofa.

"This box is...?"

"Ah, that's my personal item box. That has everything I own"

Nei-san noticed the photo placed on top of the box.
That was the group photo at the entrance ceremony

"Hmm, to think that this photo is in here..."

Nei-san stares at the photo.

"Could it be that Kei...you were masturbating as you look at Yukino-san in this photo?"

...Bulls eye

"T-That's right..."

That was my side dish.
I masturbated to Yukino during the last night I slept on this room.
That's the night before I raped Yukino.

"You got aroused at this very small image of Yukino-san?"

"...I did. Back then"

I was still a virgin.

"...Hmmm"

Nei-san looks at me with a mean eye.

"...Show it to me"

"...What?"

"I want to see how Kei masturbates"

...Does that mean?

"Do it while I watch"

Then, Nei-san...

She opens her legs on the sofa.

I can see Nei-san's white underwear.

"I'll blow away all of Kei's memory of Yukino-san in his head...!"

...Nei-san, could it be.

You were—

Jealous about having Yukino-san as the side dish for my masturbation????!

"Show me all of Kei's shamefulness!"

Nei-san tells me.

"Okay? Show me all!"

Chapter 348. Blue & Blonde

"Ah, wait...before that, let's wash our hands that cleaned up the room first!"

Nei-san stands up energetically

"Hey...hurry up"

The two of us head to the bathroom

"Ah, this mirror isn't polished at all...it's so cloudy"

Err I thought that the house's mirror just need to reflect the face.
True, the edge of the mirror is clouded with years of dirty.

"Kei...do you have a rag?"

"Err...this one?"

I take the rag on the side of the washroom but...

"That's too dirty for a rag! Throw that away!"

True...it's already black, it's already too stiff from being air dried, the dust has accumulated a lot.

"Do you have a towel or something?"

"Then I'll go get it. Obviously, my towel will do right?"

"Who cares about that! Just give me the nearest towel...?"

I look around...

Ah...my father's towel is there.

"Ain't there one?"

Nei-san takes that towel.

"No, that's...my father's..."

"You don't have to bother about the towel of absent people!"

Nei-san wets the towel with tap water...
She squeezed it and wiped the mirror.

"Either way, you don't have any spray to polish mirrors or glasses do you?"

"Ah, there's something here, but..."

There are several detergents lined up under the sink.
There's also a glass polish.

"Aren't all of them dusty? Since when have they been there?"

...Err

"...I remember that they're lined up here since elementary school"

Right.

The person who bought this spray for glass cleaning...

I can only think of Grandma.

The life in this house has stopped with Grandma's death.

"Thought so"

"...Sorry"

"That's fine. I'll just wipe it off strongly"

"Ah, I'll help out too"

I put my hand in stack with Nei-san's hand cleaning the mirror with wet towel.

"Un...Kei, put your strength on it. Let's go!"

...Goshigoshi

...Kyukyukyu

Changing the face of the towel, and wiping it multiple times.

The dirt that's accumulated for years...disappears.

"Look, it feels nice to have a clean mirror doesn't it?"

Yeah. Nei-san's bright face is reflected in the shiny mirror.

"Now, let's wash our hands!"

...But

"Hey, just how many years ago was this worn out soap"

The soap in the bathroom...is a withered pile of small pieces brought together.

"Ah...sorry. Normally, I don't have the habit of washing my hands in the washroom..."

I enter the bathroom from the washroom and took the soap.
This soap...looks good.

"That's no good, Kei. Be sure to wash your hands with soap with you come back from the outside. That's a promise with Oneechan, okay?!"

...Nei-san

"...What's wrong, Kei"

"No...I just thought that Grandma told me the same thing before..."

...In the end.

The only family to me was Grandma.

Both my father and mother...even if we're connected by blood, we weren't a family.

"Isn't that obvious?...We're family so we say that. My late mother often tells me that as well. Ever since I was a child"

Nei-san said while smiling

"Now, raise your hand. Oneechan will wash hands together...if you don't wash it properly you won't be popular with women!"

Nei-san's washing me?

"...Here"

Nei-san, slides the soap with wet hands and make bubbles.
Then...she puts it on my hand...

...Aah

Her long and white finger washes my hands.

...It feels shivery.

"Okay, let's clean the gap in between your fingers..."

Nei-san's fingers rub in between my fingers.

...Uuu

So it's such a lewd thing to have a woman wash my hand.

Nei-san's beside me...

Her beautiful face

There's sweat beads floating on her neck.

Even the shape of her big breast can be clearly seen from this angle.

"Okay, we're washing it off!"

Nei-san twists the faucet with foamy hands...

The flowing water soaks my hand.

...The water's chilly

Nei-san's hand washes away the bubbles from my hand gently

"Yeah...it's clean now!"

"...O-Onee-chan!"

I hug Nei-san unconsciously...

"What's up? Aroused?"

...I

"Ufufu...Look at the mirror, Kei's hugging me

I look at the mirror...

Nei-san and me are reflecte...

"I'm going to kiss Kei!"

Nei-san puts her lips on mine as she look at the mirror.

Her plump and soft lips.

Nei-san kisses me...and I look at her.

"...Kei doesn't look like me at all!"

"...What?"

"But that's what's so good though!"

...Hmm

What does she mean by that?

"I think I'm scared of Kei-chan"

"...Nei-san"

"Kei-chan and I are twins...we have the same face"

Nei-san in the mirror said, hugging me.

"And yet, Kei-chan's a boy...but his heart is too beautiful. Kei-chan is a very devout Christian...a kind boy"

And that person was raped by Cesario Viola.

"But, I...I'm really a bad girl! I can't help but do bad things"

"...Is that so?"

"That's right. I think my true nature was exposed by Kyouko-san and Sensei after coming to [Kuromori] I'm truly a bad girl...furthermore, I'm fine doing bad things. I'm having fun doing bad things..."

This delinquent girl with blonde hair and blue contacts...
Margo-san and her kept hunting thugs...

"When I was with Kei-chan...I thought I had to be like Kei-chan...his purity is too dazzling to my eyes so I don't want to be hated by Kei-chan..."

Nei-san keeps talking over the mirror

"But, I...am not Kei-chan"

She hugs me tightly

"I don't have to be like Kei-chan..."

"Oneechan...can just live as she wants"

I said...

"You sure?...Is it really okay to be a bad girl?"

"That's too late to ask. Aren't we members of a criminal organization?"

I've already made my resolve.
To live with her.

"I'm really, really, really a bad girl, so...I'm sure that I'll trouble Kei a lot"
"That's completely okay. If that's the way to be with my beloved Oneechan..."
"...Kei"

Nei-san kisses me again

"From now on...we're going to laugh all the time. Let's have a lot of fun"
"...Isn't that obvious?"
"Aha...what should I do?"

Nei-san smiles.

"Is this okay? It's okay for me to expose everything to Kei, right?!"

"...You can show me everything!"

...Nei-san

"Hey, I'm going to remove my contact lenses"

Saying so...Nei-san removes the blue colored contact lenses from her eyes...
She puts it on the side of the sink

"Ufufu...so Kei makes that kind of face too"

"...Huh?"

"I'm joking...this lens doesn't have a degree, my vision doesn't change. It's just that the world had always been blueish all this time..."

Nei-san's true eye color is dark brown.

"Yeah...just having different eye color, the atmosphere changes"

From the glamorous blonde hair blue eyes...to the moist, adult atmosphere.
No...the real Nei-san, Yasuko-san is originally a kind person.

"This is me...take a look at me more"

Saying that, Nei-san...

She opens the button of the front of her blouse...

Black Bra.

She opens the front hook.

Her huge breast spills out.

Her pink nipples shake.

"Kei...lick it"

I suck on Nei-san's nipple.

I roll around my tongue...

"Ahn...Kei is licking my breast..."

Nei-san mutters as she look at her own reflection in the mirror.

"...I...I..."

...Nei-san

"I want to do lewd things with Kei. A lot of it..."

I suck both her nipples as I rub her big breast with my hand.

"Doing lewd things is not a good thing isn't it?"

Nei-san's voice echoes in my ear...

"I feel like I'm going to become a very bad girl if I have sex..."

...I

"Make me a bad girl. Okay...Kei...!"

"Sure. Let's both do bad things!"

I want the two of us to love while feeling the sense of immorality and guilt.

"Ahn...I'm really glad that Kei doesn't look like Kei-chan... Kei is Kei. Mine..."

"...A bad boy friend?"

"A partner, forever. The most important person in the world. I love you...I love you Kei"

"...Oneechan"

"Sorry for being a perverted Oneechan who loves her brother"

"I'm also a pervert...I love Oneechan after all..."

"...Kei!"

We hug each other's body in front of the mirror...

"...Let out your penis"

"...What?"

"Didn't you promise me earlier?...I want to see Kei touching himself"

...I

I loosen my belt and exposed my penis.

"...Wow. It's already big."

"It's because Oneechan keeps saying lewd things"

"Now...touch yourself"

I stroke my own dick

"Do you always do it like this...?"

I'm masturbating in front of a mirror.

Nei-san watches it with passionate eyes.

"That's right. I always do it like this"

"...While thinking about Yukino-san?"

"I can't think of anyone but Oneechan now. Oneechan is in front of me...!"

"That's right, I'm the only one here...!"

Nei-san turns around me and hugs me from behind.
She licks my ears.

"What do you think? Is it embarrassing to masturbate in front of your Oneechan?"

"...It is"

"You can't show this to anyone else but Oneechan okay?"

"...Yeah"

"You can't show this to Misuzu-san, Megumi-chan...Mana-chan, Michi-san, Katsuko-san nor Nagisa-san.... Just Oneechan..."

"Okay. I won't show masturbation to anyone but Oneechan"

"Good boy...Kei"

Nei-san's hand reaches for my penis.

"Oneechan will be touching this..."

...Ah

Her white fingers touches my glans.

"Does this feel good?"

"Yeah...Oneechan"

Nei-san moves her finger...mimicking my masturbation

"Kei...does it feel good?"

"It feels good, Oneechan"

"Look, Kei look at the mirror...you look you feel so good!"

Me in the mirror...

I can feel Nei-san's strokes.

Nei-san from behind has her breasts exposed...she's aroused, her face is bright red.

"Which one feels better...me or your hand?"

"Oneechan's hand feel way better...!"

"Is that so? Then, I'll do it anytime you want...just say it"

"...Okay"

"I'll also tell you when I want to"

...What?

"Kei...touch Oneechan's pussy..."

...Oh

I crawl my finger in Nei-san's crotch.

I touch her secret part from the top of her clothes.

"Aaahn...it's true. It feels way better than touching it myself...!"

Touching our most sensitive parts...we kept playing with each other.
Nei-san's crotch has warm liquid oozing out.

"Hey, Kei..."

"What, Oneechan..."

"Let's return to the room. To Kei's sofa..."

My sofa?

"Let's do even more bad things on Kei's sofa. I want to do bad things with Kei...!"

...Me too

My erection's already about to explode.



The two of us return to the living room half naked.
Snuggling our bodies...we hug and kiss each other over and over again.

"Kei, strip me...I'm going to strip off Kei too"

Like lovebirds...

We take off each other's clothes while standing.

Our skin touches the outside air.

"Oneechan...I'm taking off your panties"

"...It's a bit embarrassing"

"But that's what's good right?"

"Ahn...amazing, I feel like I'm doing something bad"

I reach on Nei-san's black panty...and slowly pull them down.
Across her butt hill...through her white thighs, calf, thin ankles.
I pull out the panty one foot at a time.
Nei-san's slit is dripping with hot liquid.
Her thighs are wet.

"I'm going to take Kei's off too"

Nei-san pulls out the underwear that's half-off.
My erect penis is in front of Nei-san.

"So cute...*kiss*!"

Nei-san kisses the tip of my penis.

"That's not cute..."

My erection is violently angry.

"It's cute, it's Kei's thing after all..."

"It's Oneechan's"

"No. This is everyone's I won't claim it for myself. I'm the elder sister of my little sisters after all"

Nei-san puts herself in the family position

"But...I'm going to make it feel good now!"

Saying that, she stands on her knees...stroking my penis and licking the glans.
Her warm tongue licks around the glans.

"Ah, that feels good...!"

"Is that so? Then I'll do it more"

Nei-san looks up at me and smiled
The feeling of her red tongue rubbing my glans.
...Uuuu
...That feels good.

"Hey, Kei. Should we take photos?"

Nei-san said laughing.

"There's no need to force yourself. It's okay that only we just remember our sex"

"I'm not forcing it. I want it. I want to take photos of the situation now. I'll only show it to Kei...okay?"

"If that's what Oneechan wants..."

I take out the camera handed to me by Margo-san.
Nei-san takes the camera from me.

"Okay. Face this way"

...What?

I'm the subject?

"I want to record Kei's face right now. The naked Kei. And how Kei looks like on making Oneechan an adult from now on..."

Said Nei-san as she take several photos of me.
Somehow, it feels embarrassing to have me with my erect penis taken photos.

"What about Kei? Do you want to take photos of the naked me?"

If you say so...

"Then I'll take photos"

"...Okay"

Nei-san hands me the camera.
I capture Nei-san's completely naked and flushed from arousal skin...
Nei-san makes various poses.

"Okay, let's switch. I'm going to take more photos of Kei..."

This time, Nei-san orders me to do various poses.
I was photographed squeezing my own penis.
The up view of my penis...and even my anus.

"Here, take photos of me too..."

Nei-san sits down on the sofa and opens her legs.

"The place Kei's going to mess up later...take a look"

I open her closed virgin slit...

There's a fountain of love juice coming out...

Nei-san's insides are sparkling

Deep inside...I see a pink film

"Oneechan, spread it out"

"...Like this?"

Nei-san's hands open her slit.

I took photos of her unexplored secret part.

The up view too...

Nei-san's breasts, and her face can be seen clearly...her whole body as well.

Again and Again...

...Oooh

My lust is crawling inside me.

"Oneechan, I'm already..."

"Kei can't hold back anymore?"

"...Yeah"

Nei-san looks at me...

"Is it okay to stay like this?"

...What?

"Earlier, I bought some hair dye in the drugstore"

...Hair dye?

"Look...didn't I promise before that I'll return my hair to black when I'm going to give my virginity to Kei"

Speaking of which...

"Do you want to have sex with a black haired Oneechan? Or do you want to do me as the blonde haired Oneechan?"

...I

"Oneechan will do what Kei wants. My virginity is Kei's. No...Oneechan will only have sex with nobody but Kei...!"

Chapter 349. My Love

...Sitting on top of the sofa, Nei-san looks at me seriously.

"Which do you want...the blonde or the black haired me?"

...I

"Is there a difference between the two inside Oneechan?"

Nei-san looks down and answered.

"...The blonde is Nei...the black is Yasuko"

"Is that so?"

"That's right...I"

She looks at me with moist eyes.

"I...I've always fooled everyone. I was deceiving them..."

...Nei-san

"Kei, you know it already right? Natou Nei is a woman that doesn't exist. Nei, is my...No, it's a personality Kyouko-san made...I[want to be a strong person like Kyouko-san]adoring her, I acted this personality"

"...Acted?"

"That's right. It's an act, a play. It's a lie. It's all lies. This blonde hair and blue contact lens are make up for immersion in acting. The real me is different..."

Nei-san said...

"Then, what kind of person is the real Oneechan?"

"The real me...the old Yasuko, is quiet, dark, doesn't speak too much...she's a child who's always reading a book in the room. Hardly having any friends. If anything happens, Kei-chan comes to help..."

I smile at Nei-san.

"That's the past isn't it? The current Oneechan is different...!"

"...Kei?"

"What kind of person is Oneechan now?"

Nei-san thinks deeply.

"I don't know...I don't even know. I can no longer continue acting as[Natou Nei] I know that... But, I can't return to the former[Najima Yasuko]anymore. If I return to my old self...I'll only act as my old self. [The past me should be like this]..."

Nei-san exposes her honest heart.

"Therefore, I want Kei to decide...I'll become whatever Kei likes. I'll do anything to please Kei. I'll be the[Oneechan]Kei wishes for...!"

She's desperate on her own ways too.
Just like me...

"...Nei-san"

I stops the role play of[Oneechan and Kei]
I sit down next to Nei-san in the sofa.
I press my naked skin to Nei-san.

"...You see...I have learned from the experiences I had for these past few days"

I look at Nei-san from the side.

"...Yo-chan?"

Nei-san returns to[Nei]for now.
In order to unravel the confused yarn inside Nei-san...
We have to go back to when we first met, to[Nei-san and Yo-chan]

"People can't stay the same forever"
"...What?"
"They change. For better or for worse...people change as long as they keep living. They cannot be on the same place, same person all the time..."

I have seen a lot of people change.
Minaho-neesan...Katsuko-nee...Nagisa...
Megu...Mana...
Misuzu...Michi...
Reika, Seki-san...Jii-chan too.

Above all...me myself.

"As long as you're alive...you can't stop changing. I think"

I have a feeling.

"Therefore, Nei-san...to me, you'll always be Nei-san to my eyes. I don't think of wanting you to go back to the former Nei-san...I don't want you to be the Nei-san I hope for. Nei-san is always Nei-san after all..."

"...Me?"

"That's right. Nei-san always makes me excited. All this time, even now...you look the best at this moment"

"But...I don't understand myself well"

Now that the trauma of Cesario Viola has been taken care of...
Nei-san lost sight of herself.

"Also, the confused Nei-san now is also Nei-san. That Nei-san is also wonderful. I think it's amazingly cute"

"...I"

"You don't have to think what you have to do...what you have to be. It'll change either way...as long as you're alive, you'll change no matter what. Therefore...
Nei-san"

"...What?"

"Please tell me what's in Nei-san's heart right now"

"My heart?"

"What does Nei-san want to have with me? Please tell me what Nei-san really wishes for"

I look at Nei-san

"...I"

She speaks...but stops halfway.

"You can say anything you want. It's only the two of us here. Whatever you say...it'll be a secret to ourselves"

Margo-san said that Nei-san should have a secret.
I understand what it meant.

"Nei-san thinks[Who do I have to be?]too much"

"Yo-chan?"

"You're too much of a[good girl] Therefore...you're convinced that even Kei-san's tragedy, is all your fault"

"But...I wasn't able to do anything for Kei..."

"No...that's not it"

To me right now...everything's coming to light.

"It wasn't Nei-san's fault you were caught by Viola. The other party was a man from a criminal organization...you can't do anything about it. Then, Kei-san...Kei-san did his best because Nei-san was there. If he was alone, he would've been depressed and died halfway"

"But...Kei-chan"

"It wasn't Nei-san's fault that Kei-san died, is it?"

"...I"

"No...don't blame yourself for anything. If you do, that would be pitiful for the late Kei-san"

"...But"

"I think Kei-san wants Nei-san to live happily"

Tears spill out from Nei-san's eyes.

"Then...in order to open up the mind that's been closed to the inside after Kei-san's death... Kyouko-san let you play the funky girl called[Natou Nei]right?"

"That's right. [Nei]isn't me! I'm not like that...!"

Nei-san cries out.

I take Nei-san's hand and hug her.

I suck away the tears falling from her eyes.

"Kyouko-san wants Nei-san to make various relationships with people, even if it's a little...so she thought of making you play a bright and noisy girl"

"Yeah...I think so too"

Nei-san mutters.

"But, that's already done...I can no longer continue as[Nei]"

"Therefore...as told by Kyouko-san before, and now, you're letting me decide the next[character]you have to act?"

...Nei-san

"Yeah...I think so"

I rub Nei-san's back...her tension is released.

"Yo-chan said that he'll be the replacement to Kei-chan, my brother, but...Yo-chan is different from Kei-chan...I don't now what kind of Oneechan I should be..."

Seriously...

Her foundation is too serious.

No...she's too serious.

"...You're thinking[I have to do it]again"

"But...I'm really happy. Yo-chan promised to become my little brother. You said that you'll take over Kei-chan's family register. Thinking that it's okay to not separate from Yo-chan anymore...I'm so happy..."

Nei-san's words has no lies.

I know that.

...But

"Nei-san...tell me the truth"

"...Eh?"

"I can tell. Nei-san is being impatient...there's a gap in between your mind and words. What is it? Please tell me what's really inside Nei-san's heart"

"...I"

Nei-sa falters

"I'll be fine whatever you say. I like Nei-san. I'll do anything for Nei-san's sake. This feeling won't change"

"...Yo-chan"

"As expected, I can't be a replacement for Kei-san? Is it impossible to become Nei-san's brother? Don't think[Now that it has come to this it can't be helped]or[That's the only way]...Please tell me Nei-san's true feelings...!"

...Nei-san

"I...I"

"Please say it clearly. I'll accept it no matter what it is!"

I hold Nei-san's hand tightly

"...I'm feel my heart pounding too"

...What?

"You're always making my heart pound!"

Nei-san...me?

"I don't already know since when but...when I'm with you, I feel exited. My chest tightens when you're with me. When we were together at the hotel last night...my throbbing didn't stop. I feel like I can do anything because I was with you. Even when standing in front of Viola...my heart didn't break..."

...Nei-san

"Then...you killed Viola. You took revenge on the enemy of my family. I will no longer be tormented by the phantom of Viola anymore as long as I'm with you..."

This time...Nei-san holds my hand tightly.
She looks at me with serious eyes.

"I love Yo-chan! I look at you as a man not a brother. I love you. I love you. I love you so much!"

Nei-san hugs me.
She kisses my lips passionately over and over again.

"I love you...Yo-chan!"

...I

"Is it okay for me to be not your brother?"

"Because I've fallen for you! It's my first time coming to like someone like this since birth!"

Nei-san loves me???

"Even this morning...it was cool of you to calmly accept killing Viola. I thought that it was extremely lovely. But...You said that you'll be my brother...a replacement to Kei-chan..."

Eh?...

Was that choice wrong?

"I'm really happy. I understood that Yo-chan really cherish and care for me. I thought that I'm really happy to be loved. But...I don't want a[brother]...!"

...Nei-san

I thought so too.

Even if I convince my head that I'll be the brother...taking over Kei-san's family register...

My heart doesn't have the determination.

Therefore, I...

I only call Nei-san[Oneechan]in my mouth...

While I still call her[Nei-san]in my mind.

Even I, as a man...love her.

"Then...should we get married?"

"...Baka!"

Nei-san's angry.

But if that's what Nei-san wishes for then I...

"There's no way we can do that!"

"I like Nei-san...Nei-san also likes me, so..."

"No...there's other girls too..."

Tears spill from Nei-san's eyes again.

"I'm the Oneesan of[Kuromori] I don't want to quit that ever. Because, everyone in[Kuromori]are my precious[family]...!"

Nei-san's suffering.

"I can't take you away from my little sisters...I'll never do that...!"

...Yeah

I also can't throw away my family.

"Perhaps...I think that what you suggest is the best. You'll be my brother...and I, will love you as an elder sister. We can protect the family this way...we'll never be apart..."

Nei-san's thoughts are still...
Going to[I must do***]

"That's not good. That won't save Nei-san's heart at all..."
"...But, yo-chan"

I have another idea.
No...I see.
That's why Margo-san.
No, it's not just Margo-san.
Minaho-neesan and others too...
They just sent us out silently...

"Let's get married, Nei-san...without telling everyone else"

Nei-san's surprised.

"No, I think that I'll have to marry everyone. Of course, it won't be legal. But, I'll marry each of them. Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Megu and Misuzu...even Michi. They're no good unless they're with me. Mana might change her mind and marry another man so I won't do it right away"

Ruriko and Reika...would depend on the flow of the future.
If they want it then I will...if they don't then I won't.

"I'll marry Nei-san. However...others won't be told about it"

I made my decision.

"We'll be siblings in front of everyone else in the family. I'll call Nei-san[Oneechan] And since I'll take over Kei-san's family register as planned, please call me as[Kei]or[Yo-chan], whichever you like"

Nei-san's stunned.

"But...when we're alone, Nei-san is my[woman] Oh, Nei-san sounds strange. I'll call you[Nei]from now on. As a boyfriend, as a marriage partner. Of course, you'll give birth to my baby as well"

"...A secret to everyone?"

"Yeah, a secret. Only to us two..."

...Nei-san

"I feel sorry for everyone. To think we'll lie to them...!"

"It's fine. Nei...we're criminals"

I smile at Nei.

"Let's do bad things together!"

Nei's spine trembles.

"You want to do bad things don't you? Let's fool everyone. Forever"

Nei...

"...Our secret?"

"Yeah, it'll be a secret between the two of us forever...!"

I kiss Nei's nipple.

"...Ahn!"

"...It's okay, Nei. I'll be supporting you all the time...!"

...Nei looks at my face.

I smile at Nei.

...Before long.

"I got it..."

The cheerfulness comes back in Nei's eyes.

"I'll be your secret wife...!"

In reality...

Even if she's my sister or my wife...The[Kuromori]family won't mind it.

I already have more than one wife...everyone's convinced by it and they are in the family.

Even Nei...the young ones don't know that she's still a virgin...

They're aware that she's one of my women.

In the end...it's the matter of Nei's heart.

For Nei, brother and family are complicated and meaningful things.

Therefore, she needs to make a clear distinction between her brother and lover, but...

The others don't know about that.

Nei will continue to protect this secret with the sense of guilt.

Perhaps, the other family members watches over Nei's situation warmly.
Just like before...
Or rather...Margo-san and others will be having expectations.
They'll pretend to not notice for Nei...

"...Nei"

Looking at her like this...she's really a beauty.

"What?"

Nei-san looks at me.

"Nothing...I just want to call you"

I rub cheeks with this cute Nei.

"What's up?"

"I'm just happy. This beauty is my wife...Yeah, I'm really glad that you're my[wife]instead of an[elder sister]"

Mine...

Her mind and body...

"Ufufu...you're really a spoiled one!

Nei buries my face in her rich breasts gently.

"I may be your wife but I'm still older! Oneesan is still an Oneesan!"

"As expected...you also want to do[Oneechan play]"

"Eh, what's that?"

"A play. Let's do a forbidden sibling sex situation"

"Sure. It's a lover's game isn't it? I can do the[Elder sister role]or even the[Little sister role]!"

Is that so?

In the end, it's up to Nei-san's heart...

Now that her mind's stable by consenting to[secret wife]...

What's left is to accept everything later.

"But...for now"

Nei said.

"...I want to have sex as lovers!"

...yeah

"But, before that..."

"What?"

"I want to take photos of Nei again"

"...Huh?"

"Not as an[elder sister giving her virginity to her brother]but...as[my wife], I want to take photos of the current Nei"

Nei smiles.

"Sure...let's do it!"



The second nude photoshoot.

Her expression is completely different from earlier.

Nei earlier...had the sense of duty, or the heroic feeling.

The weight of[I have to do this]

The Nei now...is no longer the same.

Nei's smiling as I take photos of her.

A wide smile.

"I...somehow feel so free"

...Nei

"To think that it would be very pleasant to have your loved one be your lover!"

Nei's expression is natural from every angle.

"You see...I can expose my everything to you. Because, you'll accept it no matter what it is!"

Nei jumps on my body.

"Ufufu! Do you love me?"

"Yeah, I do"

"Me tooooo! I love you, love love, chu!"

Nei-san pours down kisses on me.

"Hug me tight!"

"Nei's such a spoiled girl"

"That's right. We're the spoiled duo!"

I lay the camera on the side and hug Nei's body.
On top of my sofa.

"This sofa smells like wet dogs in the rain!"

"...Smell?"

"It's your smell right?...You've masturbated a lot in here right?"

"That's right When father was gone, every night..."

"Hmm, like this?"

Nei strokes my penis.

"Yeah...that's right"

"Masturbating is banned from now on. If you want to do it then just tell me,
Okay?"

"...Yeah"

"I won't masturbate anymore too. If I want to do it then I'll do it with you!"

Ufufufu, Nei laughs...

"How about this?"

Nei kneads my glans with her thumb and forefinger...

"T-That feels good"

"I've been watching how the ladies of the mansion do it while working in the
mansion so I know a lot of methods!"

Nei's finger slips from my balls to my anus...

"...That also feels good"

"I'm glad"

"...About what?"

"I'm making you feel good!"

"That's right. Nei feels good"

"...So cute. Ufu, I'll make you even cuter!"

Nei kisses me...tangles our tongue.
Then, she spits on her hand...and strokes my penis.

"This feels way better right? It's sticky"
"Aah...Nei"
"Touch my body as you want too"

I massage Nei's breasts...
I also enjoy feeling her thighs...
Then...her hot wet crotch...

"Do it gently...there...I'm still a virgin"
"...I know"

I touch the entrance gently
"Yeah. That's good! I love that...I love it!
The two of us tangle in the sofa naked...

"I never imagined having sex in here"
"But, we're doing it! In the sofa you've been masturbating alone...!"

Nei stares at me smiling.

"...Make me a woman"

...Nei

"...as your woman...!"

I'm breaking her virginity...

"Sorry...I made you wait"

"You don't have to mind it"

"...Stand up"

I stand up and face the sofa.
Nei...spreads her legs wide in front of me.
Her secret part becomes exposed.

"It's okay...come!"

Chapter 350. Nei's Oath (Virgin Break)

...Once again, I look at Nei.
She's truly a perfect figure coming out of a European art photo.
Big breasts, tight waist...
The slim and richness is distributed in harmony.
Then...her beautiful face.
Her big eyes and noble face.
She looks like the beauty God born from a sea bubble...

"...Nei"
"What?"

Nei smiles at me.
She's looking at me
Me...as her subject of love.

"...Nei's beautiful"
"That's not true"
"No...I think you're the most beautiful in the world"
"...Thanks"

Such a beauty...was ignored by Cesario Viola who's gay.
For him to violate Kei-san, her twin...she was used only as a tool to hurt Kei-san's heart...
Nei's beauty was treated as worthless.
That is Nei's complex.
In order for her to regain her value as a woman...
Nei tried to give her chastity to her brother.
But, Kei-san...a devout Christian rejected Nei's offer.
...Gently, with love.
But, Nei was further distorted...
With Kei-san's unfortunate death...she has become a woman who has never had a normal romance

"I'm the one who should thank you"

"...Eh?"

"To think that such a beautiful woman is my wife. I'm so happy"

"...Dear"

Saying that, Nei-san laughs.

"Does it feel weird calling you[dear]? That's so unlike me?"

Nei said.

"Hm...Nei has the somewhat disappointing wife that's older than her husband I guess?"

"True...it's not like me to be so meek"

Saying[like me]

Finally, the[Nei]comes out from[Yasuko]

Now, at this moment...Nei is becoming[My Nei]...

"...Yo-chan"

Nei calls me.

"For me, you'll be the same Yo-chan. Can I call you Yo-chan?"

"Sure. I'll still call you Nei though"

"Yeah. That's fine"

Nei smiles.

We went around and returned to the start.

No...that's wrong.

The[Yo-chan before]has a wall in her heart for intimacy, but...

The[Yo-chan]now has no more walls.

We've become a couple.

"I'll be calling you that way forever...even when I became a mother, even when in front of our grandchildren...I'll keep calling you Yo-chan"

"So you intend to live long"

"Isn't that obvious? We're going to be happy for the missing times until now!"

"...True"

"You see...!"

Nei holds my hand.

"...Let's pinky swear"

"Huh?"

"Right now...we're both naked...we don't have anything... At least, a pinky swear"

"...Sure"

Our pinky fingers tangle.

"Then...what kind of promise we should make? I'll swear anything if it's for Nei..."

"I'm the one who'll make an oath...!"

Then, Nei said.

"...In sickness and in health, in loneliness and in happiness...what's the remaining parts again? Anyway, whatever happens, as long as I keep on living, I'll love, respect, comfort, help, devote, and serve Yo-chan...!"

...Nei

"I swear too...Nei"

"Yeah...Yo-chan"

We kiss while our fingers twined.

We kiss again and again...

"Afterwards...let's travel just the two of us without telling everyone"

I said.

"Then...let's have a wedding ceremony on a church somewhere far away"

"I don't mind either way. That's just ceremonies. If we want to make lifetime oath, then do it now...!"

"I want to see Nei in wedding dress though!"

Nei laughs.

"There's wedding dress in the mansion so I can wear it anytime. We can even have it every night"

"Those are used on Shirasaka Sousuke's perverted plays"

That's right...Minaho-neesan made Yukino wear those.

A prostitute who's raped wearing a wedding dress...will have their hopes of

happy marriage shattered.

"Therefore, I want to wear those. I want to dispel the sorrow of the seniors in the mansion even for a bit. By having us happy..."

Nei is also a woman who lost her way and got into the mansion.
She didn't become a prostitute...but she saw the tragedy of the women in the mansion

"That's fine but still...I want to see Nei-san as a bride in the church. With just the two of us"

"Let's see, if we're going to a trip with just the two of us...then let's think about it! There's travelling options you see! Hmm...what about the islands on the south?"

"Yeah. That's good. The blue skies and the glowing sea...Nei-san in white wedding dress walking in the church"

"Of course Yo-chan's there too!"

"Well of course...it's our wedding"

"Yo-chan...I love you!"

Nei jumps to hug me!
On top of the worn out sofa...
We hug and hold each other's naked body.

"...It's about time...for me to be Yo-chan's bride"
"...Yeah"

I put Nei on the sofa.
Letting her stick her waist out...

"Spread your legs wider"
"Like this?"

Nei's pussy is completely ready
Her virgin slit is opened slightly...dripping love nectar.

"...It's a bit scary"
"It's fine. It'll be fine"

I push my face to Nei's secret part.

"...I'm licking it"

"Eh?"

"I want to know Nei's taste"

"O...Okay. Please...please be gentle"

My tongue licks her secret part.

Nei's taste...is sour.

I roll my tongue on her sensitive parts.

"Aaaaah...It feels good!"

Nei shivers...

I raise my face...then crawl from inside her thighs to her cute navel.

"...Y-Yo-chan!"

"What's up?"

"It feels better than doing it myself!"

"Then, let's do it everyday?"

"Let's do! I want to!"

Nei's obedient to her lust.

That's also unbearably cute.

"...Nei, I'm already"

"Want to put it in? There's no need for me to lick it?"

"That's for next time...I want to be inside Nei as fast as possible!"

I can no longer hold back.

Nei closed her eyes...put strength in her body and spread her legs.

"Un...okay"

I hug Nei and lick behind her ears.

"...Ahn!"

With her erogenous zone licked...Nei's body tension loosens.

"If you're that tense I can't put it in...relax"

"U...Un"

Nei has seen other people have sex a lot but...

She's a virgin.

I have to lead this...

"Open your eyes and look at me"

Nei opens her eyes.

What beautiful eyes...

Her hair is still blonde but...her eyes has no fake blue contact lens.

Her dark brown pupils look straight at me.

"...I love you, Nei"

Hearing that...Nei spits out a sigh.

The stiffness of her body's also loosened...

I rub Nei's body as if massaging it gently

"Nei...you're so soft and warm"

Her arms...neck...rich breasts...thin waist...thighs...I touch them all

"Now...loosen up"

"Un...Yo-chan"

Nei entrusts her whole body to me.

Nei and I look at each other's eyes...my erect penis meets Nei's secret part

I can already do this much even without looking at the junction directly.,

My glans hits a warm and wet part.

"...Hi"

Nei's frightened...

"Don't be scared...it'll be fine"

Pushing out the overflowing love nectar...the glans gradually gets buried inside Nei...

"Y-Yo-chan...I...!"

I firmly grasp Nei's shoulder.

Nei also grabs my arms tightly

"Aahn...O-Ouch! It's tearing!"

...My glans is touching the wall.

This wall of meat is thin and easy to break.

I already know that...

"...Is this okay, Nei?"

"...It's okay, make me yours!"

Nei's wet eyes look at me...!

"Here I go...Nei!!!"

...Zuzu!

My glans enters the virgin land.

I destroyed her chastity...!

"...Gyaa! It hurtssss!!!"

Tears spill out from Nei's eyes.

It must've really hurt.

But, I can't stop here...

"It's broken, Yo-chan torn it...!"

"Not yet...there's still more where it came from!"

I shout as we stare at each other.

"Only half of it is inside"

But...Nei's virgin vagina is narrow.

It's clamping my penis tight.

The dampness is hot...

It feels like half of my penis is soaked in hot springs.

I decided to wait until Nei's pain is eased.

Nei breathes deeply.

There's beads of sweat floating on her forehead.

"...Nei, are you okay?"

"U-Un...for the time being yes"

Her huge breast moves up and down on each breath. Her pink nipples are shaking.

"This is just half?"

"Yeah, this only half...hold on, Nei!"

"If you put in so much, you'll penetrate my body!"

Nei who's virginity is just broken...seems to feel my penis multiple times larger than the real thing.

But...Sorry, Nei.

I honestly want to push to the root inside Nei!

"That's not true! It's perfectly fit for Nei's inside!"

"Lies! I'm already full!"

"It'll be fine...It'll all come inside Nei!"

"...Really?"

"Isn't that obvious?! If it's me and Nei, it should have the perfect size! God should've designed it that way!"

I'm messing up with logic.

"Un! That's true! That's absolute!"

Nei's convinced though she's making a pained face.

"Sure! Yo-chan! Pierce me with your all! I'll endure it!"

But...contrary to her words, Nei puts strength in her body.

If I force it in this state...it won't be good for Nei's body.

...Err

Oh right.

"Nei...match with my breathing. I'll also match with Nei..."

I try out the method I learned from Michi.

"...Like this?"

Suu, Haa...Suu, Haa...

The two of us match our breathing.

While looking at each other's eyes...

While our genitals are still connected...

As we breathe together...Nei's body relaxes...

"Yo-chan...you see"

Nei said...

"I don't think we should do[Suu haa]but [Suu Suu Haa]instead"

"...Is that so?"

"Yeah, that's what they do on TV"

...???

Do they teach how to breath when having virgin sex on TV?

"Ah, no no...what they were doing on TV was breathing method when constipating"

...Constipating?

"In[Suu Suu Haa]whenever you[Haa], your hip muscle relaxes..."

"No, but...huh?"

I don't know that.

"You don't know? The muscles in the butt and the woman's hole are connected. It's shaped like the number 8. Therefore, if the butt is loosened, the girl's hole should also relax...!"

Err...

What do you mean the muscle looks like [八]?

I don't get it.

"Anyway, let's try it. It's[Suu Suu Haa] Then, when you think that my body is loose...push it through when we go[Haa]! Okay?!"

"S-Sure"

I don't get it but...

Let's just do as Nei says.

"Let's go...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

"...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

"...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

"...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

While looking at each other's serious face...

We breathe together.

My forehead's sweating too.

Nei's eyes are completely moist.

Yeah...her body's quite relaxed now.

"...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

"...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

"...Suu, Suu, Haa...!"

...Now!!!

I pierce my waist deep!!

"...Iyaaaaaaaaa!!!"

I broke through all barriers...

My penis is completely inside Nei.

Our abdomen's completely overlapping.

The glans is touching the uterus.

"It's in! It's all in...Nei!"

I shouted unconsciously

"...Y-Yeah"

Nei touches the connecting part.

"It's true...it's all in"

"Yeah, it's completely perfect inside Nei!"

"As expected, God made us to have sex with each other!"

"Isn't that obvious...?!"

Then...Nei

Looks to my face.

And laughed out.

"...What's wrong, Nei?"

Nei...

"Yo-chan's the best!"

"...Eh?"

"You're so hardworking, honest...but, amazingly stupid, amazingly kind...!"

"Huh...what do you mean?"

"I'm really glad that I met Yo-chan...!"

Nei sheds tears as she look at me.

"What's wrong...does it hurt?"

"Idiot!...I'm just happy!"

Then, she opens her arms widely.

"Hug me"

"...Sure"

I hug Nei's body while keeping our hips joined.

"I love you so much...Yo-chan"

...Nei

"I'll definitely make you happy...I'll treasure you...!"

"I already am...I'm also treasured!"

Saying that...Nei kisses me.

"Now, move...I'm already fine"

"...Really? If it hurts then say it...I'm going to pull out"

"I won't say that...please give it to me"

"...Eh?"

"Yo-chan's baby seed...I want you to spread it in my womb"

...I

"Then, I'll move slowly..."

I move my waist slowly...

"...Ah"

"Does it hurt?"

"It's okay if it does...This pain is also Yo-chan's love. I'm enjoying this even if it hurts"

...Nei

"Yo-chan, think of only enjoying my body...does Yo-chan want to cum inside me? Do you want to make me a Mama?"

"...I-I do"

"Think of only that...let out all of Yo-chan's desires to me...please"

...I ask for Nei's tongue.

Our tongues twine.

I massage her breast...rub her pointed nipple.

Slowly piston my waist.

Nei's love juice is abundant...

I feel like my penis is melting inside her narrow vagina.

"...Nei...Nei...Nei!"

"It's Suu, Suu, Haa...Yo-chan"

Nei-said as I fuck her.

"Breathe, Suu Suu Haa...and hug me!"

...Suu, Suu, Haa...!

...Suu, Suu, Haa...

I push in my waist with the[Haa]timing

I knock into her plump uterus...

"Ah...Aaah...Aaaaaah..."

Nei puts her arms around my back and hugs me tightly.

As expected, it hurts, she must be in pain.

Her nails scratch my back from time to time...

I endure the pain...

"...Nei...Nei...I'm already...!"

"...Letting it out?"

Nei looks at me with an enduring expression

"Yeah...I'm about to leak"

"Sure...leak it all out...release it all inside me...!"

...Aaaaaaaa

"...C-Cumming...Nei! Nei...Nei!"

"...Yo-chan"

"...N-Nei...I love you!!!"

...Dokuku!

...Doku!

...Dokudokudoku!

"...Aaah, so hot! It's coming out! Yo-chan! I love you too! I love youuuuuuu!!!!"

I ejaculate inside Nei's womb as we hug each other.

Nei accepts my semen.

Nei looks at my face as I ejaculate.

I look at Nei's impregnated face.

...I'm happy.

...We're, happy.

...Aaah

My ejaculation doesn't stop...



After I let out everything...my body feels weak.

"Thanks for the hard work!...Are you okay?"

Nei forced a smile.

"Somehow... I feel like I ejaculated even my soul"

"Yeah...I got your soul in my womb!"

Nei laughs.

"...Yo-chan"

"What, Nei?"

"Ufufu...I just wanted to call your name"

Saying that, Nei kisses my lips.

"Yo-chan, Yo-chan, my Yo-chan~!!"

She rubs her cheeks on my face.

"Is it okay for me to be this happy?"

"It's fine. Become even more happier"

"Umu, I will. Right, Yo-chan!!!"

Nei laughs.

"Ah, of course Yo-chan's going to make other girls happy too. I'll let everyone before me"

"...Eh?"

"In exchange...when we have sex, it'll only be the two of us. Let's take plenty of time together. Look, we're keeping it a secret that I'm your wife to everyone"

Nei's obsessed on being my[secret wif]

If Nei's fine with that, then...

No, Nei wishes for the Kurormori family's coexistence...

...So that's the only way.

"Ah, but, I might barge in to other girl's sex with the[Oneechan character]"

"Sure. Mana wants to have sex together with Nei"

"I want to do it with Misuzu-san. I want to have her purr while doing it with Yo-chan"

Nei said.

"Misuzu-san is the only one who doesn't recognize me as an [Oneechan] Well, we're of the same grade but I'm a repeater"

True...

Both of them are in second year high school, but...

Nei's one year older.

"I'll have to make her understand who's the[Oneechan] If I hold down Misuzu-san, I'll be able to hold down those strange girls too...Kishishishi"

Nei's having fun with the family

"Then...you don't need to call Misuzu with a[San]right?"

I said.

"...True. I won't call her Misuzu-san nor Mi-chan...I'll be calling her[Misuzu]from now on"

Yeah...the walls in the heart must be broken.

"Somehow, I'm looking forward to it! Ufufu...ouch!"

Nei tries to get up...and screamed.

"...Are you okay?"

I look at the connecting part...

...I'm surprised.

Our crotch is red with Nei's virgin blood.

"Wow...Sorry...I was absorbed in having sex...!"

I try to separate our bodies in a hurry.

"No, wait...don't pull out yet"

Even if you tell me that...

If you bleed this much, it'll be painful.

I hurriedly pull out my half-erect penis.

As soon as I pulled out from the vagina...

White semen and red virgin blood comes down.

"Aahn, I want to take photos while we're still connected though...!"

Nei said.

"No, you don't have to take such painful photos"

"I want it though...it's a commemorative photo of my loss of virginity! I wanted to look at it when we're old...!"

...Err

"Then, let's take photos of the aftermath. Yo-chan, capture it"

Nei gives the camera to me.

"Let's record our sex next time. Yeah...true. Sex recordings doesn't have to be bloody"

Geez...I take the camera.

"Okay, take photos of me"

The naked Nei.

Nei who just lost her virginity.

Nei's virgin blood and semen overflows from the slit...she looks so happy

...Yeah

I certainly want to preserve this happy appearance.

"Then, I'm taking photos"

I push the shutter.

Again and again...

"Should I go M and make a double peace?"

Nei said laughing.

"That's not necessary"

"True, if it's too flashy then it doesn't feel like I just lost my virginity"

Nei laughs loud

"Yeah...let's have that kind of sex next time. Oh right, I'll make Misuzu do[Ahegao Double Peace] Yup yup, of course I'll take photos of it too... Uhiihihi!"

Up until now...the seniors of the[family], Margo-san, Nagisa, Katsuko-nee are all kind ladies

Even Minaho-neesan, she may be cruel with her enemies but she's infinitely kind to her family.

But, the new Nei...

The Nei until now had been making walls in her heart until now...so she's not deeply involved with the younger group but...

This funky and mischievous lady...is amazing I think.

Misuzu...Megu...Mana...Ruriko...

I'm sure that she'll make fun of everyone...surprise...and even make them go round and round...

Then, they'll have fun and happiness.

"Oneechan will do her best !"

A wonderful and lovely[Oneechan]is born here.

Chapter 351. Sweet Life (Dolce Vita)

Translator: Pun

Editor: Blaze

We head to the bath naked.

Anyway, we have to wash away the semen and virgin blood away from our crotch.

"Wait, the hot water should be ready soon"

Fortunately, the gas isn't cut off yet.

It seems that there's still some money remaining from father's bank debit.

"Here, it's hot water"

I kneel in front of Nei and pour warm water starting from her feet.

If I just pour in the water right away, she'll be surprised.

Slowly raising the shower head from the toe above.

Then...to her secret part.

"...Uu"

"As expected, it stings?"

Her hymen was torn and bleeding...

It should have a wound.

"No, I'm fine."

Nei smiles at me from above.

"As expected you're so kind! Yo-chan...Yeah, I got a good husband! ahahaha"

Nei laughs loudly as I pour hot water on her.

"I'll be washing Yo-chan too!"

Saying so, Nei takes the shower from me and face it to my crotch.

"Have to wash the under of your penis too"

Nei lifts my penis with her fingers and pours hot water on the back side.

"If you do it like that then it'll stand up again"

"That's okay, either way, Yo-chan can't get satisfied with only one ejaculation anyway!"

...Nei?

"I've been watching Yo-chan's sex all this time!"

Speaking of which...she did watch the recording of my first rape with Yukino.

"...But"

Nei's bleeding is bad.

We better stop for today.

"Even though Michi-chan got two consecutive rounds..."

"Women have different constitutions so it can't be helped"

"I'm supposed to be more mature than her though"

True, Michi's petite...and Nei has the proportions of an adult.

But, that doesn't necessarily mean that the maturity of their genital is the same.

Or rather...Michi's a masochist.

She said that she likes the pain.

"You're okay with my mouth then?"

Nei smiled.

"Instead of that, touch it...I want to cum from Nei's hand"

Nei's white and thin fingers.

"Un, sure! But I'll drink it on the end"

"You sure?"

"I mean, I want to drink it. It's Yo-chan's semen after all. I want to absorb everything in my body!"

I fix the shower on the wall.

While taking warm splashes of water from above...

Nei's sits on the tile and rests her back on the wall.

Stretching out her legs...

"Un, then I'm touching it"

Nei caresses my penis with her right hand.
Her left arm is hugging my body tightly.
This 18 year old glamorous body is pressed against me.

"Yo-chan, touch my body as you like"
"Rather than that...I want to kiss Nei"
"...Sure"

I kiss Nei as she plays with my penis.
Our tongues twine...sucking each other.
Oh, my penis is getting even more erect...

"Amazing. It's already big and hard...ufufu. I'll be serving it then. My dear,
Ahn!"
"...Nei...Nei"
"What...is there anything wrong?"
"I love you...I love you"
"Me too...Yo-chaaan!"

Nei's hand strokes my hard dick.

"More, like this...!"

I put my hand on top of Nei's...and teach her how to stroke my erect penis.

"...Like this?"
"Yes. It's okay to put strength on it"
"Like this?"
"Yeah, that feels good"
"...Just tell me what you want me to do. Anything that would make Yo-chan feel
good. I will be serving you from now on till the end of time!"
"...Nei"
"I love love...loooove you!"

Oh...that feels good.
I massage Nei's breasts.
Pinch her nipples.

"Nei's breasts feel good"
"You can touch it as much as you want...do as you want Yo-chan"

"...Yeah, I, I...Nei"

"What's up?"

"I'm about to cum already"

Nei smiles.

"You don't have to hold back...let it all out"

"Aaaaah...I, I"

Grabbing Nei's hand from above, I move up and down violently.

The passionate rhythm is engraved.

It's about to explode!

"Cumming...cumming...I'm cumming, Nei!"

"Wait...I'm going to suck it off!"

Nei bends herself before me...

She holds the glans...

My penis is inside Nei's warm mouth.

Ooh...the feeling of her lips is amazing...!

"...Cum! Cumming!...Nei!!!!"

I let it all out inside Nei's mouth...

As I keep shouting her name...

"Aaaah...it's coming out...It's not stopping!"

While my whole body twitches...I release it until the last drop.

Nei received all of my semen...

Then she released my penis from her lips.

She smiled at me...

Opened her mouth widely towards me...

Behind Nei's beautiful white teeth...is my semen appearing on top of her pink tongue.

Nei closes her mouth again...mixed the sperm in her mouth with saliva, then swallowed it all.

"Uha...Katsun said that semen tastes bitter, and she's right!"

Then, she gargled with hot water from the shower.

*Gargle...*Spit*!*

"...But, I like it! It's Yo-chan's semen after all!"

...Nei

I feel her irresistible love...

I hug Nei tightly

"Hm...what's wrong? You want to be spoiled?"

"Yeah...I want to be spoiled by Nei!"

I push my face on Nei's chest.

"Umu, it's good you're honest! Be spoiled by Oneechan a lot!"

Nei gently hugs me

"I'm also gonna get spoiled by Yo-chan!"

Rubbing her cheeks against mine...

"...Nei, Nei, Nei"

For some reason...tears come out

"...Yo-chan?"

"I don't get it but...I"

Nei pats my head.

"You've always worked your hardest on everything. Yo-chan..."

"...I wonder"

"You did. It's fine if it's in front of me...you can cry, scream. I'll be accepting whatever Yo-chan does"

"...Nei"

I cling to Nei.

"Right...Yo-chan's the one who had it worst. You're shouldering everyone's future on your own...!"

...I

"Yo-chan's too kind of a boy. Knowing that everyone's thirsty, you go all out to hydrate them. Without regards to your own capacity..."

"...I'm an idiot. Even though I'm weak and really stupid"

"It's fine. Yo-chan can be like that"

Nei kisses me.

"Besides, it's already okay. Yo-chan has me"

"...Nei"

"We're going to protect the[family]together! Our[family]...!"

Nei's kind smile...

Saves my heart.

I'm no longer alone.

In the[family]...she's my[sister]...and my wife.

"...I love you. I love you"

"I love you too"

We exchanged passionate kisses once again...



At the dressing room...we wipe each other's bodies with the bath towel.
There's only one bath towel I use so...

"Hey...should I go and make my hair black?"

Nei said as I wipe her beautiful back.

"That's okay but...I don't mind it either way"

I answered honestly.

"But look...I think it's most effective to appeal that I've changed that way!"

...Effective?!

"Up until now...when I needed to play the[bad girl Nei-chan]character, I wear a blonde wig. But look...isn't it better to have Yo-chan's chaste wife to have black hair?"

Nei laughs.

It seems that she's planning something inside her head again

"Or could it be that Yo-chan doesn't like me having black hair?"

...No

With the blue contacts and blonde hair...Nei's beauty was offset by the flashiness so there's an image fixed with it but.

If she goes back to black hair...that'll make her an outrageous beauty. Nei's original beauty would stand out.

"...If you turn your hair black, I feel like you're going to leave me for other guys"

"That won't happen. I'm already yours. If you want, should I walk with a[sold] posted on my back?"

Nei laughs.

"Have some confidence...I'll never leave Yo-chan!"

Then, she kissed me.

Nei loves kisses and physical contact.

Of course, I love it too but...

"Yeah...you're right"

"Yo-chan will protect me so I won't follow strange men, right?"

"...Yeah"

I swore from my heart.

"Then it's fine. I'll do my best to be as beautiful as possible...for you"

Nei kisses me again...

Nei also asks kisses from me.

"Then, what about it? Should we dye it now?"

Nei said that she bought hair dye from the drug store earlier.

"Let's not do it right away...I just thought that I wanted to have sex with Yo-chan in my black hair"

"...Eh?"

"It's quite hard to dye one's hair at home. It might become uneven... I'm already deflowered. I'll just have my hair dyed black in a shop. Let's go to Yuuka-san's beauty salon later"

Yuuka-san...is a former prostitute from the mansion who runs a salon now.

"But before that...Ikeda-sensei first. We need to have an examination just in case"

"True"

"Should I take a pill? When do you want me pregnant?"

...Err

"I want Nei to also enjoy the high school life until graduation"

"Okay. Then I'll take the pills!"

Nei smiles convinced.

"...So, just to confirm...Yo-chan will take over Kei-chan's family register right?"

"Yeah, I've already asked Minaho-neesan about that"

"But...I think that Yo-chan should have the Yoshida house's family register too. Having two registers along with Kei-chan. I'm also going to take back the Najima Yasuko's register but I'll leave the fake Canadian passport as it is"

"Why?"

"...[Kuromori]house is a criminal organization I think that we should use everything we can"

True...that might be the case.

Yoshida's name too...it's better to wait for some opportunity to use it than throw it away.

"Then...we'll stay as siblings when it comes to Sensei and Maru-chan! It's a secret that we're actually a[married couple]in reality!"

The naming returned to[Maru-chan]

The previous[Nei]seems to have stabilized, integrated with the current[Nei]

"Therefore...I'll call you as[Kei]in front of Maru-chan. We have to make them think that we have that[sibling]relationship!"

Nei happily makes plans.

"When I call you[Kei]call me[Oneechan]! Okay??!"

"...Okay"

"There there. When everyone else is present...I'll call you[Yo-chan]like before. What would Yo-chan call me then?"

...Err

"It feels strange to call you[Nei-san]like before"

"Yeah...we don't need the[san]anymore"

That said...it's bad to call her just[Nei]

"Then, I'll call you[Nee-san] Then, they won't be able to distinguish the[Nei-san]from[Nee-san]for an instant"

"That's a naisu aidea! Yo-chan"

Nei laughs.

"Then, just to confirm. In front of Maru-chan and Sensei, it'll be[Kei]and[Oneechan]...in front of other girls,[Yo-chan]and[Nee-san] When we're alone..."

"...[Yo-chan]and[Nei]"

"That's a promise...pinky swear!"

"Yeah"

We twine our fingers again.

"...Yo-chan, my Yo-chan"

"...Nei. My Nei"

"Ufufu...I love you!"

We kissed each other again.

We repeat kissing like breathing...



We return to the living room naked.

The two people in their bath towel...sits on the sofa.

Then...I opened the drink we bought from the store earlier.

"Yo-chan...open your mouth"

We exchange drinks mouth to mouth.

"Ufufu...I'm so happy"

Nei laughs.

"I'm the happiest when I'm with Yo-chan"

Nei makes a silly noise.

"...What's that?"

"Ah...Yo-chan doesn't get it?"

I don't get it but...I'm happy

I kissed Nei again.

"Geez, Yo-chan's a kiss lover!"

"Nei too"

"What I love is Yo-chan!"

Nei returns a kiss to me.

"Should we bring this sofa? It's just perfect for the two of us to flirt on!"

"...I've been sleeping on this alone until now though"

"Isn't that what's good about it?! Ah, but, I want this sofa to be exclusive to me.

Should I put it in my room? We can't put it on the Maserati today though.

There's no choice but to pick it up with Maru-chan's white van"

Nei creates even more plans

"And then...after taking the sofa. Let's burn this house"

"...Nei"

Nei had an arson habit.

"This should be burned... The air is too stagnant"

"...But"

"Do you have a regret?"

"Yeah...I have memories with grandma here...besides"

"Besides?"

"If we burn this house...the fire would spread in the neighborhood. The other house is only one block wall away"

"I see...we can't get the neighbors involved, yeah"

"In addition, we haven't paid fees on the neighborhood association...and it'll only cause inconvenience to the neighbors"

"...Is that so?"

"My mother doesn't care about the day when you take out your garbage"

"Oh...like that"

I head towards my personal items box.

"...What's up?"

"There's something I want to show you"

I took out a photo from inside

"This is my grandma"

"Yeah...what a kind person"

"She was kind...to me"

Grandma in the photo was smiling.

"Thanks to this person...Yo-chan was raised to be a good boy"

"I'm not"

"You are! Pat pat!"

Nei pats me.

"A person who hasn't received affection from others...he won't grow up as a decent man. Yo-chan's grandma gave you a lot of love"

"Yeah...I thought so too"

Even my father and mother's share...

My true family...was only Grandma.

"Ah...I'm the same too"

"...Nei?"

"...Father and Mother poured in love on me...Kei-chan loved me...therefore...I have made it this far."

Nei looks at me.

"I now understand it. I also was able to live thanks to everyone..."

...I

"From now on, I'm here...I'll continue to love you..."

"Yo-chan has me too...I'll keep on loving you...!"

We snuggle.

"Grandma...thank you. From now on, you'll be my Grandma too!"

Nei tells Grandma's photo.

"Hey, do you not have other photos? Like when you were a child?"

"None. We don't have events at home at all. I never had an opportunity to take photos with family"

Family trips, Christmas, Birthdays...nothing at all.

"What about the graduation album from middle school?"

"...Didn't buy it"

"...What?"

"I don't want to pay for such a thing...mother complained to the school"

It may be absurd but my mother picked a fight with the school.

As a result.

I'm the only one who they didn't distribute the graduation album to.

"Well, it's a private talk...and since it's a boys' boarding school, such unreasonableness passed through"

"...Is that so?"

Nei stands up from the sofa and picked up the camera that's still on the floor.

"Then I'll take photos of Yo-chan from now on...!"

She pressed the shutter.

"No, I'm naked..."

"That's what's good about it!"

She presses the shutter again.

"It's a commemorative photo on when you took away my virginity!"

...Err

"How is it? Did my virginity feel good?"

"Yeah...it was really good"

"Then, show a more smiling face...here, cheeze"

"...Nah"

"Remember when you had sex with me!"

Nei continues to point the camera towards me

"Then I would get an erection!"

"It's fine...let it be as much as you want"

Nei smiles suspiciously

"I'll take care of it as much as you want...!"

The blood flows to my penis once again.

"Ufufu...this time, it'll be a fellatio from the start!"

"...Nei?"

"Here...camera"

Nei kneels in front of me and hands over the camera.

"Take photos of me sucking it"

"...Eh?"

"It's fine. It'll be a[secret photo]only we can see!"

Nei licks my penis.

Rolling her tongue on the glans.

I capture that appearance in the camera.

The naked Nei.

She's placing my glans inside her mouth.

Below that are Nei's huge breasts swaying...

"Nei...you're so lewd...!"

"Only for Yo-chan. This lewd Nei will only be shown to Yo-chan!"

Oh...that feels good.

"Let's have sex again tomorrow. Are you going to fill up Nei's stomach too?!"

"Yeah, I will...I'm going to cum a lot"

"...Till I get pregnant?"

"Yeah"

"Ufufu...I'm looking forward to it"

...Nei...Nei...Nei!

"For now...be satisfied with only Nei's mouth"

I...

I...

"...Aah...I love you! Nei!"

I ejaculated inside Nei's mouth again.



"What's up?"

Nei puts on her bra.

"Hmm...I feel sad that I won't see Nei's naked body"

"Idiot...if Yo-chan wishes for it, I'll strip anytime you want"

Nei kisses me again.

"There's too many kisses that my lip area is stinging"

"Ah, me too..."

The two of us laugh.

We wear clothes...take out the items from the cardboard box I would bring to the mansion.

Grandma's photo is obvious.

School-related stuff...

"This underwear is not needed. Let's just buy a better one"

As expected...the hundred yen underwear were dismissed.

Then, I reach out to the bottom of the box...

Yup...it's there.

"Nei...here"

I hold out a small box

"What's this?"

There's a small ring inside the box.

"This is Grandma's memento. Grandma gave this to me before she died. [Sell this to make money if ever something happens]she said"

That said...no matter how you look at it, this ring isn't expensive.

The design is simple...it only has a small stone.

It's not diamond either.

It's a small red-yellow gemstone

"...It's a garnet"

"I give this to Nei"

Nei looks at me...

"I feel sorry to take this"

"For Misuzu and Megu...I'll work in the future to buy them a ring with my money. But, I want Nei to have Grandma's ring"

...Nei

"Then, I'll keep it...is that okay?"

"Yeah"

Nei takes out the ring from the small box

"Yo-chan...put it on"

I take the ring to Nei's hand

...Huh?

It doesn't fit on the index finger.

Middle finger too...

Grandma was a small person.

Her fingers are too thin.

...Oh

It went inside the ring finger.

"Wow...it was fit for the ring finger"

Nei said.

"Is it bad to have it on the ring finger?"

"It's not...I think of it as a wedding ring"

...Oh

"...Ufufu. I feel like I'm completely Yo-chan's property"

Nei said while stroking the ring

"Is it okay for me to be this happy?"

"You don't have to worry about that. Let's be even happier"

"Yes, Dear!"

Nei smiles happily!

Chapter 352. One Hand, One Heart

Translator: Pun

Editor: Blaze

Nei makes the call and Margo-san comes right away.

The blue Maserati arrived in front of the house...and we boarded the rear seat.
Nei's sticking close to me...not letting go.

"Sorry to keep you waiting"

I apologize to Margo-san in the driver's seat.

"That's fine. I've got some jobs done while I was in the family restaurant"

The passenger seat has a laptop on it.

"Manipulating and inducing the public opinion. Shirasaka Moritsugu may have been ousted, but our revenge isn't done yet"

That's right, as long as the principal culprit of this all, Shirasaka Sousuke isn't finished off...

Minaho-neesan's...Kuromori's revenge won't end.

Besides...there's also the topic of the future of[Kuromori]

"Then...what about you two? Did it go well?"

Margo-san asks Nei-san smiling.

Nei-san laughs.

"It's perfect! I'm already a woman!"

She said happily.

"Isn't that right...Kei?"

She puts my head on her chest.

"Yeah, Oneechan"

I hug Nei who's being spoiled.

We continue acting as siblings in front of Margo-san.

...In order to keep it a secret that we're really a married couple.

Nei touches the ring on her finger lovingly.

"That's great...By the way, Nei"

Margo-san speaks to Nei

"What?"

"I thought that Nei would be asking about burning that house, but"

Margo-san knows that Nei-san is an arsonist more than anyone...

In the first place...it's likely that the trauma of losing Kei-san made her burn houses.

"Oh, I thought about that too but...it's fine, no need! We can just burn it easily anytime we want!"

Nei smiles happily

"Oh right. Maru-chan, bring the white van here next time. I'd like to take Kei's sofa home"

Nei seems to really want the sofa where she lost her virginity

"...Sofa?"

"Yeah. The sofa where Kei slept at. I'm taking that"

"Oh, But it's impossible to carry that sofa from the kitchen. We've got to bring it through the entrance..."

The backdoor is too small...it's hard to take it outside the house.

"Isn't it fine taking out of the front door?"

"But...I"

I was told not to use the entrance.

"Geez, Kei's too obedient. You may not have the property rights, but it's your house. There's a lot of memories in there, right?"

"Well that's true, but"

"That's why it's fine. We'll be going straight through the entrance door next time! I give you that permission"

...Nei

"Oneechan will be going together with you! Okay?"

"...Un. Got it"

Nei gently smiles.

"Un, good boy, good boy...I love you!"

Then, she hugs me tightly

"Hey hey, Maru-chan...I'm very happy right now! I feel happy that I'm alive!"

"Is that so?...Isn't that great, Nei"

Margo-san smiles at Nei

"Thanks, Maru-chan!"

"...Eh?"

"No, thank you. Oneechan"

"Nei?"

"I'm so thankful. Thank you for all this time. Thank you for always. Margo-oneechan is my benefactor! I love you! Maru-chan...!"

The overflowing emotion...lets tears flow from Nei's flushed face.

"Why so sudden?"

Margo-san's completely puzzled.

"I...was given lots of kindness from Margo-oneechan, Sensei...no, Minaho-onee-chan, Kyouko-oneechan, Katsuko-oneechan too. I can tell it now very well. Everyone has taken care of me so much...!"

I hug Nei's crying back

"Thank you! I really thank you!"

"Nei...you don't have to mind it. You're our precious[little sister]"

Margo-san said kindly.

"Un! I'm your[little sister]Forever! Therefore, Margo-oneechan, please stay as my[Oneechan]forever"

"...You don't have to worry about that"

"No...I know it"

Nei looks at me.

"Kei"

"What...Oneechan?"

"You see...I only have a year remaining in high school. I'll live as a student with Kei for a year..."

Nei's a repeater so she's still in the second year.

It's May right now.

Saying that she only has a year...means she won't graduate?

"Either way...it was impossible for me to graduate"

Nei is a fake student at the high school.

The real family register can't be used...Najima Yasuko hadn't returned from US yet.

Therefore, she can't graduate with the alias of Natou Nei.

"Well...just take back the original family register and re-enroll as Najima Yasuko"

Margo-san said.

"It's just the beginning of May now...if you decide to transfer from a Canadian high school, then"

It's an easy job if we use Kyouko-san's contacts.

"Then that means starting from the first year again?"

"If you manipulate the records in Canada then anything will do. Minaho and Katsuko-san will be the ones deciding your transfer documents so...Nei graduate like taking the school as before. The diploma can rewrite the name from[Nei]to[Yasuko]..."

Margo-san thought about that?

True, the management of the school is run by Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee. They can easily do anything unreasonable...

...But

"It's fine...I don't want to graduate doing that"

Nei said

"Rather than that...I want to help out with Margo-oneechan's dream"

...Eh?

Margo-san's...[Dream]?!

"Margo-oneechan intends to act alone after Minaho-oneechan's revenge, right?"

Nei looks straight at Margo-san.

Her face is smiling gently but the eyes look serious.

"You can't do that. I'm with you...aren't we a duo?"

Margo and Nei are wearing matching black leather jeans, they're a notorious duo who hunt down city's thugs and hooligans.

"But...Nei"

Margo-san looks at me.

"It's okay! Kei has an unbreakable[bond]with me! Besides, Margo-oneechan's plan isn't to get out of the mansion and never come back, right? Basically, the mansion's our[base]right?"

Margo-san looks at Nei silently.

She seems to be thinking about something.

"What's Margo-san's dream? Please tell me if possible"

I asked.

"...It's not something as concrete to be called as a dream"

...Okay

"I thought that I had to do something to keep the girls like me from increasing"

Margo-san...

Born in an Indian settlement, she received severe discrimination because she has blonde hair and blue eyes.

Then, at age 12...she was raped by men, including her real father...

In order to protect herself...she shot others.

"Now...I have the technique to protect myself so I'm not afraid of most things. If I had the ability to fight back then...they wouldn't have attacked me, I had

those thoughts...!"

Back when she killed her father.
That, is Margo-san's complex...

"Therefore...I thought of teaching the girls who are suffering from the world and tormented by adults how to fight. Even with just a bit of self-defense, knowing some will lead to confidence. The girls will be able to live with their head held up high without being nervous. I was the same... Since I learned martial arts, I was able to really change"

I see...
So that's her dream...

"Does that mean, you want to make a dojo or a gym?"
"There's that too but...a martial arts gym won't do. The girls who don't have money must be able to get through...if I built one gym in Tokyo, not everyone could come. I want to reach out to the children all over the world...!"

So it's a global dream.

"Therefore, we need to raise Margo-oneechan's profile. Selling the name worldwide and gathering donations, right? We've got to make it an international movement...!"

Nei said...

"[Girl power...!]Margo-oneechan's dream is my dream! Even I had my family killed due to a man's violence"

Nei as well...her family's killed by Cesario Viola, a man

"I've always thought...what if I had the power to fight"

...Nei

"Kei...this is why I want to help Margo-onee-chan. It's fine isn't it? it's not that I would be away from Kei always. My house is the[mansion]after all"

...I

"Yeah. If that's what Oneechan wants to do. I'll cheer you up. But, enjoy the high school life for a year more at least... Oneechan is a person who needs to be

happier"

I'm Nei's husband.

If that's what Nei wishes for...I'll accept anything.

I've decided to work in the bakery with Katsuko-nee.

I've laid roots in this town.

Then, whenever Nei and Margo-san come to relax...

I'll keep protecting the[house]

"Margo-san, speaking of dreams...what about Minaho-neesan and others?"

"That's for later. They think that they better not think of anything unnecessary until the[revenge]is over"

"I think that we should take our time to talk about it. I'm sure everyone will cooperate. They might make some ideas too...besides"

"...Besides"

"I think that everyone in the family are all capable people to help out Margo-san's dreams"

"Capable people?"

Margo-san looks at me with a surprised face.

"For example...Michi"

Yeah...that's right.

"If you're appealing internationally, then Kudou style ancient martial arts will be effective..."

"But, Michi-chan"

"She'll do it. No...she'll willingly cooperate. That's how she is"

I'm convinced.

Michi is a woman of[righteousness]

If she agrees to the purpose of Margo-san's dream...she won't be hating to expose Kudou style to the public.

"If it's Kendo, then Reika can teach others. Should I ask her? Sister Edie's assassination techniques might be on the contrary though. Anyway...Margo-san doesn't need to work hard alone. Margo-san's dream is the family's dream"

I smiled.

"True! If it's Michi-chan, she'd be popular around the world as a[Ninja Girl]! Reika-oneesan would be[Samurai Lady]...it'll have a bigger impact than Margo-oneechan alone!"

Nei also agreed.,

"Well...that's true, but"

Margo-san thinks deeply.

"Anyway, take your time to think. There's no need to answer it right away? We can talk to Reika and Michi anytime..."

"But, it's already decided that Margo-oneechan and I are a duo! Oneechan needs to have a cute manager like me!"

Nei said.

"Nei's proposal sounds nice but...it's more efficient if I do the management myself"

Margo-san smiles.

Margo-san's not only strong but also smart.

True, she might not need a personal manager, but...

"You don't get it...won't it make a painting if a gorgeous and elegant lady like me is next to Margo-oneesan who's dignified and trained like a female leopard"

Nei laughs.

"I see. There's that idea too"

"Anyway...we don't have to break our duo"

Nei tells Margo-san strongly



"Then...we're going to Ikeda-sensei now?"

Margo-san changes the topic

"Yeah. It feels like there's still something stuck in my legs. It stings. My precious[brother]did the unreasonable!"

"...Are you okay, Oneechan?"

Nei looks at me smiling.

"Geez, I was just exaggerating. You don't have to look that worried!"
"But, it's Oneechan's body..."

Nei hugs me.
She pressed her rich breasts against me.

"...Thank you for caring for me"

Then, Margo-san...

"My treasured brother said that it's too early for me to be pregnant. Oneechan has to satisfy her brother's sexual desire any time so I've got to maintain my body! Therefore I have to consult Ikeda-sensei!"

MArgo-san smiles wryly...

"Roger...then, let's head over there"

Starting the engine...

"Nei, make an appointment with Ikeda-sensei"

"Okay. Oh right." While at it, I'll also call Yuuka-san's salon to make a reservation for today"

"Yuuka-san's salon?"

"Oh, Margo-oneechan...I'm putting my hair back to black. Kei said he prefers it to be black. But it's okay. Whenever we're in a duo, I'll wear a blonde wig!"

Nei blames me for that.

Oh well.

By the way, she didn't put the contact lenses back in.

She put it in a case.

"As expected...The[Black Forest]Duo has to be blondes!"

Saying that, she takes out her phone
...I

"Oh, wait, Margo-san!"

"What's up?"

"If we're going to Ikeda-sensei's clinic...shouldn't we bring Michi?"

I remember the talk about Michi a while ago.
She also just lost her virginity last night...

Furthermore, I ejaculated inside her even though it's her dangerous day...!
If we don't have her checked right away...she'll get pregnant

"Oh, you're right. Then, let's pick up Michi-chan along the way. She's in Aoyama's funeral right now?"

"I think so. I'll call Misuzu to confirm it"

"Hurry it up...I'll be heading for Aoyama while at it"

The blue Maserati starts...
I also call Misuzu in a hurry.

[...Yes, hello?]

This is a phone I just got a while ago.
Misuzu doesn't know who's calling her.

"Hello, it's me...Misuzu"
[Oh, Danna-sama!]

Her voice turns soft.

"Ah, this phone is just a temporary phone. The phones yesterday was discarded because there's a possibility that they're already bugged by the bad guys. You better change your phone too"
[...Certainly, I'll have mine and Michi's phone disposed of by Kouzuki security service]

Misuzu responds quickly.

"There's about Michi too...I'd like to take her to Ikeda-sensei"
[...That's true. I think that's for the better]
"Where is she right now? Is she with you?"
[Yes. She's here. Ruriko and Yoshiko-san are here too]
"Are you in the hall?"
[Yes]
"Is it okay if I take Michi from there?"
[Yes, Seki-san has come to guard us...Grandfather is waiting in the next room, Yazawa-san and Ootoku-san are also in here]

Kouzuki security service's center is moving there so no worries.

"Okay. I'll contact you when I'm there"

[Uhm...Danna-sama]

Misuzu's voice becomes smaller

[After Michi comes out...could you stay in the venue?]

...What?

[Ruriko and Yoshiko-san's situation is unstable...I alone can't do it]

Wow...thinking that Nei-san's table, now it's Ruriko?

Well...her father just died.

Or rather...she also found out that the one who killed Yoshiko-san's father is her father.

Ruriko's heart is feeling complicated.

The relationship she had with Yoshiko-san who grew up like a sister for years... may become sensitive.

"Sure. Leave this to me!"

I have to do something...

[Thank you, Danna-sama]

Misuzu said.

"Oh, I'll be there"

[I'll be waiting...I love you, Danna-sama]

"Me too"

I ended the call

"What's up, Kei?"

"I'll get off Aoyama...Ruriko seems to be depressed"

"...I see"

Nei looks worried.

"Ah, but, it's a funeral isn't it? Is it okay to look like this?"

I'm wearing the T-shirt I had in the hotel last night.

Minaho-neesan's grandfather's suit that was fixed by Katsuko-nee is...

Though the fabric and tailoring of that was good...

"As expected...I can't go to the funeral if not wearing black suit?"

"It's okay. It's just the wake today, isn't it? The wake doesn't need you to wear formal clothing"

Nei taught me.

"You can just say that you heard the news and came in a hurry. There should be no problems if it's not a flashy suit"

"Yeah, the suit you're wearing is a classic style"

Margo-san tells me over the mirror as she's driving.

"...Classic?"

"There's two types of men suit, the classic and mode. The classic style splits to British, Continental, and American. Then, this continental is completely different from French and Italian"

"...Haa"

"Nagisa's familiar on that part so ask her about it if you want. There's no loss for boys to know that"

...True

"Nagisa-oneechan is a member of the flower world. She also needs knowledge about clothes and such. Clothes lead to manners after all"

Nei also teaches me.

"But it's better if we do something about the tie!"

"Yeah, should we buy one at that convenience store over there? There should be a necktie over there, right"

"Oh, really?"

"It depends on the convenience stores"

Margo-san parks the car to the convenience store

"Wait, I'll buy one"

Nei jumps off the car alone

"Ah, I'm going too"

"It's fine...leave this to me! Kei just has to wait here"

Nei then rushed to the store.

"Fufufu, Nei's such a[wife] It can't be helped that she wants to take care of you"

Margo-san said.

I'm surprised at the word[Wife]

Did Margo-san find out our secret?

"What kind of magic did you use?"

"...What?"

Margo-san stares at my eyes.

"I'm surprised to see that Nei took off her contact lenses...that was one of Nei's walls in her heart"

Margo-san knows?

"Whenever you break one of Nei's walls, there's just another wall ahead of it. No matter where you go, it'll only be walls and her heart inside can't be seen. That's how she is. That's how it was for Me, Minaho, and even Kyouko-san"

She's been like that all these years.

"...She's making a big wall in between the others no matter how close they look like. And yet...she's so honest with you. It seems that all of Nei's walls are completely gone when it comes to you...!"

...That is

"I just told her what's in my heart"

"Your heart?"

"That I love Nei-san. I love her. I love her so much... Nei-san accepted my feelings..."

All I can say is a summary.

That we love each other.

I confirmed that.

...Therefore.

"[There's three tips to have a good life. One is to be kind to others. The second is to be kind to others. Third is be kind to people]"

"...What?"

"It's an idiom in British aristocracy before. In your case,[Love]and[Kindness]are the same"

I don't get it

"Thanks about Nei. Take care of her from now on"

"Of course. She's an important person to me...!"

Important...beloved person.

My beloved.

My...wife

"There's one! Just as Maru-chan said!"

Nei comes back with a black tie.

Her expression is very bright...looking happy

"...Here, Kei!"

She got inside the car and puts the tie on my neck

"Yes, so cute!"

The cute one is you.

I won't let Nei go away.

Even if our bodies are away...

Our hearts are stuck together...
